





# CASTLE OF BLACK IRON

BOOK 11

*Drunk Tiger*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Castle of Black Iron

(黑铁之堡)

by

**Drunken Tiger**

(醉虎)

# Synopsis

---

After the Catastrophe, every rule in the world was rewritten.

In the Age of Black Iron, steel, iron, steam engines and fighting force became the crux in which human beings depended on to survive.

A commoner boy by the name Zhang Tie was selected by the gods of fortune and was gifted a small tree which could constantly produce various marvelous fruits. At the same time, Zhang Tie was thrown into the flames of war, a three-hundred-year war between the humans and monsters on the vacant continent. Using crystals to tap into the potentials of the human body, one must cultivate to become stronger.

The thrilling legends of mysterious clans, secrets of Oriental fantasies, numerous treasures and legacies in the underground world — All in the Castle of Black Iron!

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by the WQL @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation edits by DarkGem / Geoffrey @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 1001: The Backbone

---

When the first high-power white phosphorous gel bomb was ignited, Zhang Tie had caught sight of the flame although he was over 70 miles away. When he arrived here, he saw Liu Xing being cornered by the LV 10 wing demon and those spider demons...

Actually, Zhang Tie could save Liu Xing right away; however, he wanted to take a look at Liu Xing's performance for the time being.

It was out of Zhang Tie's imagination that this frail-looking major general could be still dauntless and righteous in the dilemma. Additionally, Liu Xing was very smart who killed 3 demons at the critical moment.

When Zhang Tie found that Liu Xing had determined to die together with a LV 9 spider demon, he finally gave a favor to Liu Xing.

In front of an earth knight, some LV 9 spider demons and one LV 10 wing demon were as weak as ants.

Zhang Tie indeed appreciated Liu Xing's performance. However, Zhang Tie was more interested in the high-power white phosphorous gel bomb that Liu Xing had just thrown out.

Under the gaze of Liu Xing, Zhang Tie walked to the burning charcoal-like spider demon. Squatting down, he checked its corpse carefully.

The hard shell of the spider demon had been carbonized; however, its bloody flesh was still burning.

Zhang Tie put his hand into the flames and broke off an atrophied leg of the spider demon. Taking it, he watched the leg burning into ash before patting his hands and stood up.

Major General Liu Xing was really shocked when he saw the leg burning in the hand of this gloomy and eccentric knight in a black robe without causing any harm to him.

"White phosphorous gel bomb?" Gorath uttered a strange, hoarse and icy voice-like sound caused by the frictions between broken ice cubes and glass.

"Hmm...rgh!" Liu Xing stealthily swallowed his saliva. After answering Zhang Tie's question, he didn't say anything else.

Zhang Tie felt that he was a bit intense and vigilant under the gas-defense respiratory mask. Therefore, Zhang Tie nodded inside, 'Although being saved, Liu Xing still didn't reveal any secret that he knew about white phosphorous gel bomb. He still remained vigilant like qualified soldiers of Taixia Country would act in the dangerous moment.

"I've not imagined that Taixia has already produced small-sized white phosphorous gel bombs."

After hearing this, Liu Xing remained silent.

Zhang Tie was really surprised about it. In Selnes Theater of Operations, if each human fighter could be matched with such a mini white-phosphorous gel bomb, they could defeat that LV 9 demon corps and those demonized puppets corps. At that time, the main task of airship troops of allied human forces was to give a big blow to the super demon corps by white phosphorous gel bombs. Pitifully, until the Selnes Theater of Operations was collapsed, humans' airship troop could not make this dream come true. Only in the Upton Battle did that super demon corps suffer a great loss from the strike of human airship troops by white phosphorous gel bombs for the first time.

However, the white phosphorous gel bombs being dropped from airships were very huge. Each of them would weigh hundreds of kilograms at least. Since white phosphorous gel bombs were invented, minimization of white phosphorous gel bombs was always a problem, which could not be solved by human countries since the end of last holy war. A few years ago, when Zhang Tie was in Youzhou Province, he didn't hear that the troops of

Northeast Military Region were equipped with such a minimized weapon. It was really out of Zhang Tie's imagination that Taixia Country had already invented such a minimized weapon only in a few years and applied them in small-scale combats in Earth-elements Realm. Whereas, given the current situation, these minimized white phosphorous gel bombs could not be produced on a large scale yet; troops could only be equipped with a limited number of such a minimized weapon. Therefore, Liu Xing only carried one minimized white phosphorous gel bomb and used it at the critical moment.

Such a portable white phosphorous gel bomb was not very harmful to fighters above LV 9; however, it posed a great threat to fighters below LV 9. On the battlefield, as long as each human fighter carried about 3 portable white phosphorous gel bombs, they could definitely defeat the super demon corps even though one of ten human fighters would be killed.

Facing the super demon corps of 10,000 population led by the demon general in Waii Subcontinent, all the human countries across Waii Subcontinent only needed to compose an allied elite force of about 3 million people and match them with 9 million minimized white phosphorous gel bombs as well as bearing over 30% loss, they would be able to crack down the super demon corps in an all-round manner.

Zhang Tie who had experienced the battle in Selnes Theater of Operations understood the significance of this minimized white phosphorous gel bomb pretty well. From a certain perspective, if this portable weapon could realize a mass production, Taixia force would be able to maintain the strategic balance with the demon corps in the frontline once again; instead of being fully passive.

Although he was still wanted in Taixia Country, Zhang Tie sincerely felt happy about Taixia Country. The technical breakthrough in portable white phosphorous gel bomb was even more important than having 10 more heavenly human knights.



Because such portable weapons could save numerous human lives on the battlefields in the future.

Since the holy war broke out, none of the news that Zhang Tie heard about the holy war was good. All of them were about how demons occupied new lands and humans collapsed. The minimization of white phosphorous gel bomb was the most thrilling news that Zhang Tie had heard.

...

"May I know...your name, senior?" After being silent for a short while, Liu Xing asked Zhang Tie on his own initiative when he saw Zhang Tie's flickering eyes in a weird manner.

"You don't need to know my name!" After disguising as Gorath, Zhang Tie maintained the weird and distant personality of Gorath. After throwing a distant glance at Liu Xing, he said, "I saved you this time; I'm afraid that you will not have such a good luck next time. I've just flown all the way here from that direction and didn't find any demon fighters. If you want to leave, you'd better choose that way!"

"Thanks!" Liu Xing replied hardly.

"I like hard bones. Brat, take this, wish you good luck!" Zhang Tie said as he threw a vial of senior recovery medicament towards Liu Xing. Closely after that, he flew off and disappeared into the black mist.

Actually, Zhang Tie didn't leave far away from Liu Xing. After flying about 15 miles away, when he confirmed that Liu Xing's faint light observation instrument could not observe him anymore, he stopped and watched Liu Xing on the ground.

Although Liu Xing couldn't see Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie could see him clearly by his lotus-flower eyes.

Generally, Zhang Tie was sympathetic; however, he was not a Yes Man, except for the current situation. He didn't want to see

this Hua fighter called Liu Xing being killed; therefore, he prepared to escort him back to the Black Armor Battlefortress safely. Whereas, the status Gorath was not suitable to do that; therefore, he could only protect Liu Xing in the dark.

In Waii Subcontinent, Zhang Tie's comrade-in-arms called Liu Xing had already died. In the Earth-elements Realm, Zhang Tie didn't want to see another dauntless Liu Xing as young as the late one being killed once again. Zhang Tie would feel a bit reassured unconsciously when he saw this Liu Xing survive himself.

Under the silent gaze of Zhang Tie, Liu Xing hesitated a bit on the ground for a short while before taking the vial of senior recovery medicament that Zhang Tie had gifted him. With the effect of the senior medicament, only after resting for less than 2 minutes, Liu Xing had already rapidly returned to the place where the first white phosphorous gel bomb was ignited.

Zhang Tie knew that a Hua fighter was lying there forever. Although the Hua fighter's body had burned into ash, his spirit was still as firm as the torch that he incarnated in at the last moment of his life. It was the blazing in the dark ceaselessly.

When Zhang Tie saw the first flame, he had accelerated towards there; however, it was still too late. He only saw the most brilliant scene of the Hua fighter at the end of his life, which deeply moved Zhang Tie and reminded him of his days in Iron Blood Camp.

Without such dauntless men, Taixia Country and Hua people would not be prosperous anymore.

Although that late Hua fighter was sharply different than Zhang Tie in both battle strength and social status, Zhang Tie respected him pretty much. As Zhang Tie had experienced numerous combats and grown up from a commoner, he had an emotional resonance with this human fighter. In many situations, emotional resonance surpassed classes and social statuses. Zhang Tie saw a soul, a battle soul which belonged to the proudest and bravest

fighter. Such a soul was the backbone of humans.

Only in Lion Fortress, over 100,000 Hua fighters were assuming battle auxiliary tasks. Additionally, they were on shifts yearly. Although these people were far weaker than human knights on battle strength, through the baptism of the most brutal combats in the Earth-elements Realm, those who could survive back would become the backbones in Hua armies.

At this moment, Zhang Tie finally understood why the ruling party of the military of Taixia Country dispatched so many human fighters to assume battle auxiliary tasks in the Earth-elements Realm.

Under the silent gaze of Zhang Tie, Liu Xing came to the front of the ash and took off his gas-defense respiratory mask. His face had been covered with tears...

Kneeling down in front of the ash, Liu Xing looked for a nameplate in the ash. Closely after that, he cupped the ash into his bag. After that, he put away the nameplate and carried his bag once again before wearing his gas-defense respiratory mask. After doing all this, he ran towards the direction that Zhang Tie had told him while gritting his teeth...

# Chapter 1002: Demon Suppression General

---

Zhang Tie flew over some bushes from over 50 m high in the air like a black spirit. At the same time, four spider demons who were hiding in the bush were split into halves like watermelons silently, spraying their blood over the ground.

When Zhang Tie killed these spider demons, Liu Xing was meticulously passing a valley and didn't know that the four spider demons hiding over 7 miles away in front of him had just been killed...

After 2 days, Liu Xing had reached the 1st loop of Tiewei Mountain and entered the core region of Tiewei Mountain with the protection of Zhang Tie in the dark.

In the past 2 days, Zhang Tie had killed 7 waves of spider demons on the route of Liu Xing within 20 miles, totally 86 spider demons; additionally, he captured 4 alive wing demons. A stone for two birds.

As long as he could kill 360 spider demons, he would gain a new fruit of source of spider demons, with which, Zhang Tie's essence would grow by  $\frac{1}{12}$ ; the energy and potential of each surging point would increase by  $\frac{1}{12}$  which was equal to lighting another 82 surging points; besides, his endurance, physical strength, spiritual energy and life expectancy would increase by  $\frac{1}{12}$  respectively; namely, his battle strength would increase by  $\frac{1}{12}$ .

From a perspective, the effect of a fruit of source was greater than absorbing the energy and earth elements of some earth demon knights. It was almost like promoting to 1 change earth knight.

Of course, Zhang Tie would not give up gaining such a fruit.

The 4 alive wing demons were thrown into Castle of Black Iron. Previously, these wing demons were useless to Zhang Tie and

Zhang Tie would kill them as soon as possible. However, after Zhang Tie gained the bloody sacrifice furnace, these wing demons became rare raw material for bloody sacrifice. As long as it was not discovered by others, these wing demons would help him a lot in the future.

Not only wing demons, but any demon that could be teleported into Castle of Black Iron alive and didn't lead to any fruit also would help him a lot. Although the others regarded the core region of Tiewei Mountain as a very dangerous place, Zhang Tie treated it as a treasury of demons. Purgatory Samsara Method, small tree, plus bloody sacrifice furnace could squeeze each demon's value.

...

After killing the last spider demons, when Zhang Tie flew over the last ridge in a few minutes, he immediately suspended in the air as the horizon in front of him became open.

In the skyline, Zhang Tie saw a floating human battle fortress. Some human knights were patrolling in the sky in front of the battle fortress.

He had already officially entered the core region of Tiewei Mountain. In the distance, he saw hundreds of colorful battle qi smokes and tornadoes raging in the sky, thick or slim. They looked like flickering lightning bolts in the black mist in the skyline. Those battle qi smokes and tornadoes meant that at least hundreds of human knights and demon knights were fighting in the sky above the plain!

Although human knights and demon knights were fighting fiercely in the distance, the battle fortress looked relatively calm. Hundreds of colorful battle qi smokes and tornadoes looked like ornaments in the skyline, which didn't make people in the floating battle fortress intense at least in Zhang Tie's eyes, 'Is that a skirmish?'

Zhang Tie looked back with his flickering lotus-flower eyes and

caught sight of Liu Xing.

After passing that valley, Liu Xing accelerated his movements. He might know that a human base was not far from him.

The low-level spider demons that Zhang Tie killed just now might be the closest to the human stronghold. After entering the patrol region of human knights, Liu Xing would not easily meet any demon fighters.

'Well, I have to leave. In the future, Major General Liu Xing have to seek blessings for himself!

Licking his lips, Zhang Tie looked at the distance for a short while. After that, he dodged from human knight's patrol route and flew towards the hundreds of battle qi smokes and tornadoes...

...

1 month later, in the God's Will Battlefortress of Tiewei Mountain, a tall and sturdy old man in a brilliant golden battle armor and a long bloody marshal's cape was watching the looming demon battle fortress in the black mist in the distance while leaning on a huge sword in the highest tower in the floating battle fortress.

A huge construction site was below the God's Will Battlefortress. There was a big entrance on the construction site which led to the underground mining area of Tiewei Mountain. At this moment, tens of thousands of logistics personnel of Lion Fortress were busy packing the earth-element crystals and transporting them into the God's Will Battlefortress. The entire God's Will Battlefortress was like a fierce beast safeguarding its own nestle. Lying here quietly, it sharpened its claws and teeth and gazed at the demon battle fortress in the distance with hostility.

The demon battle fortress was another fierce beast which gazed at the human battle fortress with hostility too.

In less than 400 miles' linear distance, hundreds of battle qi

smokes and tornadoes rose and swung in the air and adorned the gloomy sky in the Earth-elements Realm.

Knight-level powerhouses would die every day between the two battle fortresses, human or demon. In wider space behind the two battle fortresses, more human and demon fighters were fighting constantly on the ground. Some demon knights reached the back of the human battle fortress; similarly, human knights also reached the back of the demon battle fortress. Skirmishes occurred everywhere. People or demons would bleed and die in each second.

The old man in golden armor watched the demon battle fortress in the distance calmly while his eyes were like ancient wells. A vertical wrinkle between his eyebrows turned clear. Common vertical wrinkles would be slightly curved and slim; however, his vertical wrinkle was as straight as a sword. It separated his forehead from the middle and reached his ophryon; additionally, the vertical wrinkle was bloody like having been soaked in blood. It looked as aggressive and shocking as dense black clouds.

According to the legend, when the old man came to Xuanyuan Hill at a young age for the first time and met Shui Yuecang, the No. 1 fortune teller in Taixia Country, Shui Yuecang let out a deep sigh after watching his look seriously, "The vertical wrinkle between your eyebrows is as straight as a sword. It separates your forehead from the middle and penetrates through your ophryon. It goes against your wife, son, father and mother. Given your look, before you came to this world, your father had died. Your mother died due to difficult labor. In the future, you will barely have a wife who could accompany you for the rest of your life. However, the place between your eyebrows is wide like a sea and high like a mountain, which indicates that you will have a great power and majesty in the future with a strong will. It's a rare demon suppression vertical wrinkle that could not be seen in 100 years. Besides going against your family members, it also goes against your enemy. In the future, you will definitely have a military

power. You're born to be a defender. You will hold the entire Taixia Country in awe. Although you're born to have no parents, what you will do in the future will enable numerous people to have parents when they're born. Although you have no wife, you will make thousands of families harmonious and happy. Although you have no child, you will be regarded as the father by numerous people. As you will protect the safety of all the living beings in the world in the future as a general at the risk of losing your life, I have to bow to you on behalf of the civilians in Taixia Country and all the living beings in the world..."

Although it was his first time to meet Shui Cangyue, the No. 1 fortune teller in Taixia Country, Shui Cangyue had bowed to him on his own initiative.

After meeting Shui Cangyue a few years ago, the second holy war broke out. This man joined the army as a LV 8 fighter. Additionally, he requested to enter the Earth-elements Realm where the casualty was the highest.

Since he entered the Earth-elements Realm, this man had not left the Earth-elements Realm over the past 200 years and became the legendary human in the Earth-elements Realm.

Through lasting numerous combats, the LV 8 human fighter had become a powerful heavenly knight and ruled the Lion Fortress as Demon Suppression General. Being on an equal footing with the generals of the top four armies in Taixia Country, he had become the pillar of the military of Taixia Country.

Numerous proud and fierce human fighters had entered the Earth-elements Realm; however, they all behaved like docile lambs in front of him, including the knight-level commanders of the top four armies of Taixia Country and the nobles and royal households from the other continents.

This man said all the human knights entering the core region of Tiewei Mountain should follow his order. Even the elder who led



the team of Taiyi Fantasy Sect, one of the seven major sects in Taixia Country dared not enter the core region of Tiewei Mountain.

This man was called Du Guyi.

Many human knights didn't see as many demons as those whom he had killed over the past 200 years in their whole lives. This man himself could not even remember how many demons he had killed. Perhaps, only demons knew how many demons this man had killed. Besides being despairing, demons hated him very much.

—Anyone who could kill Gu Duyi will be rewarded as a Lord!

This was the value of Gu Duyi's head on demon's side.

...

Gu Duyi watched the skyline and faintly frowned. Meanwhile, his killing qi formed into black snowflakes and drifted down from his side, which was a special phenomenon of a heavenly knight. Nobody knew what this heavenly knight who had stayed in the Earth-elements Realm over 200 years and experienced two holy wars was thinking about at this moment.

A breeze blew over with some moisture while a knight in blue battle armor appeared in the looming vapor. After shaking for a second like a shadow in the water, it walked out of the vapor and stood behind Gu Duyi quietly while cupping his hands.

"Lord!"

"How's it going?" The demon suppression general just asked calmly without turning around.

"There was indeed a great chaos in the back of demon battle fortress a few days ago. A human knight destroyed a secret base in the rear end of demon battle fortress and killed over 5 demon knights, including one earth demon knight and many demon fighters below LV 15. After suffering such a big loss, the demon battle fortress was shocked and dispatched a shadow demon to

chase after the trouble-maker..."

"Who's that ballsy?"

"I have no idea!" The man behind Gu Duyi answered honestly as he didn't feel embarrassed at all, "But I'm sure that one is not a member of us!"

Gu Duyi suddenly narrowed his eyes while the black snowflakes on his side froze in the air...

# Chapter 1003: The Problems Facing Taixia Country

---

"He's not a member of us..." The demon suppression general burst out into laughter. At the same time, the black snowflakes on his side vaporized in a split second while the sharp sword-shaped vertical wrinkle between his eyebrows became vivid as if the sword was going to fly out of its sheath from his forehead and make a massacre. "If this person could survive the chase of demons, I would like to see him."

"He's really a talent; however, it's not easy for an earth knight to survive the chase of a shadow demon!" The one who came out of the vapor replied, "Will we..."

Gu Duyi raised his hand and interrupted him calmly, "Wealth and rank are the matters of destiny. Now that we've come to Tiewei Mountain, dying is as usual as living even for knights. We're not here for discovering talents, but for opposing demons. If he is a real talent, he would survive himself even if he was chased by a shadow demon; if he's dead, he's just so-so. Only those who survive themselves are qualified to be praised. If he's dead, he has just fulfilled his responsibilities to be a human knight and didn't spend his life in vain..."

Over 200 years' combats in the Earth-elements Realm, this old man standing in the highest tower had treated death as usual as life.

Standing behind the old man, the knight just listened to him carefully without any objection. Because each word of this old man was definitely correct in the eyes of the subordinates of this old man. This old man had never made any mistake and would never make any mistake at all.

"How's Feng Yexiao of Taiyi Fantasy Sect?"

"Feng Yexiao and a team of new knights of Taiyi Fantasy Sect are fighting as guerrillas in the periphery of the 1st loop!" Although the knight behind Du Guyi answered calmly, his words sounded disgruntled, even a bit disdainful, "Previously, Feng Yexiao intended to kill that earth knight-level shadow demon in Tiewei Mountain with his team members so as to gain a bounty land for Taiyi Fantasy Sect and accumulate military exploits and prestige for himself in Taiyi Fantasy Sect. However, he had not imagined that the earth knight-level shadow demon had been killed by another earth human knight only after a few days since he came to Black Armor Battlefortress. Therefore, Feng Yexiao lost his face and felt being slapped on his face invisibly!"

"Is that guy who killed the earth knight-level shadow demon is called Cui Li?"

"Yes, Cui Li entered Earth-elements Realm 3 years ago. It's said that he had a wonderful experience in a wild mountain and gained the "Fire Dragon Sutra" which was left by Fire Dragon Hermit. 3 years ago, many human knights explored hieron ruins from the Lion Fortress. Due to the participation of a demon knight and a knight of Three-eye Association, Cui Li suffered a lot of troubles. It was even said that Cui Li had already died in the hieron ruins in a very righteous way. I've not imagined that this man has promoted to an earth knight in the hieron ruins in only about 2 years and could come out of there alive!" That knight faintly hesitated before asking, "Lord, do you think this Cui Li is..."

The demon suppression general faintly narrowed his eyes and asked, "Has Guan Qianchong met him?"

"Yes, he has; additionally, Guan Qianchong has agreed to reward him..."

The demon suppression general revealed a smile, "If so, this man must be innocent. If there's some problem with him, he could not have passed Guan Qianchong's interrogation because Guan Qianchong is the gate of hell. There're so many bizarre secret

methods and skills in the world. Nobody dares say that he knows all of them. Now that Cui Li could gain the "Fire Dragon Sutra" which has long been lost, he must have a great luck. This man might have a special experience in the hieron ruins. Besides, as he killed an earth knight-level shadow demon, he must be a blessed fighter!"

"However, Cui Li might not know that he has offended Feng Yexiao. Feng Yexiao is domineering. After losing his face this time, he might find Cui trouble in the future!"

"With one more shadow human knight on our back, it's not bad. No matter what, Feng Yexiao and Taiyi Fantasy Sect would not surrender to demons. Don't be over furious. Now that Cui Li could come out of the hieron ruins alive, he might have made a big achievement. In the future, Feng Yexiao might force Cui Li to show us his special talents!"

The simple sentence of demon suppression general was full of his wise philosophy about the world.

"Xuanyuan Hill is too indulgent with sects such as Taiyi Fantasy Sect. The holy war has turned white-hot. The demons' strikes are like tides; however, these sects still want to maintain their own forces at this critical moment. Don't they know that there will be no complete eggs when the nestle topples over? If Taixia Country was exterminated by demons, these sects would have no place to stay! Is the gossip real? Has Emperor Xuanyuan..."

The demon suppression general immediately turned around and gazed at the knight behind him with his dignified eyes while an overwhelming stress and invisible qi of heavenly knight collided with the knight.

Before finishing his words, the knight uttered a muffled harrumph; meanwhile, he was forced to move one step back while bleeding at his mouth corners. However, he still looked at the demon suppression general's eyes frankly and straightforwardly.

After half a minute, the demon suppression general's dignified eye light slowly faded away, "Remember, our battlefield is Earth-elements Realm, the affairs of Xuanyuan Hill has nothing to do with us. As soldiers of Taixia Country, our only job is to kill demons as long as we're alive. No matter what happens on the earth's surface, it has nothing to do with us."

"Yes, sir!" The knight wiped off the blood stains from his mouth corners and replied in a muffled voice.

The demon suppression general let out a long sigh, "It seems that the knights in the battle fortress are too leisure and don't bleed too much. It has been over 2 months since the last large-scale battle. Even you started to have a bee in your head. Pass my order, launch a large-scale strike at the demon battle fortress in formations 1 hour later..."

"Yes, sir!"

The vapor reappeared in the tower while the knight who had received the order swung in the vapor like a shadow for a short while before disappearing...

Only after half a minute, the entire battle fortress had become boiled like an actuated machine while numerous knights in the battle fortress had stopped what they were doing and started to prepare for the coming large-scale battle at the fastest speed...

The Demon suppression general turned around and threw a glance at the demon battle fortress in the distance. Only at this moment when nobody was on his side did the demon suppression general look a bit worried.

Nobody knew what Du Guyi was thinking about.

As for this old man who had fought over 200 years in the Earth-elements Realm and experienced the 2nd holy war, although this large-scale battle between human knights and demon knights in Tiewei Mountain is related to the ownership of millions of earth-

element crystals. It's not what Du Guyi was really concerned about. To a certain extent, the result of this large-scale battle, even the lives of over 10,000 human knights who had converged in the battle fortress or his own life didn't count most.

The battle between humans and demons was precisely the wrestle between Hua people and demons. As for Hua people, the result of 1 or 2 large-scale battle between humans and demons, the lives of 10,000-20,000 human knights including the lives of some heavenly knights who were called old guys by others like Du Guyi were not decisive. Even the Lion Fortress which was regarded as the greatest power and pass in the Earth-elements Realm would be broken through by demons one day, it was not a big deal. Before the Catastrophe, humans didn't have any power in the Earth-elements Realm, but they could still survive.

Humans might lose this large-scale battle. Over 10,000 human knights who joined the coming large-scale battle including Du Guyi himself might die. However, basically, it didn't matter at all. What counted most was that Hua people and the entire Taixia Country could be able to reorganize more large-scale battles and shoulder more failures after losing such a large-scale battle 100 times and 100 heavenly knights like Du Guyi. This was the key factor for Taixia Country to last forever and confront demons constantly.

At this moment, what the demon suppression general concerned most was the problem facing Xuanyuan Hill; instead of the Earth-elements Realm.

One year before the 3rd holy war, Emperor Xuanyuan had disappeared. Nobody knew where he had gone. In the beginning, Xuanyuan Hill could cover it with the excuse that Emperor Xuanyuan was in cultivation. Now, this excuse didn't work anymore.

The top chancellors in Taixia Country had been officially noticed after Emperor Xuanyuan disappeared 1 year later. At the beginning, only rulers and very few people knew about that news.

As time went on, the chain reactions after Emperor Xuanyuan disappeared gradually occurred. Not only Xuanyuan Hill, but even the officialdom and commoners had also known this news. However, nobody dared say it in the public.

After Emperor Xuanyuan disappeared, the entire Taixia Country and Hua people lost their head at the critical moment. Dark forces had long been increasingly surging across Eastern Continent while all the unpredictable factors were rapidly developing in Taixia Country.

A few months ago, the surging elements tide shocked the entire earth elements-realm. At that moment, even Du Guyi thought that a prince in Taixia Country had formed an earth chakra of emperor-level cultivation method and would be able to compete for the throne with the crown prince. When Emperor Xuanyuan disappeared, a prince could defeat the crown prince was definitely not a good news.

Demon suppression general was worried about this a few months ago. He felt that nothing was worse than this at this moment. However, he found that none of the princes in Taixia Country had formed an earth chakra of an emperor-level cultivation method at all a few days ago.

This news had just been confirmed yesterday. Through months' investigation of the clan elders in the clansmen register center, they finally confirmed it, which was even more shocking than the disappearance of Emperor Xuanyuan.

'If none of the princes of Taixia Country have promoted to an earth knight in terms of "Xuanyuan God Sutra", who's that one? Besides "Xuanyuan God Sutra", is there another complete emperor-level cultivation method in the world?'

As long as he thought about this question; especially the possible worst answer, even demon suppression general who had ignored his own life felt chilly inside...



Without Emperor Xuanyuan, even though the imperial force of Taixia Country could not frighten top sects which were ruled by sage-level old monsters such as Taiyi Fantasy Sect. Therefore, the balance between the top seven sects and the imperial household of Taixia Country which had been preserved hundreds of years would be broken.

If Xuanyuan Hill lost its head, the entire Taixia Country would lose its ruler. Chancellors, courts and major local clans, everybody and every agency would feel unsafe; plus troubles caused by Heavens Reaching Church, Taixia Country might easily be in a big chaos facing troubles domestically and foreign invasions. Before demons broke in, Taixia Country might already have a big problem inside.

When there was a big problem inside Taixia Country, as long as Taixia was fully defeated by demons in the Earth-elements Realm, Taixia country would be completely defeated on the earth's surface. That was what the demon suppression general really worried about.

This potential concern could not be solved at least now.

If Emperor Xuanyuan appeared timely, this problem could be solved; however, if he appeared a bit late, demons would not spare a chance to Taixia at all even if Emperor Xuanyuan wanted to solve this problem...

# Chapter 1004: Large Battle Formations

---

1 hour later, over 12,000 human knights flew out of the human battle fortress like bees flying out their beehives. Being dense, they covered the sky.

Less than one out of a million people living on earth's surface could have a chance to see over 10,000 human knights flying together at the same time.

When the number of humans reached 10,000, it would be endless. Over 10,000 human knights flying in the sky completely covered the sky...

Precisely, 12474 human knights participated in the large-scale attack, over 95% of them were black iron knights while the rest ones were earth knights and shadow knights.

Those knights came from all the countries across each continent. The number of Hua knights from Taixia Country ranked 1st, those from western continent ranked 2nd; there were also many knights in red hair, blue eyes and different skins.

12474 was a very special figure as it could be divided with no remainder by 81.

Why? Because the basic number of knights required for 3-in-1 formation was 3. Three 3-in-1 basic formations could form a bigger 3-in-1 formation of 9 members; 3 bigger 3-in-1 formations could form a large 3-in-1 formation of 27 members while 3 large 3-in-1 formations could form a supreme 3-in-1 gold formation of 81 members.

Like perfect steps, 3,9,27,81 corresponded to four levels of 3-in-1 formation respectively, namely, black iron, bronze, silver and gold.

12474 knights contained 154 golden 3-in-1 battle formations, each gold 3-in-1 formation became a larger unit of formation of knights

at this moment.

Among the 12474 human knights who flew off at the same time, there were three old friends of Zhang Tie, namely, Filton, Cecilia and Bolam.

When they flew off, only after throwing a glance at each other, the three knights had connected their knights' consciousness and formed the basic 3-in-1 battle formation in a split second...

...

Feng Cangwu whom Zhang Tie had not seen for a long time was also one of them. He looked bearded in a hand-me-down battle armor like an uncle who used to kill time in pubs. Compared to that 3 years ago, his sharpness and dashing spirit had been fully reserved; however, his qi field had become stronger.

There was a gourd-shaped container on his waistband. Before joining the large-scale battle, he undid that gourd and swigged it quite a while.

"Leave some to me!" A partner on Feng Cangwu's side shouted. Feng Cangwu then threw that gourd towards that man. After drinking some, he threw it to another knight on his side. The 3rd knight bottomed it up directly as he smacked his lip and sighed with emotions, "Tasty...". Finally, he threw the empty gourd back to Feng Cangwu.

It was a special all-purpose medicament in the gourd. It was the latest product of Jinwu City, which could activate the effect of the medicament in the shortest period.

'Come on!' Feng Cangwu roared inside as his battle intention boiled up. Additionally, he opened his knight's consciousness and linked it to that of the other two human knights, forming another basic 3-in-1 battle formation...

Only in a few seconds, the 12474 human knights had become 4158 basic unit of a 3-in-1 unit. As a result, the core area of Tiewei

Mountain was immediately covered with battle clouds.

In this situation, individual knights only needed to form a 3-in-1 battle formation with two partners.

The moment the 4158 basic units of 3-in-1 formation came into being, the figure which was covered with golden light had flown off the tower and reached the highest place among those human knights. At the same time, a golden light rushed into the sky from that man. A sharper knight's consciousness descended and covered dozens of square miles immediately. 12474 knights opened their knight's consciousness at the same time. After connecting with the milky way, their knight's consciousness entered a wholly new, complete knight's consciousness like how water drops converged into a stream before entering an ocean...

A great order appeared...

3-in-1 black iron battle formations started to form a complete knight's consciousness of a bronze battle formation of 9 members by automatically connecting 2 more black iron battle formations. The bronze battle formation of 9 members would form a complete knight's consciousness of a silver battle formation of 27 members by connecting two more bronze battle formations. The silver battle formation of 27 members would form a complete knight's consciousness of a gold battle formation of 81 members by two more silver battle formations. 154 3-in-1 gold battle formations would finally form an unprecedented powerful knight's consciousness...

Through the gradual combination of 3-in-1 battle formations, the loose large formation of over 12,000 human knights slowly turned regular like gears being processed.

At this moment, 12474 human knights shared the same knight's consciousness. Everyone's senses and knight's consciousness had been promoted to a higher level...

At this moment, black iron knights could sense the consciousness

of earth knights; earth knights could sense the consciousness of shadow knights; similarly, shadow knights sensed that they had become heavenly knights. The only heavenly knight became the supreme consciousness of this large battle formation.

Besides the knight's consciousness, everyone's qi sea faintly connected with each other and could attack and defend together...

Many light beams rose up from the large battle formation. Each knight was blessed on strength, speed, recovery capability and sacred defense...

Like a huge golden wheel composed of 154 huge knife flywheels, the entire large battle formation flew towards the demon battle fortress in an overwhelming manner.

When the large human battle formation reached halfway, they had been blocked by the large demon battle formation.

The large demon battle formation contained over 14,000 population, more than that of the large demon battle formation. Besides, the large demon battle formation was weird and looming in black mist. It looked like a huge mouth and quagmire which constantly changed its shape as if it was going to devour the universe.

An ox-headed demon higher than 3 m was standing at the highest point of the large demon battle formation with a burning huge ax in hand and watching the approaching large human battle formation with its fiery bloody eyes.

"Du Guyi, all the earth-elements crystals here have almost been exploited, this mine will be abandoned in 2 months. Will you insist on such a large-scale battle?"

The heavenly demon knight uttered a muffled voice which sounded like a thunder.

"Of course we will. The battle would never come to an end until demons were exterminated!"

The demon suppression general's thunder-like dignified muffled sound also drifted to the heavenly demon knight from above the large human battle formation.

After hearing this, the huge ax in the hand of the heavenly demon knight burned fiercer abruptly. At the same time, a bizarre eye light flashed by as the heavenly demon knight suddenly burst out into laughter, "Your Emperor Xuanyuan has disappeared for so many years. He might have long died. Taixia is destined to be chaotic. Do you want to further consume the knights from the Western Continent and the other continents by this chance so that Taixia Country could maintain its absolute advantage over other continents in the chaos?"

The demon commander's words were really malicious.

"Gandise, given your words, I have to kill you!" The demon suppression general replied in a calm yet extremely icy voice.

"Hahaha, I've collected over 100 human knight's heads including that of black iron human knights, earth human knights and shadow human knights, except for a heavenly human knight's head..."

...

Over 20,000 human and demon knights collided with each other immediately without any buffering...

In the sky, over 10,000 thunders sounded at the same time as if stars were born and died in a split second...

The black mist within 100 square miles was cleaned by the great shock wave caused by the collision. Additionally, the ground in the core of Tiewei Mountain started to shake like the surface of a drum being beaten by a heavy hammer. The ground below the collision area was cracked immediately, causing some thousands of meters long huge trenches. The terrain of a part of the region changed in a split second. All the weak living beings who didn't escape away due

to so many corpses here these couple years had drilled into their own caves and dared not expose their heads while trembling all over.

Over 20,000 human and demon knights collided as if the God was driven mad...

The large demon battle formation widely opened its mouth and wanted to devour the entire large human battle formation; however, the large human battle formation wanted to cut the large demon battle formation into pieces and grind them.

Facing such a fierce collision, any individual strength would be trivial. Even heavenly knight would be shattered in such a fierce collision immediately.

Each trivial strike was caused by a gold battle formation composed of 81 human knights while the fiercest strike gathered the strength of over 10,000 human knights.

Accordingly, the battle qis of all the knights in the large formations had formed a huge protective battle qi so as to respond to the opponent's strike.

Similarly, although being protected by such a huge protective battle qi, all the strikes against the large battle formation would be passed to all the knights in the large formation. Even though, those knights who were struck by the opposite large formation would also bear a greater stress and impact than other members of the large formation. After they bore the stress and impact first, the stress and impact would pass to other knights in a degressive state.

The collision between two large battle formations was like two prehistorical huge beasts colliding with each other. The moment the battle broke out, it had become earthshaking...

Neither human nor demon knights had noticed that a black little beetle was hiding on a rock in the distance and watching the collision between two large battle formations with a wide open

mouth. It was shocked too much that it almost drooled...



# Chapter 1005: The Most Brutal Battle

---

Like two powerful and fierce beasts colliding with each other, neither of them could devour the other completely; however, as long as they collided with each other, it would be earthshaking and cause blood and flesh to spray everywhere.

The large formations of humans and demons were like two powerful and fierce beasts who usually fought and collided with each other. Although neither of them could devour the other, both of them would be injured and bleed...

The large demon battle formation suffered the first wound.

After many times' fierce collisions, the first piece of bloody flesh was torn off from the demon's large battle formation.

Through fierce strikes of humans' large battle formation, the bigger unit of 81 demon knights was separated from the demon's large battle formation and was cut off the connection with the overall knight's consciousness and battle qi of the demon's large battle formation...

In this situation, being separated from the large battle formation was as fatal as jumping off a train which was at its full speed on the bridge.

Before the 81 demon knights escaped in all directions, the strike of human's large battle formation had arrived...

When a dazzling light flashed by, over half of the 81 demon knights became bloody flesh and powder and fell off the sky. The remaining demons of the gold battle formation escaped rapidly in all directions like flies. However, the 154 knife flywheels of human's large battle formation quickly spun and swept over. Wherever they reached, at least one or a few demon knights would lose their lives in the blink of an eye.

Those who were killed were even earth knights.

In a split second, only less than 10 of the 81 demon knights could escape away from the extrusion and collision of the human's large battle formation...

Zhang Tie was dumbfounded by what he saw.

In this battle, collective strength had been fully exerted. Even Zhang Tie could not survive the strike which the human's large battle formation launched towards the separated gold battle formation of 81 demon knights.

The aftermath of that strike caused an earthquake and a huge deep pit whose diameter was about 100 m. Facing such a destructive blow which gathered the strength of over 10,000 human knights, even shadow knights would be killed immediately, not to mention earth knights.

Such a battle was too brutal even for knights.

All the knights in Waii Subcontinent would be exterminated immediately facing such a large battle formation. Certainly, the large-scale collisions between humans and demons could only be seen in Earth-elements Realm. Due to its amazing formidable force, the casualty was amazing too. What a terrifying consumption!

After the first piece of bloody flesh broke off the demon's large battle formation, two pieces of bloody flesh almost broke off their own large formations at the same time.

The demon's large formation was like a grim quagmire and huge mouth. The moment the gold battle formation of 81 human knights broke off, dozens of them had been devoured by the huge mouth of demon's battle formation like animals being mired in the swamp. The other human knights of the gold battle formation escaped in all directions while the slower ones were devoured by the demon's large formation which constantly changed its shape.

Finally, only less than 20 of the 81 human knights escaped away

successfully.

The 81 demons who broke off the demon's large formation didn't have a better fate than the last batch of demon knights who had broken off their large formation. Because they were completely surrounded by the human's large formation. Like a piece of meat falling into the meat grinder, before the 81 demon knights escaped out of the human's large formation, they had been ground into pieces by the meat grinder.

Watching such a collision on the ground, Zhang Tie felt an unprecedented shock inside.

Those human knights being devoured by the demon's large formation might be dignified and unrivaled on the earth's surface; however, their fates were only determined in a few seconds in the Earth-elements Realm the moment their unit was separated from the large formation. They were as hopeless and despairing as common fighters facing such a fatal blow.

This was the most brutal side of the holy war. Even knights became as trivial as grass facing such a large-scale battle formation.

Watching such a fierce collision, Zhang Tie understood that why those people in the core of Tiewei Mountain directly ignored the hundreds of battle qi smokes and tornadoes. Because those combats were just appetizers of this large-scale battle.

In the large-scale battle where dozens of knights would be exterminated in a split second, those battles participated by hundreds of knights were just necessary touches of both parties, through which, both parties could keep up the proper pressure against the opposite.

The battle continued. Those human knights who survived themselves after breaking off from the large battle formation didn't escape. After leaving the effect of the two large formations, they gritted their teeth and continued to chase demons who had

broken off their own large formation.

This large-scale battle was expanding. The two large formations were the core of this battle. As more and more knights broke off, more and more skirmishes broke out surrounding the core while battle qi smokes and tornadoes rushed into the sky one after another.

The entire core of Tiewei Mountain was shaking and covered with brilliant battle qis. Even clouds and mist were broken apart. What a hell!

Watching such a battle, as a member of human knights, Zhang Tie gradually felt hotter inside.

...

At this moment, a figure flew towards him while hiding its full-body battle qi. It tumbled and immediately fell into a pitch dark underground trench which was hundreds of meters in depth being not far away from Zhang Tie.

Before entering the trench, the figure spurted out blood.

At the sight of this guy, Zhang Tie became thrilled. It was a black iron demon knight, who had been severely wounded. It seemed that it wanted to hide here for the time being.

'Hehhehheh, this father was thinking about having some fun; now that you are here...'

After blinking its eyes, the little black beetle took a look at the battlefield in the far, then the deep trench in front of him before flying towards that underground deep trench...

# Chapter 1006: Knocking out the Black Iron Demon Knight

---

The little beetle flew into the deep trench...

The deep trench was hundreds of meters deep. Like a dried and bleak riverbed, the deep trench was covered with jagged rocks of grotesque shapes and black mist. It had many branch roads. The demon knight just hid here for the time being to recover itself. Honestly, this was a good place for the demon knight.

Of course, it was also a good place for Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie remembered the location of that demon knight in the deep trench. After flying less than 5 minutes in the deep trench, Zhang Tie found the demon knight.

The demon knight was hiding in a very secluded cave among some boulders at the bottom of the trench. Oozing sweat and quivering all over faintly, it was dealing with its wounds.

This was an ox-horn black iron demon knight who had been wounded. Its chest armor had been scorched and was gurgling blood.

Only after throwing a glance at this guy, Zhang Tie had known that this guy had survived an earth human knight's attack.

Generally, according to Zhang Tie's observation over the past one month, both human and demon knights had reached a privity in head-on battles and duels—they only fought the opponents of the same level.

Hua people believed that common soldiers would always fight common soldiers and generals would always fight generals.

Sometimes, such a privity would be broken. When they could not find opponents of the same level, they might attack those inferior ones.

Earth human knights who survived the fragments of the large formation might encounter black iron demon knights on the battlefield where they would definitely kill the inferior opponents immediately.

This poor demon was the one who survived the fragment of the demon's large formation and encountered an earth human knight unfortunately.

Perhaps, he was not poor but lucky.

Given the current situation, this guy was indeed very lucky. After breaking off the demon's large formation, he had 1/10 probability to survive the human's large formation. Closely after that, it encountered an earth human knight. It had 1/3 probability to escape from the earth human knight. Overall, this guy could only have 1/30 probability to survive itself. Therefore, this demon knight must have a very good luck.

However, not so much. Because it met Zhang Tie.

In this situation, Zhang Tie was definitely a "demon eater".

After activating a super hiding skill on the little black beetle, the little black beetle was like a light feather in the black mist. When Zhang Tie saw the demon knight, the demon knight didn't see him.

Sweat dropped off the demon knight's face one after another. The demon knight was lowering its head and applying a black adhesive onto the wounds of its lower abdomen, causing the wounds to release smoke. At the same time, the demon knight gritted its teeth and panted while its muscles on the lower abdomen twitched unconsciously. It seemed that the black adhesive didn't feel good.

Zhang Tie then drilled out of the gap between rocks on the side of the demon knight and entered in the small space behind the demon knight. After that, Gorath in a black robe appeared behind

that demon knight quietly like a ghost out of the void.

Gorath was affected by a super hiding rune too; it was completely like a lifeless piece of rock.

When Zhang Tie appeared less than one arm's length behind that demon knight, he was still not discovered by the demon. When it found this place just now, the demon knight had confirmed that nobody was here; therefore, it just concentrated on dealing with its wounds at this moment.

Zhang Tie just watched this guy mercilessly.

Through such an angle, Zhang Tie discovered some unusual things on this demon knight.

This guy's soft armor was very excellent. Over the past 1 month, Zhang Tie had killed and captured about 12 living black iron demon knights. As those black iron knights on the battlefield didn't know whether they could survive, they would not carry surplus items besides soft armors and weapons which could never match that of this guy.

Besides an excellent knight's soft armor, this guy also carried a space-teleportation equipment. The black adhesive which was used to deal with injuries were taken out of its space-teleportation equipment. It was rare for black iron demon knights to carry any space-teleportation equipment. Very few earth demon knights could have space-teleportation equipment, not to mention black iron knights.

With his lotus-flower eyes, Zhang Tie saw a hammer-shaped silver secret item swimming in the qi sea of the lower abdomen of this guy.

Zhang Tie immediately realized that this was not a common demon knight.

There were major human clans and influential officials; similarly, in the hierarchical pyramid of demon society, there were

also major demon clans and bigwigs. Knights from major clans and powerful families definitely have more items to protect themselves on the battlefield.

After licking his lips, Zhang Tie revealed a merciless smile on his icy and insidious face. At the same time, he reached his weird claw towards the neck of the demon knight...

When Zhang Tie licked his lips, the demon knight realized that something was wrong. However, it thought that it was not a threat. Until it heard the sound behind him, the demon knight turned around to take a look at his back...

The demon knight saw a weird claw reaching towards its neck...

At the sight of the weird claw, the demon knight's pupils shrunk immediately. It seemed wanting to do something or utter an amazed shriek; however, it was too late. That weird claw caught its neck fiercely and pressed its head against the ground ferociously before it uttered any voice and made any response...

The weird claw was unimaginably powerful. The demon knight felt that its neck and head were under a huge mountain. Closely after that, its head ferociously collided against the ground.

With a loud sound "bang...", the hard ground cracked. The demon knight's nose slumped at once while its teeth flew out of its mouth. Its head felt like being beaten by a huge, heavy hammer. It felt dizzy as it spurted out blood at once.

As the demon knight was sitting on the ground to treat its wounds with crossed legs just now, when its head was pressed against the ground, it looked like a little girl who practiced her basic skills of dance. With this gesture, it could barely move at all and felt especially embarrassed.

"Who're you?" The demon knight roared when it caught sight of the lower hem of a black robe through its eye corners. Pressing its neck, the back robe one was squatting down on its side.



What it received was a heavy blow on its left ribs, which was barbaric, fierce and straightforward.

The blow broke 7-8 ribs of the demon knight, causing it to spurt out blood once again. Closely after that, Zhang Tie punched its right ribs, breaking some more ribs and causing it to spurt out more blood. After then, Zhang Tie punched at the middle of the demon knight's back. Finally, he punched at the back side of the demon knight's head...

The demon knight wanted to struggle; however, under Zhang Tie's great stress, he had no chance to struggle at all.

Each time Zhang Tie punched at it, this narrow space would feel like being beaten by a huge steam forging hammer as the earth would faintly shake. The demon knight was also like a tube of toothpaste. Each time Zhang Tie squeezed toothpaste out of the tube, he would cause the demon knight to spurt out blood...

Besides uttering "Who're you?", the demon knight didn't utter any voice until he became completely faint.

Zhang Tie then clapped his hands and stood up. It was much easier for people to kill a tiger than catching it alive; similarly, it was much more difficult for Zhang Tie to knock out a black iron demon knight than directly killing it. Thanks to his over one month's "precious experience", it only took Zhang Tie less than a minute to knock out this prey alive.

Until being knocked out by Zhang Tie, that demon knight still maintained that hilarious basic gesture of dance and became feeble all over. Besides a puddle of blood, there were only teeth on the ground.

After throwing a glance at this guy on the ground, Zhang Tie revealed a faint smile. After that, he sent this guy into Castle of Black Iron as a raw material for bloody sacrifice. Zhang Tie didn't care what items did this guy carry as Heller would find all of them wherever they were hidden in its body.

The bangs didn't stop in the sky. It indicated that the large-scale battle was ongoing. After a weird eye light flashed by, Zhang Tie licked his lips once again...

# Chapter 1007: Angling

---

After a few minutes, the little black beetle flew out of the deep trench and returned to the original place. After watching the battlefield in the distance for about half a minute, the little black beetle flew off towards the distance along the earth's surface...

In an air territory being far away from the two large battle formations in the distance, two battle qi tornadoes rushed into the sky, which indicated that the two earth knights were fighting.

After one month's observation, Zhang Tie found that over 90% of combats between earth human knights and earth demon knights in the core of Tiewei Mountain would come to an end by one party being defeated instead of being annihilated although the combats broke out every day. He found that the weaker party would always rapidly return to the sphere of influence of its own battle fortress when it realized that it couldn't bear the opposite's attack anymore or felt that the opponent had an overwhelming advantage at the beginning in case of being killed in the shortest period.

Those who could tangle with each other for a long time were always earth knights who had almost the same battle strength. Such combats would always be very fierce or very splendid. As the two parties had almost the same battle strength, it was more difficult for one party to kill the other.

Over the past 1 month, Zhang Tie had fought earth demon knights 5 times; however, he only found 2 chances to kill earth demon knights. As to the other 3 combats, they escaped the moment they found that they were in disadvantageous positions. 2 of the 5 earth demon knights didn't even spare any chance for a close combat to Zhang Tie. The moment they found that Zhang Tie was approaching them, they had escaped rapidly. Facing such cunning earth demon knights, Zhang Tie became speechless.

Compared to the other knights, Zhang Tie's fatality rate had

reached about 40% when fighting earth demon knights. What an amazing figure!

After killing two earth demon knights, Zhang Tie had lit 17 scales of his water chakra.

...

The little beetle landed on a remote boulder below the battlefield of the two battle qi tornadoes and watched the combat between the earth human knight and the earth demon knight and the collisions between the two large formations in the distance.

Of course, Zhang Tie expected that humans could take the advantageous position in the collisions between the two large formations. As for the duel between the earth human knight and the earth demon knight, Zhang Tie actually hoped that the earth demon knight could take the advantageous position so that the earth human knight could return to the sphere of the effect of the human's battle fortress.

If the earth human knight took the advantageous position, the earth demon knight would return to the sphere of the effect of the demon's battle fortress. If so, Zhang Tie would not gain any benefit from this combat.

In this situation, if Zhang Tie incarnated as Gorath and rushed forward, the earth demon knight would escape right away when it realized that it was going to be attacked by two earth human knights. If so, Zhang Tie would not gain any benefits at all.

It was definitely a technology for Zhang Tie to hunt earth demon knights in Tiewei Mountain.

...

As time went by, the fierce collisions between humans and demons continued. Humans and demons were constantly ground and devoured by the opposite large formation after breaking off their own large formation. Independent humans and demons also

grew in population. At the same time, the combats around the large formations grew fiercer.

In Zhang Tie's eyes, if the two large formations were far-ancient fierce beasts, he was a cunning jager who was waiting for fish and shrimps being pushed to the sandy beach by sea waves and tidewater.

2 hours later, Zhang Tie finally gained a chance as the result of the combat between the two earth knights had become clear.

As was expected by Zhang Tie, when the earth human knight felt that he could not bear it anymore, he chose to evacuate; however, the earth demon knight kept chasing after him as it intended to kill him before he reached the protective sphere of the human's battle fortress.

The two light beams flew away one after another. The little black beetle also flew off and chased after the two earth knights rapidly. When the little black beetle passed by a hidden mine, it entered the mine immediately and incarnated into the grim Gorath almost at the same time.

Gorath's lotus-flower eyes flickered and firmly targeted at the earth demon knight in the sky.

The two earth knights soon entered the black mist out of the effect of the large formations. Commoners would not be able to see them anymore, except for Zhang Tie who could still see the earth demon knight even in the black mist.

Zhang Tie flew rapidly along the earth's surface. From a height, due to the super hiding rune effect, Zhang Tie's body almost integrated with the earth. When he entered the black mist, he instantly rushed into the sky and accelerated his speed after the earth demon knight.

——

After 20 minutes, Zhang Tie found that the earth human knight

had entered the protective sphere of the human's battle fortress. Due to the large-scale battle today, in order to prevent demons from raiding the base of humans, earth and shadow human knights were patrolling in the periphery of the battle fortress. At the sight of the earth human knight, a team of human knights instantly accelerated towards him...

At the sight of the team of human knights, the earth demon knight immediately turned around and evacuated.

Although being over 40 miles away, Zhang Tie could still see what was happening in front of him even in the dense black mist.

Watching the earth demon knight turning around and flying towards him, Zhang Tie immediately stopped.

A whim occurred to his mind—I will let the earth demon knight chase after me rather than chasing after it. It would be easier for me to gain benefits from it. There's an old Hua saying, if you want to gain something, you have to give it to others at first.

After thinking about it for a second, Zhang Tie felt that this whim was feasible.

After releasing his battle qi, he shattered his own black robe and made his hair disordered. After that, he found some ashes from Castle of Black Iron and daubed some on his face. Furthermore, he told Heller to collect some blood of the demon knight and spray blood over his body. Besides, he made his qi as an earth knight look unstable.

Only after a short while, Zhang Tie had looked utterly different.

At first sight, Gorath immediately became an earth human knight who had escaped from the battlefield in a pretty embarrassed manner. Additionally, he seemed to have suffered severe wounds; plus the solemn and insidious poker face, his look was very persuasive.

After all, the role Gorath was used to sacrifice and be his

scapegoat. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't have any stress to do anything in this role.

Zhang Tie could even do more excessive things in order to angle an earth demon knight, not to mention an embarrassed makeover. Zhang Tie would not even lose hair by doing that; therefore, he didn't have any mental stress.

After doing all this, Zhang Tie flew towards the earth demon knight.

...

After a few minutes, Gorath, with an unstable and "embarrassed" qi as an earth knight, encountered the earth demon knight in the sky.

After passing by the black mist, the two parties discovered the opponent almost at the same time from less 600 m away.

After changing his face, Gorath turned around and escaped at once. That earth demon knight responded in a split second. With a flee, it hurriedly caught up with Gorath.

When they encountered, the earth demon knight was rightly on the way that Gorath returned to the human's battle fortress; therefore, Gorath would not return to the human's battle fortress anymore. He could only seek for another way to evacuate. After noticing that Gorath was "severely wounded", of course, the demon knight would not abandon such a good chance as it accelerated immediately.

As Gorath was "severely wounded", he could not fly rapidly. Only after 20 minutes, he had been blocked by the earth demon knight using magnet tactic in a remote mountain being far away from the core battlefield.

Only after a few strikes in the sky, Gorath who was "severely wounded" had "spat" out blood. At the same time, its face turned pale as he dove into a deserted mine in the mountain in a flurried

way.

"With demon god on my side, where you're escaping to?" The demon knight fleered as it followed Gorath into the mine.

After entering thousands of meters inside the mine, the demon knight had already caught up with Gorath. Additionally, it rapidly approached Gorath with the help of the narrow space in the mine and started the most dangerous and fatal close combat. It wanted to kill the "severely wounded" Gorath rapidly through close combat.

After responding to the earth demon knight's strike a few minutes in an "embarrassed" manner, "severely wounded" Gorath frankly bore a strike from the earth demon knight with his protective battle qi. After that, when the earth demon knight attacked him, Gorath finally got a chance to catch the demon knight's ankle. Through this movement, the demon knight felt an "inseparable deep love".

The demon knight thought that Gorath's protective battle qi had been collapsed. The moment it prepared to break the human knight's head by one kick, it found that the opponent suddenly changed into an utterly different person—his collapsed protective battle qi reappeared with full energy; at the same time, the human knight caught its ankle when his qi turned as stable as a mountain at once.

Before the earth demon knight realized what happened, Gorath who had held the demon knight's ankle had turned berserk like a tyrannosaurus. He lifted the earth demon knight and crashed it against the ground in the mine like using a knife to break a cucumber.

With a "bang", a huge pit appeared on the ground in the mine.

With an earthquake, soil and rocks in the mine fell down. Through this strike, the earth demon knight was almost knocked out by Gorath. However, before it realized what happened, the



weird claw lifted it up and slammed it onto the ground ferociously once again...

In the next 10 minutes, the earthquake in the mine didn't stop at all...

10 minutes later, the earthquake in the mine finally stopped. After a few more minutes, Zhang Tie came out of the mine still in an embarrassed way like being severely wounded.

He lurked on the ground below the necessary flight route through which human knights returned to the battle fortress...

Only after 1 hour later, another earth demon knights followed an earth human knight here.

The opposite scene might happen on the other side of the battlefield; however, the scene that earth human knight was chased by an earth demon knight could only be seen here.

As both parties had enough knights, earth demon knights and earth human knights could only have 50% possibility to win the duel. From Zhang Tie's position, he could see more earth human knights being chased by earth demon knights.

At the sight of the two knights in the sky, Zhang Tie felt pretty thrilled.

As was told by Donder, a sustainable money-making mode was definitely more profitable than a disposable money-making mode...

'Mode!' What a motherf\*cking good thing!

Zhang Tie felt that he had absolutely understood the essence of Donder's words.

...

After 40 minutes, another earth demon knight followed after "severely wounded" Gorath into the deserted mine.

Ten more minutes later, Gorath came out of the mine once

again...

# Chapter 1008: I Come, I See and I Fight

---

After over 10 hours' fierce collisions, the two large battle formations finally left the main battlefield slowly like two fierce beasts who licked their wounds, leaving dust over the sky...

...

"Ahh...that's not real..."

A black iron demon knight uttered the last scream in the mine before being stomped by Zhang Tie's foot as it passed out while rolling up its eyes after being mistreated a few minutes.

The black iron demon knight whose battle strength was close to the demon general in Waii Subcontinent was the last one of those who were induced by Zhang Tie into the mine. Before entering this mine, it was domineering; however, its body had been covered by Gorath's footprints at this moment.

As Gorath was a disguised role who didn't need to take any responsibility for what he did, at the sight of this guy, Gorath immediately changed his qi into the level of black iron knights and looked like being severely wounded and embarrassed. Like those demon knights being knocked over by Zhang Tie, at the sight of the "severely wounded" human knight escaping away, it immediately caught up with him. Closely after that, the injured rabbit turned into a berserk tyrannosaurus and what waited for it was a tragedy...

Undoubtedly, this was a "good mode". Only after half a day, Zhang Tie had gained the same achievement that he had achieved in one month since he came to this theater of operations, namely knocking over 4 earth demon knights and 3 black iron earth demon knights. What an amazing military exploit!

Without this large-scale battle between two large formations, this "good mode" might not work at all; in this special state"good

mode", Gorath's perfect performing skills and Zhang Tie's powerful battle strength led to such a bumper day.

At the sight of Gorath, all those demon knights realized that he was a fish escaping from the huge net on the battlefield. If it were another time and scene, the effect could never be as good as this one.

Zhang Tie didn't enjoy himself to the full. After knocking out the last black iron demon knight and throwing it into Castle of Black Iron, he flew out of the mine once again. He looked up and saw the human's large battle formation slowly moving towards the battle fortress from afar.

The human knights who had broken off the large formation also evacuated with the human's large formation from the main battlefield. So did the demon's large formation and those demon knights who had broken off their large battle formation.

The black mist was covered by black mist once again. The earth's underfoot also stopped its quake. The human and demon knights who were fighting just now also separated from each other.

'Is it over?'

Zhang Tie became a bit disappointed.

Such a highly spirited collision between humans and demons in the Earth-elements Realm would happen once a few months. Zhang Tie had not imagined that it could come to an end so fast. If it could last a few days, Zhang Tie believed that he would make greater achievements.

However, it had to come to an end. Because over 800 human and demon knights had died in this large-scale battle.

The loss of over 800 knights was terrifying; additionally, all the knights died very miserably as most of them were directly ground by the opposite large battle formation after breaking off their own large formation less than half a minute. Even earth knights were as

trivial as dust in such a large-scale battle, not to mention common black iron knights.

According to Zhang Tie's observation and estimation, although human's large battle formation had been in the advantageous position since the beginning of the battle, over 300 human knights who broke off the large battle formation and were devoured by the demon's large battle formation immediately. Demons suffered a greater loss as they lost 1/3 more knights than humans.

Given the losses of both parties, humans seemed to win the battle; however, demon knights were more than human knights at the beginning. Comparatively, humans didn't gain too much advantage at all.

The summit confrontation between different species was similar to the duels between major countries or rogues. In many situations, the result of such a large-scale battle didn't rely on the number of population, but on which party was fiercer. If one party didn't have a strong will, they would not block their enemy; if they were not determined to lose people and blood, they would lose more people and blood.

Watching the human knight's large battle formation and those dauntless independent human knights slowly approaching him from the distance, Zhang Tie suspended over the deserted mine in silent tribute a short while for those human knights who sacrificed today. After that, before the large battle formation reached above his head, Zhang Tie returned to the deserted mine in case of being noticed by high-rank human knights.

When the human's large battle formation approached the deserted mine, a little black beetle flew out of the mine towards the battlefield...

Zhang Tie thought about picking some extra gains from the battlefield. After all, it was a rare chance.

Half an hour later, after the two large formations evacuated the

battlefield, those who were responsible for picking extra gains on the battlefield arrived.

Auxiliary human troops and a lot of spider demons and ox-headed demons were dispatched to the battlefield.

Their jobs basically contained the following three points.

First, discover wounded knights on their side who had lost action capability on the battlefield and save them.

Second, if they found the opposite knights who had lost their action capability, they would kill them immediately.

Third, pick equipments and items of the late knights on the battlefield.

Most of the late knights were directly and immediately ground in the collisions of the two large formations, who might carry extremely rare space-teleportation equipment even senior cultivation methods. After these knights were killed, their belongings would fall onto the battlefield. If one party didn't pick and scramble them, it indicated that they gifted these precious items to the opponent. Therefore, both parties would not give up picking these rarities. Even if there were no rarities on the battlefield, as knight's weapons had basically broken through the bottleneck of black iron effect, each one of which would worth hundreds of thousands of gold coins at least. Therefore, neither party would abandon them.

The combats of auxiliary battle fighters were just aftermath of this large-scale battle in the core theater of operations. However, the combats were still very miserable for these knights below knight level. In each combat, they had to face a life or death situation. In the aftermath of each large-scale battle, the number of human fighters below knight level who sacrificed and left their blood on the battlefield would not be fewer than that of human knights who lost their lives in the collisions of the two large battle formations.

When low-level fighters from both parties entered the battlefield which had been watered by numerous knights' blood, the dense black mist was full of saber and sword lights and killing intents once again...

2 hours later, the little black beetle had circled around the battlefield. Although he didn't see any human knight and demon knight, he saw many combats between human and demon fighters below knight level.

After realizing that he would gain no extra benefit and was not qualified to be the babysitter of human fighters on the battlefield, the little black beetle returned to the deep trench where he knocked out the first black iron demon knight today. In a hidden place in the deep trench, he returned to Castle of Black Iron.

...

In Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie's original body opened his eyes while the little black beetle kept flying around his head.

"Well, you must be tired. Go take a rest. If you want to take an all-purpose medicament, go find Aziz!" Zhang Tie waved his hand towards the little black beetle. After receiving the order, the little black beetle immediately flew off the palace tree jubilantly for Aziz. During the period when it was in Castle of Black Iron, this little black beetle had already become the loyal fan of all-purpose medicament in Castle of Black Iron. It would have some drops of all-purpose medicament each day.

"After fighting for so many days, Castle Lord should have a rest!" Heller walked over here and said with a solemn look as he pointed at the wounds on Zhang Tie's body.

After hearing Heller's suggestion, Zhang Tie lowered his head and took a look at his wounds before taking deep breaths consecutively, "If you didn't warn me, I almost forgot about it!"

Without any disguise, Zhang Tie's body had been covered with

real wounds. His black robe had been wet by his blood and sweat.

The over 40 wounds, internal and external, large and small were caused by those earth demon knights who were trapped by him in the mine. There were 3 wounds on his face. The two severest wounds were on his leg and left armpit respectively, from where he could even see his bones. Average earth knights might have lain down, except for Zhang Tie.

Those earth demon knights that Zhang Tie met today were all above average. Two of them were very tricky. Even though they were trapped by Zhang Tie, they still made Zhang Tie suffer a great loss.

The reason that Zhang Tie could bear so many wounds till now lay in the great power of his emperor-level method. What counted most was the super anti-strike capability and super recovery ability that was granted by the small tree and the unyielding belief in his mind.

After having close combats with some earth demon knights constantly, Zhang Tie had some new gnosis about his own battle skills. Therefore, Zhang Tie's achievements were far more than absorbing the water elements from the water chakras of some earth demon knights today; he had made the most important step forward in his self-awareness.

At this moment, Zhang Tie confirmed that he had already become a trump earth knight who had killed over 5 earth demon knights although he had not won others' approval.

A trump earth knight would have an absolutely different gnosis than common earth knights.

The combats today represented his spirit of iron and blood. Although he didn't join the large human battle formation, he had killed the most demon knights alone. He had bled no less than that of the other human knights. Additionally, the large-scale battle in the sky made him highly spirited as a human knight.



If Zhang Tie still didn't bleed or get injured in the fiercest and most miserable battle between humans and demons as a shrewd onlooker, it would be a regret in his life.

Zhang Tie faintly felt proud of himself about his wounds and achievements...

Even though he was framed as a murderer and couldn't expose his real status to the public, Zhang Tie's firm belief as a human knight still didn't collapse whenever and wherever he was!

'I come, I see and I fight...'

This was Zhang Tie's firm belief in the holy war as a human knight!

# Chapter 1009: 1 Change Earth Knight Realm

---

Heller seemed to have sensed Zhang Tie's pride; he threw a glance at Zhang Tie before speaking slowly, "Castle Lord, your battle style was too valiant and risky. However, if you met any earth demon knight who had a greater battle strength or mastered some special secret method, Castle Lord might be severely inflicted in a split second!"

"Such a large-scale battle is rarely seen. After the earth-element crystals in Tiewei Mountain were fully exploited after 3 months, such a large-scale battle would be barely seen in a short period!" Zhang Tie replied with a sigh, "Given the situations from all aspects over the past one month, I feel that this might be the last large-scale battle between humans and demons in the core of Tiewei Mountain. The confrontation between tens of thousands of human knights and demon knights might soon come to an end! I didn't come to the Earth-elements Realm in vain after participating in such a large-scale battle. If I did not risk my life and get injured today, I would even feel sorry for myself!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's answer, Heller could only reveal a bitter smile, "Fortunately, Castle Lord has made a great achievement today. However, there's an old Hua saying that where there is life, there is hope. Based on your current resources, as long as you could make progress step by step steadily, you will promote to a heavenly knight sooner or later. If you were in a rush for quick results, you might face the reverse outcome!"

"Okay, I will keep it in mind!" Zhang Tie knew that Heller really cared about him; therefore, he accepted Heller's suggestion modestly, "Oh, you mentioned that some demon knight mastered some secret method which could severely inflict me. What's that secret method?"

"Battle Qi Automatic Explosion!" Heller revealed the name of the secret method. Zhang Tie didn't ask how did Heller know it.

Whatever, he knew that Heller would not cheat him, "Castle Lord is used to catching the wrist or ankle of demon knights, however, if you met a demon knight who had mastered battle qi automatic explosion, Castle Lord was actually holding a very dangerous alchemist bomb!"

'F\*ck, how could there be such an abnormal skill?'

Zhang Tie took in a deep breath. He could only admit that he was unfortunate if he met a demon knight who mastered battle qi automatic explosion. Whatever, he could not give up the most effective battle pattern due to the existence of such a demon knight.

Whereas, Heller's words made Zhang Tie vigilant. He should make preparations in case that he really met such a demon knight; otherwise, he didn't even have time to use his shield, a silver secret item. That would be too miserable...

"Fine, I will make preparations!" Zhang Tie replied as he took out a vial of senior recovery medicament and drank it up. At the same time, he walked towards his own room, "After experiencing hardships and avoiding from a shadow demon knight's chase for so many days, I'm a bit tired. I will sleep a few days..."

With his preliminary recovery body, in many situations, Zhang Tie only needed to have a sound sleep. However, he was really a bit tired at this moment...

Watching Zhang Tie's fatigued figure after relaxing himself, Heller let out a sigh inside, Over the past one more month, Zhang Tie had indeed exerted his utmost efforts. Each day, Zhang Tie was in high-intensity combats or agnostic state.

After destroying that secret base of demons, Zhang Tie spent about 10 days in escaping from the chase of a shadow demon knight who carried a soul-chasing butterfly and excelled at chasing others with the help of Castle of Black Iron and his super great incarnation capability by leading it to an underground magma sea.

After coming back from the magma sea, he caught sight of such a large-scale battle between human knights and demon knights. Although being not in the human's large formation, Zhang Tie's combats were also hard and fierce.

In order to prevent those demon knights who had been trapped from escaping away, Zhang Tie would always show his weakness. After that, he would find a chance to catch one wrist of the demon knights and started the most dangerous close combats with the demon knights. The severest wounds on Zhang Tie's body were left in such close combats.

Given Zhang Tie's dauntless spirit, Heller found that Zhang Tie was anxious about strengthening his battle strength and returning to the earth's surface because he missed his wife, his parents and his children. Some of those children were in Taixia Country, some were in the remote Ice and Snow Wilderness.

Sometimes, perhaps Zhang Tie didn't find that he usually called those people's names unconsciously in dreams. After waking up, Zhang Tie would recover his composure as if nothing had happened. He gradually strengthened his abilities through exercises and battles.

As for Zhang Tie, during these years since he left Waii Subcontinent, what he felt most pitiful was that he didn't stay on his wives' side when they delivered babies. He didn't fulfill his obligation as a father.

Zhang Tie was not a cool man. He was not too ambitious or enterprising; his intelligence was not outstanding either. From a certain perspective, Zhang Tie was just a commoner who was a bit ambitious and kind-hearted. He was a bit obscene in his youth and always bore his family in mind after growing up. However, the God selected him as the owner of Castle of Black Iron. Did it indicate anything?

With this question, Heller walked out of the palace tree and came

to the mountain slope. Looking up at the changing colorful clouds in Castle of Black Iron, he asked himself, 'Is this the will of the God?'

At this moment, the light in Castle of Black Iron gradually turned dim as the night fell.

The clouds rolled and changed their colors as if they were responding to Heller's question silently.

...

Zhang Tie stayed in his room for about 10 days.

After waking up, he sat in his room with crossed legs and started to digest the water elements that he refined from those earth demon knights so as to form his own water chakra. After feeling a bit tired, he would drink a lot of all-purpose medicament, which made him drunk and fall asleep once again.

10 days later, Zhang Tie's wounds had been fully recovered; additionally, he had lit 36 scales of his earth knight's crystal plate and entered 1 change earth knight realm, namely, he completed his first round of overall strengthening after promoting to an earth human knight...

# Chapter 1010: Being Gradually Outstanding

---

Since he left Black Armor Battlefortress for over 1 month, Zhang Tie improved his overall strength at the fastest speed. During the past 1 month; especially in the demon base, Zhang Tie killed hundreds of spider demons and hundreds of common ox-headed demons which brought him two fruits of source. After taking the two fruits of source, Zhang Tie was able to constantly knock over some earth demon knights face to face in the large-scale battle between humans and demons 10 days ago in his foundation consolidation period as an earth knight.

A fruit of source could enhance the capabilities brought by his surging points all over his body by 1/12, which indicated an overall enhancement. With two fruits of source, Zhang Tie would accomplish two rounds of overall enhancement. Although Zhang Tie was apparently still in the foundation consolidation period as an earth knight, actually, his overall strength had reached as same as that of those earth knights who had formed a half water chakra of viscount-level cultivation methods like "Five-elements Ground-look Sutra".

Plus the round of overall enhancement that he experienced when he promoted to 1 change earth knight realm, Zhang Tie's overall strength had even been slightly greater than that of earth knights who had entered the 9 changes earth knight realm of the lowest level baron secret method.

Those who cultivated baron-level secret methods could only gain three rounds of overall enhancement in each knight stage. Zhang Tie had accomplished three rounds of overall enhancement as an earth knight of king roc sutra; additionally, some effects of fruits of source were even better than overall enhancement of knights themselves.

Without fruits of source, Zhang Tie, who cultivated the "King Roc Sutra", was as powerful as the 9 changes earth knight realm of

baron-level secret method when he accomplished three rounds of overall enhancement; when he accomplished four rounds of overall enhancement, he would be as powerful as the 9 changes earth knight realm of viscount-level secret method; when he accomplished five rounds of overall enhancement, he would be as powerful as the 9 changes earth knight realm of count-level secret method; when he accomplished six rounds of overall enhancement, he would be as powerful as the 9 changes earth knight realm of marquis-level secret method...

This implied the great power of the emperor-level secret method.

During the 10 days' recovery and cultivation, Zhang Tie was also meditating about his cultivation and precise battle strength level. Finally, Zhang Tie reached a conclusion that his basic battle strength was equal to the level of 5 changes earth knight realm of marquis-level secret methods such as "Fire Dragon Sutra".

Even Zhang Tie himself was startled by this conclusion. He had not imagined that he could reach this level unconsciously after taking so many fruits and cultivating the emperor-level secret method day by day. Even Zhang Taixuan the Long Wind Count might not enter such a high realm.

In 5 changes earth knight realm of the marquis-level secret method, Zhang Tie was already a member of powerhouses among earth knights in Taixia Country.

In this realm, he could easily kill any black iron knight. Plus his exceptional defensive capability and recovery capability, theoretically, he could defeat all the 6-7 changes earth knights who cultivated low-level secret methods in close combats.

Zhang Tie was a bit surprised about this result; however, the combats between him and those earth demon knights just now reminded him that it was true.

The fruit of source was very powerful. With the effect of two fruits of source, Zhang Tie accomplished two rounds of over-

enhancement in a short period. This was a good news. However, the bad news was that the two fruits of source might be the last ones that Zhang Tie could take. From then on, the small tree would not produce any fruit of source anymore, after running out of the iron-body fruits and leakless fruits.

Zhang Tie had taken the fruits of source from iron-armored demons, wing demons, spider demons and ox-headed demons, except for the fruit of source from shadow demons. Theoretically, as long as Zhang Tie could kill 360 shadow demons below knight level, he could have a fruit of source from shadow demons. However, Zhang Tie knew that it was impossible. As shadow demons were rare, he might not kill so many shadow demons for the rest of his life.

After entering 1 change earth knight realm, Zhang Tie lost the source of another fruit. Therefore, he became a bit frustrated while being ecstatic. As there were too few fruits of source, Zhang Tie didn't feel like leaving one on the tree as a souvenir.

After entering 1 change earth knight realm and understanding his real overall strength, Zhang Tie became thrilled inside with an unprecedented great confidence. The depression and haze that had puzzled him over the past 3 years since he was framed as a murder finally disappeared.

...

After Zhang Tie entered 1 change earth knight realm for 2 days...

...

"Beat vital parts..."

"Use more strength..."

"Exert all of your strength, don't be afraid of hurting me..."

On the lawn outside the palace tree, as Zhang Tie constantly shouted, Aziz, Edward and Agan who had been wet all over gritted their teeth and beat Zhang Tie by their long saber, mace and heavy



hammer forcefully.

Zhang Tie was wearing a pair of short pants in naked, sturdy upper body. Due to his preliminary recovery body, his skin was very smooth. After his wounds recovered, no scar was left on his skin. At this moment, Zhang Tie was bearing the strikes of Aziz, Edward and Agan like a target without using his protective battle qi.

All the strikes didn't leave any scars on Zhang Tie's skin besides loud sounds and special frictional sounds.

At the beginning, Aziz, Edward and Agan spared some strength; after knowing that Zhang Tie didn't feel enough, the three people exerted their full strength and pounded at Zhang Tie's body constantly by their weapons.

Aziz held a grim mace being covered with sharp spurs. After hearing Zhang Tie's request, Aziz held high his mace and swung it at Zhang Tie's shoulder.

When the mace almost touched Zhang Tie's shoulder, Zhang Tie moved aside and resisted Aziz's mace by his face. When the mace almost touched his skin and the sharp spurs almost stabbed into Zhang Tie's eyeballs did he close his eyes...

As a result, Aziz forcefully pounded the mace onto Zhang Tie's face.

"Bang..."

Aziz didn't realize what happened until his mace hit Zhang Tie's face.

"Castle Lord..." Aziz's hand quivered as he dropped off his mace immediately. Edward and Agan hurriedly stopped too as they both thought that they had hurt Zhang Tie.

The moment Aziz dropped off his mace, he had hurriedly knelt down in a flurried way. Face turning pale, he almost burst out into tears, "Ahh, I didn't mean it, I just wanted to hit Castle Lord's

shoulder..."

Zhang Tie opened his eyes and said, "Take it easy, I tried it on purpose. I'm fine..."

"Ahh, Castle Lord...you're really...fine?"

"Yes, I'm fine!"

Zhang Tie replied as he rubbed his face. His facial skin was very good, which was neither swollen nor broken. He didn't even lose a hair. Just now, Zhang Tie just wanted to try the anti-strike capability of his most fragile body part. The result was very satisfactory. He bore a mace' strike on his face safe and sound. He just felt a bit pain on his face like being hit by an inflated toy mace. When the spurs of the mace stabbed onto his eyelids, he just felt his eyeballs being pressed by an external force. Both his eyelids and eyeballs were fine.

Actually, Aziz, Edward and Agan had the strength of LV 9 fighters. Additionally, their weapons were not inflated toys, but real. Although those weapons were neither silver secret items nor bronze items, they were made of abyss iron.

After confirming that Zhang Tie was safe, Aziz finally stood up while faintly quivering all over.

Zhang Tie ran his spiritual energy and activated his capability as a divine dominator. Closely after that, the mace automatically floated up from the ground and fell in his hand. Zhang Tie felt that it weighed about 50-60 kg. Each time Zhang Tie waved it, the mace would utter a wild-wolf like howl, which sounded like containing a terrifying strength.

After waving it for a short while and confirming that it was not inflated, Zhang Tie threw the mace back to Aziz as he turned around and asked Heller on his side.

"Heller, what's the matter with me? Why do I feel that my anti-strike capability and defensive capability have entered a wholly

new realm and are fully developed besides the sharp increase in my strength and speed after entering 1 change earth knight realm? Only by the physical defense, I could completely ignore all the strikes of fighters below LV 9."

"Castle Lord, do you remember the situation you were in when you entered the 1 change earth knight realm?"

"Of course I do, I was severely wounded at that moment..." Zhang Tie replied frankly as he immediately realized something. He then widely opened his eyes and asked, "Wait, you mean my super strong defensive capability is related to the situation when I was severely wounded at that moment..."

"After growing old, eagles' claws and beaks would gradually turn blunt. By then, eagles would smash their sharp claws and beaks on hard rocks, making them badly mutilated. After their wounds recovered, they would grow sharper claws and beaks and accomplish a metamorphosis so as to adapt to the environment. After forming an earth chakra, you have entered a new realm of "King Roc Sutra". Do you feel that the overall enhancement brought by the "King Roc Sutra" couldn't even match the instinct that a wild beast develops so as to respond to the crises?" Heller asked a question in return while his eyes flickered in a wise way...

Zhang Tie understood it immediately. It indicated that he would have more chances to strengthen some abilities if he encountered more crises in these aspects. After each round of overall enhancement, he would be able to face the problems that he had suffered in a franker way. If he was still severely wounded when he entered the 2 changes earth knight realm, his defensive capability would be further strengthened. On the contrary, if all the aspects were balanced, the effect of his overall enhancement would also be balanced in all aspects.

As he gradually reached higher levels and realms, the power of emperor-level secret method gradually became outstanding.

Zhang Tie estimated that only emperor-level secret methods such as "King Roc Sutra" could realize tentative enhancement.

Touching his face, Zhang Tie felt that he should think about it carefully.

After thinking about it a short while, Zhang Tie told Aziz, Agan and Edward to bring those demon knights here. As he felt good today, he wanted to offer a bloody sacrifice by those demon knights...

# Chapter 1011: A Surprise

---

There were a big garden and a spacious grassland outside the palace tree. Zhang Tie pointed at an open place and teleported the bloody sacrifice furnace out of his portable Xuanwu Secret Warehouse of Bloody Soul Temple onto the lawn. The 30-m higher joss whose upper body was anthropomorphic while its lower body was winding round a huge furnace in the shape of a snake. Its raw material was like red copper.

According to common sense, space-teleportation equipment could not be superposed. A space-teleportation equipment could not be put into another space-teleportation equipment, except for Castle of Black Iron. All the portable space-teleportation equipment could freely access to Castle of Black Iron.

From this perspective, Zhang Tie felt that Castle of Black Iron was not only a space-teleportation equipment, but it was also more like a special space.

As the joss, the altar and the furnace were connected with each other, Zhang Tie regarded this joss as a huge machine.

In the hieron's ruins, Zhang Tie had completely figured out the usage of this bloody sacrifice furnace and some special, hidden tricks on the bloody sacrifice furnace. Of course, he took the whole set of the machine when he left the hieron ruins.

In the beginning, Zhang Tie thought the bloody sacrifice furnace below the joss was like the pool of chaos, which would digest everything of the demons being sacrificed, leaving nothing at all. After studying it carefully, Zhang Tie found a hidden space covering dozens of cuber meters behind the base of the bloody sacrifice furnace, which was used to contain remains of living beings being sacrificed.

Those living beings being sacrificed and burned would leave some dark purple remains which were not ash but a finer material

which Zhang Tie could barely figure out. One demon could only leave at most one handful of that remains.

Heller said it was the original impurity and raw material of living beings, which could not be found anywhere else besides in the bloody sacrifice furnace. This sort of impurity and raw material might be the most senior and special fertilizer that humans could find, it's the tunic of all the plants.

2/3 of the hidden space of the bloody sacrifice furnace had been filled with this dark purple material.

After hearing that this material was effective to plants, when he left the hieron ruins, out of curiosity, Zhang Tie moved some of the material out of the hidden space and buried it under the two parasol trees outside the palace tree.

Before Aziz, Agan and Edward brought those demon knights here, Zhang Tie and Heller went to see the two parasol trees.

Outside the palace tree, over 100 parasol trees were standing on both sides of a corridor. Zhang Tie remembered that he buried the fertilizer under two common parasol trees. When he approached the two rows of parasol trees, Zhang Tie immediately found the two parasol trees.

Previously, the two parasol trees were nothing different than other trees; however, now, they were much larger than their neighboring trees. With luxuriant foliage, the two parasol trees looked especially sturdy. What was weirder was that the edge of their leaves turned extraordinarily bright purple. By contrast, the two parasol trees looked evidently taller and sturdier than their surrounding trees.

"Ahh, have the two parasol trees mutated?" Zhang Tie became startled by the two exceptional parasol trees. He had not imagined that the two parasol trees could become so distinctive only after a few months.

"No, they were not mutated. The species of the parasol trees have not changed. They just grow too well!"

"Why the leaves of the two parasol trees are different than that of others?"

"Because the two parasol trees have absorbed the nutrients in the fertilizer. It indicates that Castle Lord has buried too many fertilizers at the beginning. After the leaves turn bright purple, they could produce something special by the process of photosynthesis. As a result, the two parasol trees would grow healthier and more special. Like human beings, glands of different people would secrete different levels of substances. Meanwhile, the substances secreted by glands of human beings would also directly participate in and influence the physiological activities and life existence levels of human beings. It was similar to plants!" Heller explained.

"According to your explanation, if I buried those fertilizers under other plants, the other plants would also grow pretty well. Although the species of the plant doesn't change, its state of existence turns better!"

"Yes!" Heller nodded.

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter, "It turns out that we could gain better fertilizers for our farmland. What a surprise!"

"Castle Lord, it would be too wasteful if you bury this fertilizer in the farmland. Because this material could be used for more advanced things!"

"More advanced things?"

"For instance, some special medicines or senior tea trees. Castle Lord, do you remember that you brought some tea seeds into Castle of Black Iron when you returned to Coiling Dragon Mountain, the hometown of Cui Li last time?"

"Yes, I do!" Zhang Tie nodded.

After having Castle of Black Iron, wherever he arrived, Zhang Tie had been used to bring new plant species into Castle of Black Iron, good or not. Last time, when he returned to Cui Li's hometown, he teleported some tea seed into Castle of Black Iron.

"Those tea seeds are just quality ones from Coiling Dragon Mountain. They're not too expensive. After Castle Lord brought them into Castle of Black Iron, I've already had them mutate once. They became more unique. If Castle Lord took those mutated tea seeds out of Castle of Black Iron and cultivated them with this special fertilizer, this mutated tea leaf would definitely be distinctive in Taixia Country!"

After hearing Heller's words, Zhang Tie became stunned. He had not imagined that Heller could breed a new tea leaf in Castle of Black Iron.

Tea leaf was one of the most important commodities and living necessities in Taixia Country. Hua people in Taixia Country and rich people in other subcontinents both regarded drinking tea as a most elegant entertainment. Tea leaf trading was a very profitable business...

Zhang Tie remembered that Barley the Fattie fetched some tea leaves which were treasured by them pretty much. When in Waii Subcontinent, elders of Huaiyuan Palace and mushrooms in Blackhot City were all the fans of tea leaves.

Tea leaves like wild spring in Taixia Country would be even treasured by elders of Huaiyuan Palace. They would not waste any of them.

When Zhang Tie was digesting Heller's words, Aziz, Agan and Edward had pushed those demon knights out...

At the sight of the exotic scenery in Castle of Black Iron, those black iron demon knights who had been knocked out and locked in the dungeon of Castle of Black Iron for a few days were all shocked or dumbfounded; they didn't know why they were here and was



confused about their location.

The colorful cloud and exotic scenery over the immortal mountain, the palace tree and the bloody sacrifice furnace were all out of their imaginations.

Whatever, these guys would become fertilizers soon, Zhang Tie didn't care what they saw before they were killed.

Heller's words made Zhang Tie's heart race. He felt that those trivial fertilizers might play a big role on the earth's surface...

...

6 black iron demon knights were pushed here by wheelbarrows. They were the achievements that Zhang Tie had made over the past one month.

All of these guys wore restrictive equipment which were produced by Edward. The same restrictive equipment could make earth knights as tame as muppets, not to mention these black iron knights. After wearing the restrictive equipment, they immediately became fish on the chopping board.

Most of these black iron knights didn't have any response at the sight of the bloody sacrifice furnace except one of them, the very one who carried a space-teleportation equipment. At the sight of the bloody sacrifice furnace, it looked pretty scared. Closely after that, he twisted his body out of excitement as if it had known about his fate...

# Chapter 1012: A Top Secret

---

Besides recovering wounds, the bloody sacrifice furnace could also help people break through the bottleneck of their secret method and battle skills; especially the second function, which was very useful for everybody.

As of now, the most profound battle skills that Zhang Tie cultivated were those secret battle skills in the Fire Dragon Sutra. Those demon knights being knocked out and caught alive became Zhang Tie's precious resources to break through the bottleneck of his secret method and battle skills.

Watching these sacrifices being pushed out, Zhang Tie didn't waste time. Without communicating with those demon knights who were destined to be fertilizers, he directly came to the front of the altar and started the bloody sacrifice furnace right away. He intended to promote to a higher level in those battle skills of the Fire Dragon Sutra through the bloody sacrifice.

After Zhang Tie started it, the vent of the bloody sacrifice furnace was opened while the terrifying black flames appeared in the furnace. The fierce flames seemed to be cold; however, they could burn everything. With the atmosphere of hell, the flames were like changing demon's claws, which wanted to devour all the living beings. In a terrifying atmosphere, the vent was like an open gate of the hell.

Even though those demon knights didn't know what they were pushed here for, at the sight of the open bloody sacrifice furnace, they realized that they were destined to die miserably.

However, they couldn't resist at all; neither did their struggle work. They couldn't even scream because they wore a muzzle.

This method was always used for those untamed dangerous wild beasts.

Those demon knights could only twist their bodies and struggle in vain while "wailing" mournfully.

The first black iron demon knight was poured into the bloody sacrifice furnace like a rubbish by Edward. The moment it entered the black flame, it had disappeared. At the sight of this scene, all the other black iron demon knights were scared.

The 2nd one, the 3rd one and the 4th one...

Zhang Tie noticed that one of these demon knights was especially thrilled. When it was carried onto Edward's wheelbarrow by Agan and Aziz, it started to struggle while the vessels on its neck bulged. It turned its head and goggled at Zhang Tie without even blinking its eyes while uttering a voice, "Wuhwuhwuhwuh" as if it wanted to say something to Zhang Tie...

The earlier demon knights would exert their full efforts to struggle when being thrown into the bloody sacrifice furnace; however, they would not gaze at Zhang Tie in this way. Even though this demon knight was pushed forward, it still turned its head and kept gazing at Zhang Tie as if it had many words to say...

Zhang Tie realized that this demon knight might want to say something to him.

Therefore, he raised his hand when Edward pushed the wheelbarrow to the front of the bloody sacrifice furnace.

Edward stopped at once as he looked at Zhang Tie.

"Open its muzzle, I want to know what it wants to say!" Zhang Tie issued the order.

After throwing a glance at that demon knight, Edward stretched out his hand and opened the demon knight's muzzle.

The muzzle looked a bit evil as was like a metal corncob with a base. The base sealed the demon knight's mouth while that metal corncob directly stabbed into the demon knight's mouth, making it unable to bite people.

The moment the muzzle was opened, the demon knight had started to cough heavily while drooling...

"I...I'm...a member of Augulas Clan...you...you cannot kill me..." The demon knight hurriedly revealed its status before wiping off its saliva as if it wanted to "frighten" Zhang Tie...

Zhang Tie replied with a sneer, 'What motherf\*cking Augulas Clan, is there anything to do with me? This guy wants to frighten me with this status? How naive it is!'

After throwing another glance at the demon knight, Zhang Tie waved his hand and said, "Push it in..."

Edward then kept pushing that guy towards the vent of the bloody sacrifice furnace...

"Wait..." The demon knight shrieked at the crucial moment while its face completely twisted. It wanted to seize all the chances to survive on, "I'm useful for you if you keep me alive. Augulas Clan will trade with you for me..."

'What motherf\*cking trade!' Zhang Tie ignored it, so did Edward. When the wheelbarrow became vertical in front of the vent, that guy added, "I know who colludes with us among the Class I Hua officials in Taixia Country..."

Before its life disappeared in the black flame, the demon knight screamed with a terrifying expression...

After hearing the last sentence, Zhang Tie raised his hand to stop Edward.

When a shrewd eye light flashed by, Zhang Tie asked, "What did you say?"

"I know who colludes with us among the Class I Hua officials in Taixia Country..." That demon knight hurriedly added as if he was afraid of losing the last chance to speak.

Zhang Tie had not seen any demon who was afraid of death;

however, it was the instinct of all the intelligent lives by avoiding harms and going after gains so as to survive themselves. This law was even suitable for demons. Previously, Zhang Tie had not seen any demon who was afraid of death; whereas, it didn't mean that no demon was afraid of death. Especially those demons, who had been used to privileges, drinks and beauties since young, was more afraid of death and treasured their lives more. This was the common point between humans and demons.

At the critical moments, the most righteous ones were usually small figures; by contrast, those big figures only thought about surviving themselves. Such events had happened many times in the history of Hua people. A demon was acting it in front of Zhang Tie now. This phenomenon would not disappear in the future...

Zhang Tie rolled his eyes before revealing a sneer, "Your joke is too awkward. Even if someone in the Class I officials of Taixia Country colludes with demons, how do you know such a top secret as a trivial black iron knight? If you want to survive longer by telling a lie in front of me, you have made a mistake. You have one minute to prove that you're more useful to me when you're alive than dead..." After saying that, Zhang Tie told Edward with a glassy-eyed look, "If I don't let you stop 1 minute later, continue to throw this guy into the bloody sacrifice furnace!"

"Yes, Castle Lord!"

Zhang Tie only spared 1 minute for it to survive itself. After swallowing its saliva twice forcefully, the demon knight immediately poured out a long paragraph.

"Augulas Clan is a prince's clan which has a time-honored history. I'm a direct descendant of Augulas Clan. I'm the clan head of Augulas Clan; namely, the famous Augulas Prince is my grandpa. My grandpa participated in discussing the major events of demons as a whole. Before the 3rd holy war broke out, I had already promoted to a black iron knight. One day, I heard my grandpa chatting with an ambassador from the Demon God's

Hieron in the study. That ambassador told my grandpa that someone in the top 9 Hua chancellors in Taixia Country had been cooperating with us. Additionally, that guy had gained 1/4 of the remains of the Supreme Bloody Soul Sutra, the No. 1 treasure in the original Bloody Soul Temple of Hua people in Taixia Country from us. Oh, that guy seemed to be very interested in the Bloody Demon Imitation Method on the remains of the Supreme Bloody Soul Sutra..."

The demon knight poured all of them without a breath. Hearing these words, Zhang Tie looked as glassy-eyed as before; however, his heart had raced.

When the demon knight mentioned the "Bloody Demon Imitation Method", Zhang Tie felt being struck by a lightning bolt.

The one who wanted to kill Zhang Tie by framing him, causing him to escape all the way here had mastered the so-called Bloody Demon Imitation Method.

Zhang Tie fiercely gazed at this demon knight as he wanted to check whether this guy intended to induce him by the "Bloody Demon Imitation Method" on purpose. However, closely after that, Zhang Tie became clear-minded. Because Zhang Tie maintained the look of Gorath at this moment, even after staying in Castle of Black Iron for a few days, this guy could never know that he was Zhang Tie. Therefore, this guy didn't mean to induce him with the "Bloody Demon Imitation Method"...

'Someone of the nine chancellors in Taixia Country has betrayed humans and cooperated with demons? What does he want to do? In that high position, if he wants to surrender to demons, he could easily bring a catastrophe to numerous people.'

'Additionally, since that man has mastered the bloody demon imitation method, he probably is the very person who framed me.'

'One of the nine chancellors of Taixia Country is a lackey of demons. The one who framed me is one of the nine chancellors of

Taixia Country? If it's real...' Zhang Tie couldn't help shivering all over due to excitement, causing goosebumps all over...

Zhang Tie meditated it and almost forgot about time. When time was out, Edward was going to pour that guy into the bloody sacrifice furnace. Watching the pitch-dark flame in the bloody sacrifice furnace, the demon knight howled mournfully and almost cried its heart out.

"Stop!" Zhang Tie uttered and finally saved that guy.

"Do you know who's that chancellor?" Zhang Tie asked with a calm look.

"No, I don't. The ambassador from the Demon God's Hieron didn't mention it. I heard about that by accident..." That guy hurriedly stammered after surviving itself.

"What's your name?"

"Aquino!"

'Aquino, what the f\*ck! It sounds so obscene!'

After thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie's eyes flickered as he threw another glance at that demon knight and told Edward, "Take it away, it's still useful to me. Continue to put it behind bars. Treat it a bit better!"

"Yes, sir!"

Edward replied and directly pushed the demon knight away.

This was a major event. Before Zhang Tie accomplished his bloody sacrifice, he had frowned and asked Heller who was standing a few meters away with a serious look, "Was he telling the truth?"

Heller replied with a solemn look or a glassy-eyed look, "I cannot answer you; neither could I make any judgment about it. Given the space-teleportation equipment which could even match that of the demon general in Waii Subcontinent and many senior items in the

space-teleportation equipment, this guy definitely comes from a major clan among demons. Average black iron demon knights could never carry any space-teleportation equipment; especially on the battlefield. Therefore, its background should be real. When it spoke, although I couldn't judge whether its words were real or not, given the levels of the secretions of its glands and indicators such as heartbeat, heart rate, blood pressure and body temperature, it could pass the test of lie detector which was invented by humans before the Catastrophe. However, lie detector does not always work as it will also become ineffective to people who are used to tell lies and have special psychological quality..."

Heller's answer was completely within Zhang Tie's imagination. Although Heller's words sounded meaningless, Zhang Tie had got the answer.

'Nobody knew that this demon knight would be captured alive by me. Additionally, this demon knight doesn't know that I'm Zhang Tie. Therefore, it's impossible for him to prepare those words. At the life or death situation, if that guy called Aquino could still survive himself by telling such a lie, it's really a talent.'

'Lie detector? Even I don't know about that thing, not to mention the demon knight. Additionally, given its look, I don't think this guy's psychological quality is powerful enough.'

'Therefore, that guy was probably telling the truth.'

'Pitifully, the mind reading skill in the Soul Forbidden Method is ineffective to demon knights; otherwise, I would know whether that guy was telling the truth or not right away.'

Out of instinct, Zhang Tie felt that the demon knight might be useful to him in the future; No matter what, Zhang Tie didn't believe that it could escape away from him in Castle of Black Iron.

"One of nine chancellors in Taixia Country, a shadow knight..." Zhang Tie radiated a shrewd eye light as he felt thrilled unconsciously...



This clue was very important for Zhang Tie. If he could prove that the demon knight didn't tell him a lie, Zhang Tie could be rehabilitated and the truth of the tragedy in Fuhai City would be exposed to the public. After escaping 3 years, Zhang Tie finally got the most valuable information.

However, it was very difficult for him to prove this information. Because none of the nine chancellors in Taixia Country were easily treated. Their overall strength, their powerful clans and their supreme powers were as formidable as overwhelming mountains.

...

"Castle Lord, there's one more, will we continue?" Aziz asked when he received no command from Zhang Tie.

"Continue!"

Zhang Tie took a deep breath as he told Aziz, Agan and Edward to continue.

The last black iron demon knight was glaring at Aquino. Although it couldn't speak, its eye light had killed Aquino many times. If it could move, this demon knight might have long charged at Aquino and broke Aquino's neck by its teeth. However, facing the hell-like flames in the bloody sacrifice furnace, this demon knight also started to struggle...

The struggle was useless. No demon knight could resist in this situation.

The black flame soon devoured this demon knight. Closely after that, the joss's eyes turned bright. According to Zhang Tie's will, it covered Zhang Tie with its red light...

Right in the exceptional warmth brought by the red light, Zhang felt unprecedented vacant while those battle skills of Fire Dragon Sutra automatically evolved in Zhang Tie's mind and grew increasingly smoother...

The bottlenecks of the battle skills leading to higher levels were

broken in a split second...

# Chapter 1013: Returning to Lion Fortress with a Bumper Harvest

---

On July 9th, the 903th year of black iron calendar, over two months since the last collision between two large battle formations, the human's battle fortress and the demon's battle fortress hovering in the core of Tiewei Mountain started to slowly evacuate under the protection of their own large battle formation of over 10,000 knights respectively almost at the same time...

When the two large battle formations started to evacuate, Gorath had just knocked out a battle spirit-level spider demon and thrown it into Castle of Black Iron like teleporting a booty in a messy deep mining trench over 70 miles away from the demon's battle fortress.

The moment the demon battle fortress moved, Zhang Tie had flown off the mining trench which had been deserted for many years and landed on a small hill. After that, he looked up at the floating demon's battle fortress.

Although being over 70 miles away, Zhang Tie could still see clearly the movements of the demon's battle fortress with his flickering lotus-flower eyes through the dense black mist.

Floating in the air, the demon's battle fortress was like a beehive-sized malignant tumor. Being covered with many accesses, it felt pretty chilly while slowly evacuating under the protection of the demon's large battle formation.

'Has the first large-scale battle between human knights and demon knights which broke out since the holy war come to an end?'

In the latest half a month, as the frequency of collisions between knights above earth level of both parties in the core decreased, fewer and fewer land forces appeared. Therefore, Zhang Tie

guessed that the earth-element reserves here might have been fully exploited and both parties were preparing to evacuate.

As expected, both parties left this battlefield almost at the same time today.

As the battle fortress of both parties slowly evacuated, some dependent battle qi smokes and tornadoes also separated from each other and slowly evacuated with their own battle fortress and large battle formation...

Before coming here, Zhang Tie was thinking about getting some earth-element crystals here; however, after arriving here, Zhang Tie knew that it was impossible. Because both humans and demons had dispatched more than one shadow knight to prevent from being raided by the opposite shadow knights even heavenly knights. In this situation, it was unrealistic for an earth knight to do anything in the defensive area arranged by the shadow knights or heavenly knights. Little profit, big risk! Therefore, Zhang Tie gave it up.

However, although he didn't gain any earth-element crystal, he also made a great achievement on the battlefield.

Watching the two battle fortresses leaving, Zhang Tie felt a bit regretful inside.

If this large-scale battle lasted two more months, he would make a bigger achievement.

At this moment, a weird figure appeared in the dark mist over dozens of miles away and moved along a strange route as fast as a lightning bolt. It was flying towards Zhang Tie as if it was searching for something. Zhang Tie turned around while flickering his eyes. Closely after that, he returned to the mining trench rapidly. After a few seconds, a little black beetle flew off towards the human's battle fortress...

After a few minutes, that weird figure finally arrived at the place

where Zhang Tie was just now.

That was an iron-armored shadow demon knight. The moment it arrived, a large area of black mist in the surroundings had rolled away.

There was some fresh blood on the ground of the mining trench, which was left by the spider demon which had just been knocked out by Zhang Tie.

Squatting down in front of the blood, the shadow demon knight rubbed it by its fingers. Closely after that, a shrewd light flashed by its eyes. After checking the surrounding environment, it hatched a soul-chasing butterfly at the fastest speed...

However, the soul-chasing butterfly kept flying around here like a donkey that pulled a millstone.

Two minutes later, the shadow demon knight roared and shattered the soul-chasing butterfly. After that, the shadow demon knight looked around this place before throwing a glance at the human's battle fortress. Closely after that, it flew towards the demon's battle fortress...

The first wrestle between Zhang Tie and a shadow demon knight in the Earth-elements Realm came to an end...

...

In the highest tower of the human's battle fortress, Du Guyi was standing alone like a forceful mountain peak as he was watching the demon's battle fortress silently with rising flames in his eyes...

"In this large-scale battle, we lost 2147 knights in total, which included 2019 black iron knights and 128 earth knights. Two shadow knights were injured. 18% of the total participants were dead. 73% of the late knights were Hua knights from Taixia Country, the rest 27% came from other continents. Additionally, 31 knights have disappeared after the battle, including 2 earth knights. In the rear battlefield of the battle fortress, we lost about

400 Class II garrison knights and over 20,000 auxiliary fighters and logistical personnel..."

A person reported in a muffled voice behind the demon suppression general. When it came to the casualties, the voice turned more muffled.

Hearing those figures, the rising flames in Du Guyi's eyes turned dimmer abruptly. This large-scale battle between human knights and demon knights in the Earth-element Realm was the fiercest collision between humans and demons since the 3rd holy war broke out. Over 1,500 most excellent Hua knights were sacrificed. Such a great loss could not be shouldered by other countries in the world besides Hua. Additionally, in this large-scale battle, Hua people made the greatest sacrifice since the end of the 2nd holy war in order to resist demons. Even though, they had to fight; if not, the demons would grow stronger...

However, this was just a beginning, in some specific stages in the future, large-scale battles between human knights and demon knights would break out too. More and more human knights would die on the battlefields for the well-being of humans.

After hearing those figures, Due Guyi became silent for a minute...

"How about the demons?" The demon suppression general asked in a faintly hoarse voice.

"Demons suffered a greater loss than us. According to the verified military exploits, we've killed 2541 demon knights in total through the face-to-face collision between human's large formation and demon's large formation under your leadership, 157 of them were earth demon knights. Additionally, some demon knights are still missing and unidentifiable. In the rear battlefield, demons broke even with us. And, demons even lost a very rare earth-level shadow demon. Additionally, demons lost about 30,000 ground fighters..." After replying that, the reporter took in a deep breath

before adding, "Lord, we've...tried our best, everyone has exerted their full efforts!"

'Yes, we've exerted our full efforts. After sacrificing so many knights, of course, we've exerted our full efforts!'

Du Guyi let out a sigh inside.

After that, the demon suppression general closed his eyes. After a short while, he opened his eyes once again while the rising flames in his eyes had gone out. His eyes recovered absolutely icy and calm.

"Deliver the name-list of sacrificed knights and fighters on different levels to the Supreme Military Department and tell them to make proper arrangements about the sacrificed knights and fighters according to the relevant regulations!"

"Yes, sir!"

"Let's return to the Lion Fortress!"

After saying the last words, the demon suppression general threw a glance at the direction where the demon's battle fortress was leaving for before going downstairs the highest tower...

...

On July 12th, three floating battle fortresses returned to the Lion Fortress. Those who survived this battle were indulged in ecstasy at once, knights or common ground forces. Since July 13th, the streets in Lion Fortress had been covered with ecstatic fighters while the special odor of watermelon liquor filled the entire Lion Fortress...

According to the official declaration in the Lion Fortress and the entire human world, humans made a big victory while the human fighters accomplished the task perfectly.

Through the large-scale battle between humans and demons in Tiewei Mountain, human knights had destroyed the plan of

demons about occupying all the earth-element crystals, which were an important strategic resource by successfully grabbing almost half of the total earth-element reserves in the core of Tiewei Mountain, namely, over 2 million high-quality earth-element crystals, although at the cost of over 2,000 human knights' lives. Additionally, they killed over 3,000 demon knights and over 50,000 ground demon fighters...

Only some top rulers in the Lion Fortress knew the real figures on the battlefield. In order to pluck up fighters' courage, the propaganda department in the Lion Fortress exaggerated the military exploits purposefully and depicted the large-scale battle in Tiewei Mountain as a great victory of humans in the Earth-elements Realm. According to the propaganda, the first fiercest collision between the most powerful human force and the most powerful demon force ended up with humans' victory.

Such a propaganda was very inspiring and could strengthen humans' belief in resisting demons. Even those human fighters who were in subcontinents and continents instead of the Earth-elements Realm were greatly inspired by the news about the large-scale battle in Tiewei Mountain after clicking the eye-catching title on the home page of the forum in the Mountain of Brightness as long as they had knights' crystal plates.

The battlefield of propaganda was also the most important branch of the battlefield in the holy war. Even before the Catastrophe, the importance of propaganda had been well known by human decision-makers such as generals. To a certain extent, all the battles would be determined on the battle will, decisiveness and morale in the end. The party whose battle will weakened first would collapse first on the battlefield...

When the entire Lion Fortress was in a carnival, Zhang Tie, after leaving the Lion Fortress over 3 years, returned to the Lion Fortress on July 14th...



# Chapter 1014: Re-encountering Comrades-in-Arms

---

After over 3 years, the Lion Fortress remained unchanged. If not the three floating battle fortresses which seemed to carry the bloody qi of battle, perhaps nobody could find that many human knights in the Lion Fortress had just experienced a large-scale battle with demon knights.

Zhang Tie recovered Cui Li's look and entered the Lion Fortress smoothly and frankly.

Although those at the gate the Lion Fortress were still Hua knights, they looked strange. None of them were familiar with Zhang Tie. Given their solemn young looks and uniforms, Zhang Tie knew that they had just come to the Earth-elements Realm.

Those who had just come to the Earth-elements Realm acted like newbies in troops as they would do everything strictly according to the regulations.

Over 3 years, especially after experiencing many combats and killing about a half dozen of earth demon knights, Zhang Tie unconsciously felt like a distant and experienced veteran.

"That one looks like an earth knight."

"Ahh, he's too young..."

"He might be a powerhouse from the top seven clans in Taixia Country!"

"This man has a sharp killing qi which couldn't be formed without rich battle experience. Perhaps, he has just come back from Tiewei Mountain..."

"Ahh, black iron knight, impossible!"

Zhang Tie swiped his identity card on the machine at the gate of Lion Fortress before entering it.

Zhang Tie entered the Lion Fortress with the black iron identity card that he used to access the knight's tower previously. At the sight of Zhang Tie's identity card, those knights at the gate were not sure whether Zhang Tie was a black iron knight or an earth knight.

...

The entire fortress was filled with the special odor of watermelon liquor.

On the streets of the Lion Fortress, Zhang Tie saw many drunk knights and auxiliary fighters lying on the roadsides.

Zhang Tie didn't ridicule these people because he knew what those people who survived back from the battlefield were thinking about. After being extremely depressed and intense, they had to release their pressure by carnival and liquor.

The watermelon liquor didn't have a high degree; however, when Zhang Tie arrived at the Lion Fortress for the first time, he had known that some knights made a set of simple distillation equipment, making the degree of watermelon liquor close to that of alcohol, which would taste cool for many knights.

In the Lion Fortress, watermelon liquor being brewed with grains was also an important resource, which was forbidden being "squandered". Except for this situation, after the large-scale battle, the odor of watermelon liquor filling the Lion Fortress indicated that the regulations in Lion Fortress were very human-friendly.

Besides the sharp difference in overall strength, most of the knights would also feel happy, angry, sad or joyous like commoners.

The entire Lion Fortress was in a carnival.

Some people were kissing while some burst out into laughter after being drunk...

At this moment, pleasure and sadness were as dense as the black

mist in the first abyss. Even Zhang Tie was a bit affected by the ecstatic atmosphere across the Lion Fortress.

Although Zhang Tie didn't know about the concrete casualties of both parties after this large-scale battle, he understood that the casualties of knights on both parties were definitely large after such a fierce collision between the top forces of humans and demons after fighting as a guerrilla in the battlefield for such a long time. Each party must have suffered a great loss. As the large-scale battle had just come to an end, both parties needed to make a conclusion and recover their forces. Therefore, humans and demons would recover their statement state in the Earth-elements Realm and the first abyss; a large-scale battle would not break out in a couple of years. Both parties would transfer their main battlefield to the earth's surface.

Therefore, Zhang Tie was ready for returning to the earth's surface.

However, before returning to the earth's surface, he needed to return to the Lion Fortress to submit his military exploits.

The moment he thought about returning to the earth's surface, Zhang Tie remembered the news that he heard from demons on the battlefield a few months ago—Emperor Xuanyuan was missing!

Zhang Tie wanted to go to the Tower of Brilliance first.

After leaving Black Armor Battlefortress a few months, it was unreasonable if he didn't make any military exploit. Therefore, Zhang Tie prepared a military exploit for Cui Li—an ox-headed earth demon's horn and the hardest protective scale on the chest of a black iron demon knight.

Actually, Zhang Tie had more certificates for killing earth demon knights in Castle of Black Iron. However, if he presented them all, he would push Cui Li to the teeth of the storm. That would not be good for Cui Li. As Cui Li had killed an earth shadow demon, if he

killed one more earth demon knight and one black iron knight, he would also win many earth knights' respect in the Lion Fortress and lay his solid foundation as a powerhouse among the human earth knights. Going beyond the limit was as bad as falling short.

The moment Zhang Tie turned a corner, he had caught sight of two familiar people.

Bolam and Cecilia were kissing beside a parterre on the roadside. Therefore, they didn't see Cui Li who had just turned to this street.

Zhang Tie was about 100 m away from them. As there were many knights in the Lion Fortress, the two people didn't notice this tough man at the corner.

Bolam had lost one arm; therefore, he could only put the remaining arm around Cecilia's waist when he kissed Cecilia.

When their lips separated, Bolam directly knelt down in front of the female knight on one knee as he pulled Cecilia's hand and watched this strong and beautiful female knight with a pair of soulful eyes, "Marry me, although I only have one hand, as long as I'm alive, I will protect you with this hand till the end of the world. Unless I die in front of you, nobody could harm you."

Watching this man who used to be silent and protected her at the risk of his life at the critical moment, Cecilia burst into tears as she nodded silently.

At the sight of this scene, those who were drinking on the roadside couldn't stand cheering up.

Sudden wealth might cause an old couple to divorce; however, after experiencing a life or death situation, two people who had not fallen in love with each other might determine to get married.

With a bottle of liquor in hand, Filton wobbly walked out of the pub on the roadside as he pointed at Bolam who had a big smile and said, "You...this guy...I have...long discovered that you liked Cecilia, right..."

Bolam who used to be silent replied with a simple and honest smile. Cecilia threw a glance at him before firmly holding his only hand.

Filton stomped to the ground and thumped his chest before sighing with emotions, "You've picked the flower of knights in Francia Empire, what will our knights from Western Continent do?"

"There's regeneration medicament in Lion Fortress; as long as we serve here a few more years and accumulate enough meritorious points, we will cure your wound for sure!" Cecilia said as she looked Bolam in his eyes. Although being a female knight, Cecilia was very decisive.

The moment Bolam wanted to say something, he widely opened his eyes at once. Because he saw a bald-headed tough man walking towards them with a sincere smile.

"Cui Li..." Bolam cried.

Filton and Cecilia turned around and saw Zhang Tie at the same time.

"Ahh, it's really Cui Li..." Cecilia became startled.

Filton who looked a bit drunk just now directly rushed towards Zhang Tie like a lightning bolt.

"Hahahaha..." Zhang Tie burst out into laughter as he gave a bearhug to Filton, "Filton, long time no see!"

Filton was very thrilled as he forcefully thumped Zhang Tie's chest and shoulders and uttered disorderly, "When we arrived at the Lion Fortress, we heard that you were alive. Oh my god! They say you've killed a very tricky earth-level shadow demon knight and gained the most brilliant reward in Tiewei Mountain Theater of Operations...That's unbelievable. You've promoted to an earth knight?"

"Yes, I survived myself in the hieron ruins by chance.

Additionally, I promoted to an earth knight!" Zhang Tie also patted Filton's shoulders as he opened his arms and gave a bearhug to Bolam who only had his left hand. After that, he separated from Bolam and faintly frowned at the sight of his missing right arm, "Bolam, what's wrong with your right arm?"

"When the human's large formation collided the demon's large formation in Tiewei Mountain, we broke off from the human's large formation. At the crucial moment, in order to save Cecilia, Bolam's right arm was shattered by the demon's large formation in a split second..." Filton who was a bit talkative replied on behalf of Bolam, "However, Bolam gained the flower of knights in Francia Empire as a compensation..."

After hearing Filton's explanation, Zhang Tie knew that Filton, Bolam and Cecilia were in the human's large formation when the collision occurred and he was trapping demon knights. They were really fortunate to survive that collision. However, Bolam had paid a lot in order to survive himself and Cecilia.

"It's my pleasure to see you. It's the best news that you could come back alive since we returned to the Lion Fortress!"

Compared to Filton and Bolam, Cecilia acted a bit more reserved in front of Zhang Tie...

# Chapter 1015: A Bright Future and A Good Reputation

---

After departing for 3 years, the four people felt like having a lot of words to say; however, they didn't know from where to start.

As for the fact that Zhang Tie had promoted to an earth knight, although Filton, Cecilia and Bolam felt amazed, they thought it was reasonable. Because when Zhang Tie stayed with them in the hieron ruins, his performance was far better than them. Even Mountain Lifting Hermit praised him. Additionally, Zhang Tie had killed Old Monster Qi in the hieron ruins. Although only Zhang Tie himself knew the reason, it was not too overwhelming for a black iron knight who had killed an earth knight to promote to an earth knight.

Zhang Tie explained to them what he had experienced in the hieron ruins which shocked them too much.

After a short dialogue, Zhang Tie suddenly asked, "Oh, how about other guys in our team since they left the hieron ruins?"

"Mountain Lifting Hermit has returned to the earth's surface. It's said that he needed rehabilitation. As he has been severely wounded, he would barely recover in a short period. The couple of Lu Zhongming and Lin Huanxi gained a silver secret item in the Weapons Mountain. They might have returned to the earth's surface. As for the others, after coming back to the Lion Fortress, they all minded their own businesses and barely connected with us. Some of them have returned to the earth's surface, some are still wandering in the Earth-elements Realm. Oh, do you remember Yang Zhenjun, the elder of Yang Clan in Military Province in Taixia Country?" Filton's voice suddenly turned depressed as he revealed a sad look, "Half a year ago, in the large-scale collision between human knights and demon knights in Tiewei Mountain, he was killed. After breaking off from the

human's large formation, he was covered by the dense strikes of the demon's large formation, leaving nothing at all..."

This Yang elder didn't leave a deep impression in Zhang Tie's mind. In Zhang Tie's memory, Yang Zhenjun looked a bit old and was always solemn; however, he did things very carefully. Zhang Tie just had a nodding acquaintance with him. Yang Zhenjun also intended to find a silver secret item for Yang Clan in the heiron ruins so as to increase Yang Clan's overall strength.

After hearing that a familiar person was killed in Tiewei Mountain, Zhang Tie felt sad inside too.

This Yang elder might have not gained anything in the hieron's ruins; however, he sacrificed in the later large-scale battle between human knights and demon knights in Tiewei Mountain.

Zhang Tie knew that clans which only had a few cities like Yang clan might merely have a couple of knights. After losing one black iron elder, their clan's overall battle strength would be weakened greatly, which definitely impacted the destiny of their clan. The sacrifice of Taixia Country in the holy war was composed of the sacrifices of thousands of clans like the Yang clan. At this moment, although the Lion Fortress was celebrating the victory of the large-scale battle between humans and demons in the core of Tiewei Mountain, many clans which had sacrificed their clan knights were pretty sad on the earth's surface.

Finding that Zhang Tie was losing his smile, Filton shifted to another topic, "Oh, where are you going?"

"I'm going to the tower of brilliance to submit my military exploits!" Zhang Tie replied as he threw a glance at Bolam's broken right arm silently.

"After you submit your military exploits in the tower of brilliance, let's meet in the knight's bar. After experiencing this large-scale battle, we three are ready to leave Lion Fortress for the Western Continent. We've received the remote-sensing news from



the Grims Republic yesterday. After confirming that I'm still alive, the national defense department summoned me back. Our republic is preparing to establish some new corps. I will be responsible for a new corps. In the following few years, the warfare in the Western Continent might be very intense. A batch of knights with rich battle experience was required to stabilize the battle situation over there!"

Many knights came to Earth-elements Realm and Lion Fortress from the Western Continent out of specific purposes. Common fighters in the Western Continent might not have a chance to see the most brutal combats between humans and demons. However, as knights who ruled the entire corps, they had to have a clear understanding about that. The moment the large-scale battle in Tiewei Mountain came to an end, these knights who survived the battle would become bestsellers. In the next a few years, the battle situation on the earth's surface might be intense. Therefore, a lot of knights were recruited back from the Earth-elements Realm to the Western Continent and other subcontinents. At the same time, another batch of newbies would arrive at the Earth-elements Realm for training. Therefore, the Lion Fortress served as the frontline of humans in the Earth-elements Realm and the furnace for training human knights.

The holy war had just broken out; it would last long.

When Filton told Zhang Tie, Cecilia suddenly pressed her hand onto her finger ring as her face slowly turned weird even a bit bad.

"What's wrong?" Bolam asked her out of concern.

"I've just received a remote-sensing news from my clan. My father wants me to return to Francia Empire as soon as possible..." Cecilia answered bitterly as she threw an embarrassed glance at Bolam, "If we go back now, what about your hand..."

Bolam revealed a smile, "Never mind, I will go back with you. Hopefully, your clan doesn't blame you for bringing back a

disabled knight. As for the regeneration medicament, let's talk about it later..."

"I'm preparing for returning to the earth's surface too. Now that we all prepare to leave, let's go back and prepare our belongings first. See you later!" Zhang Tie said.

"Sure!"

Zhang Tie patted Bolam's right shoulder as he nodded and accelerated towards the tower of brilliance.

Until Zhang Tie walked away did Filton muttered as he watched Zhang Tie's back, "I've not imagined that... Cui Li...has promoted to an earth knight. If he was in the Western Continent, he had been a commander of a theater of operations and we would have to follow his order..."

"Even in Taixia Country, an earth knight could also become a provincial governor. It's said that he was rewarded with a large area of land..."

"Bolam, are you jealous?" Filton watched Bolam in a joking manner.

Bolam shook his head solemnly, "No, I might be jealous of others; however, Cui Li is a real noble knight. I cannot envy a person with noble morality. I just feel happy for him and treat him as my role model!"

...

The tower of brilliance was very boisterous. After the large-scale battle in Tiewei Mountain came to an end, a lot of Class II garrison knights returned to the Lion Fortress, making the lobby of the tower of brilliance bustling.

Being different than the first time when he came here, this time, the moment Zhang Tie entered the lobby of the tower of brilliance, he had been recognized by a lot of knights whom he had met in the Black Armor Battlefortress.

"Look, he's Cui Li..."

"Did he kill that earth shadow demon?"

"Right!"

"Powerhouse..."

"Is this Cui Li the extremely righteous one in Yongzhou Province?"

"Right..."

"Over 700 square miles' bounty land and 10 cities. What a great reward! With such rich resources, an earth knight would be able to establish a powerful clan immediately!"

Besides various eye lights, Zhang Tie heard many whispers.

Some eye lights were awe-stricken, some were admirable; of course, some were jealous too. What a great reward! As this great reward was selected from a lot of blocks, especially in Taixia Country, of course, some would envy him.

At the sight of that familiar old man, Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he walked over there.

Hearing those discussions, Zhang Tie felt happy inside. He knew that he had reached his target. Cui Li, at this moment, was not a trivial figure in the Lion Fortress anymore. After being famous across the Lion Fortress, he would have a very good reputation among all the human knights. The good reputation was what he demanded urgently.

"I've not imagined that you could come back!" That old man looked at Zhang Tie from head to toe as he continued, "I thought you've been to other places away from the periphery of Tiewei Mountain after leaving Black Armor Battlefortress, have you made any military exploit?"

"As the others are fighting demons in the frontline, how could I leave?" Zhang Tie replied with a smile as he teleported his identity

plate, a pair of horns of an ox-headed demon and a protective scale of an iron-armored black iron demon from Castle of Black Iron onto the counter.

Watching Zhang Tie's military exploits, many onlookers took in a deep breath as they had not imagined that Cui Li could kill another earth demon knight, plus that earth shadow demon, Cui Li had killed two earth demon knights in the large-scale battle in Tiewei Mountain.

'Powerhouse! What a powerhosue!'

Those people who were looking at Zhang Tie with jealous eye lights just now felt their hearts racing at once as they immediately changed their eye lights. Those with a good reputation would definitely not be average. Cui Li definitely killed that earth shadow demon by his real battle strength and intelligence.

"Ahh, another earth demon knight..."

At the sight of the color of the pair of ox horns which indicated the identity of the ox-headed demon, the old man immediately charged at it. After looking over it in his hand and picking that protective scale of an iron-armored demon, the old man constantly nodded and praised, "Not bad, not bad, two more demons, I find that I like you more and more..."

"Don't, this Cui has a normal gender orientation. If you were a watery young sister, I could consider it!"

"Hahaha..." The old man burst out into laughter as he said, "You can exchange for more meritorious points this time. What else do you want? If you want something, I can give you a discount..."

"I remember that the meritorious points for killing an earth knight could be exchanged for one vial of regeneration medicament?"

"That's true. Do you want one?"

"Give me one!" Zhang Tie smiled.

"It's a good choice by preparing a vial of regeneration medicament in case of accidents!" The old man commented. After that, he told Zhang Tie to wait for a short while before walking into the room behind him. After half a minute, he came out with a crystal case, "Here you go, this is the regeneration medicament. It's very precious. When you don't use it, you'd better seal it in the crystal case. If not, its effect would decline sharply..."

"I see, thanks!" Zhang Tie put away the crystal case in his portable space-teleportation equipment. The moment he wanted to leave, he heard a louder uproar. Zhang Tie turned around and saw Feng Yexiao entered the lobby with his team members of Taiyi Fantasy Sect. As a shadow knight, Feng Yexiao had a powerful qi field. The moment he entered, he had started to look around with his sharp eyes. As a result, all the knights gave a way to Feng Yexiao automatically...

"Brat, hurry up, go..." The old man behind him warned Zhang Tie in a low voice rapidly...

After hearing this old man's warning, Zhang Tie became faintly stunned, 'Hurry up? Go? Why?'

Although Feng Yexiao had a very powerful qi field, Zhang Tie only had Lan Yunxi in his eyes.

Lan Yunxi was walking in the team quietly as brilliant as before. Besides Zhang Tie, many knights in the lobby were looking Lan Yunxi up and down silently.

As many people were looking at Lan Yunxi, Zhang Tie's movement became less eye-catching.

When Zhang Tie gazed at Lan Yunxi for a few seconds, Feng Yexiao immediately moved his sharp eye light onto Zhang Tie...

# Chapter 1016: Trouble

---

Cui Li's look was his signboard. A tower-like figure, a bald head which was full of killing qi, plus the overall strength of an earth knight, very few earth Hua knights in the Lion Fortress could be as distinctive as Cui Li.

Cui Li had been well-known in the Black Armor Battlefortress. Even though those who had not seen him before would be able to guess that he was Cui Li after listening to others' description about his look.

Moreover, the evidence that Cui Li killed another earth demon knight was right on the counter in front of him.

When Feng Yexiao was gazing at him, Zhang Tie felt that Feng Yexiao was not kind to him; however, he didn't understand why Feng Yexiao disliked him.

'Does he know the love affairs between Lan Yunxi and me? No way! Even Lan Yunxi does not know that I'm Zhang Tie. How could he know that?'

When Zhang Tie was making blind and disorderly conjectures, he felt that it was unnecessary for him to collide with Taiyi Fantasy Sect. 'No matter how Feng Yexiao glared at me, I will not lose a hair. Whatever!'

'Is this old guy jealous about my handsome look? Hahahahaha...'

When Zhang Tie thought about this, he glanced at Lan Yunxi for a few times before curling his lip and responding to the old guy behind the counter. After that, he put away the regeneration medicament into his portable space-teleportation equipment and was going to leave the lobby of the tower of brilliance.

At the sight of Zhang Tie's portable space-teleportation equipment, Feng Yexiao's eyes flickered once again.

"Feng Yexiao is here to kill that earth-level shadow demon knight

so as to increase his reputation in Taiyi Fantasy Sect. You grabbed his reputation; therefore, you need to be careful with him. This guy is very narrow-minded..."

A sound drifted into Zhang Tie's ears.

Zhang Tie's doubt cleared right away.

Feng Yexiao walked towards Zhang Tie, followed by his team members of Taiyi Fantasy Sect while Zhang Tie walked towards him frankly. If there was no accident, Zhang Tie and Feng Cangwu would just pass by each other instead of colliding with each other like passing a single-plank bridge in the middle of the lobby of tower of brilliance.

However, the accident happened.

When Zhang Tie was a few meters away from the team of Taiyi Fantasy Sect, Feng Yexiao ahead of the team suddenly stopped as he slightly raised his head and asked Zhang Tie with an arrogant look, "You're Cui Li?"

The moment Feng Yexiao stopped, all the other team members stopped too. After hearing Feng Yexiao's question, the entire lobby of the tower of brilliance became quiet.

Both Taiyi Fantasy Sect and Cui Li were tricky. Taiyi Fantasy Sect was deep-rooted in Taixia Country while Cui Li was well-known in Black Armor Battlefortress due to his great military exploits. Therefore, when the elder of Taiyi Fantasy Sect uttered and both parties stopped, they had felt that something was going to happen.

Zhang Tie faintly frowned. Although he didn't like to stir up trouble, he was never afraid of trouble. The moment Feng Yexiao uttered, Zhang Tie had felt that Feng Yexiao was not kind and was going to find him trouble.

'F\*ck.' Zhang Tie swore inside.

"Hahahaha, yup, I'm the tall, handsome, extremely righteous and

fortunate Cui Li from Yongzhou Province who has killed the earth-level shadow demon knight. Alas, the moment one became famous, he would have familiar ones no matter where he was!" Zhang Tie revealed a smile although he swore inside. At the same time, he directly waved his arm in the air and took a pen out of his portable space-teleportation equipment, "Old man, I'm in a hurry. If you want my signature, just tell me where to sign it. I will satisfy you today!"

"Pufft..." The old man who was drinking tea water and going to look on spurted out a mouthful of tea water and started to cough heavily when he heard Zhang Tie's words.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, all the knights in the tower of brilliance who paid attention to them looked weird. Many people's faces turned red at once. Some of them burst out into laughter although they hurriedly bore it.

'It's not wise for me to offend Taiyi Fantasy Sect at this moment.'

Feng Yexiao's poker face turned black immediately while the blood vessels on his two temples started to jump. After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Feng Yexiao was almost driven mad.

Previously, Feng Yexiao disliked Zhang Tie. Now, he started to hate Zhang Tie.

"B\*stard, I'm Feng Yexiao from Taiyi Fantasy Sect!" Feng Yexiao controlled his fury as he told Zhang Tie about his background.

"Ahh, you don't want my signature!" Zhang Tie stroked his bald head as he waved his hand and put away his pen. After that, his face turned a bit solemn. Gazing at Feng Yexiao, Zhang Tie said, "I have not stirred up, neither did I dig your ancestral tombs nor sleep with your wife. I've not owed you money either. Why do you swear me? Didn't your master teach you the basic manners?"

"Audacious!" A young knight behind Feng Yexiao jumped out immediately before Feng Yexiao replied as he pointed at Zhang Tie



seriously, "How dare you treat Elder Feng so rudely? Hurry up, apologize to Elder Feng!"

"Pah..." Zhang Tie directly spat towards him as he pointed at that young knight with his turnip-sized finger in a disdainful look, "This old guy called Feng Yexiao swore me; why do I apologize to him? Do you think I'm afraid of you because you outnumber me? This f\*ther could even make a massacre in the demon's large formation of over 10,000 knights in Tiewei Mountain, do you think I'm afraid of you?"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, the disciples of Taiyi Fantasy Sect changed their faces at once. Some of them had put their hands on the handles of their swords and sabers; except for Lan Yunxi who just watched Zhang Tie quietly with a faintly absent-minded look.

Cui Li reminded Lan Yunxi of Zhang Tie unconsciously.

Zhang Tie excelled at such a zig-zagging diction. However, Lan Yunxi was not sure whether Cui Li was really foolish or not. Of course, Lan Yunxi could not imagine that Cui Li was Zhang Tie.

At the sight of the faintly absent-minded look of Lan Yunxi, Zhang Tie's heart raced as he sighed with emotions inside, 'Women's intuition is too terrifying.'

Feng Yexiao sneered as he raised his arm to calm down his disciples of Taiyi Fantasy Sect before saying, "So what? Do you want to pass by me pretending to be an idiot? That's too naive. This old man has lived over 200 years. I've seen all sorts of people. If you don't tell me about the relationship between you and Zhao Yuan the Alchemist Monster, you cannot leave. If there's really any relationship between you and Zhao Yuan, I will not only swear you. This day next year will be your anniversary of death."

The last words of Zhao Yuan were full of killing intent.

The name Zhao Yuan the Alchemist Monster might be a magic.

The moment Feng Yexiao said it, the uproar and weird atmosphere in the lobby of the tower of brilliance was frozen at once.

Everybody in the world knew the conflict between Zhao Yuan the Alchemist Monster and Taiyi Fantasy Sect.

"Zhao Yuan the Alchemist Monster?" Zhang Tie burst out into laughter, "Are you the motherf\*cking framing me? How could you fabricate such a lie? You the old b\*stard called Feng Yexiao, right? Did you come to the Tiewei Mountain to kill that earth-level shadow demon knight for glory? Pitifully, that earth-level shadow demon knight has been killed by this Cui. This Cui has received the reward. Do you envy me for grabbing your glory or having your daughter? Why don't you the motherf\*cker go fight a shadow demon knight? Are you not feeling ashamed by framing this Cui and pretending like you're something?"

"I was told that you had promoted to an earth knight from a black iron knight only after staying with an earth demon knight in the hieron ruins a couple of years. Only Zhao Yuan the Alchemist Monster could absorb others' chakras and promote to a higher level in a short period in his sorcery purgatory samsara. If you don't have learned Zhao Yuan's sorcery, how could you promote to an earth knight in only a couple of years?" Feng Yexiao said with a strong killing intent as he approached Zhang Tie and gazed at Zhang Tie's face like an eagle or wolf who was hunting a prey.

A storm seemed to blow over the lobby of tower of brilliance. The other knights who didn't know Zhao Yuan the Alchemist Monster were shocked by Feng Yexiao's words too, 'Yea, how could Cui Li promote to an earth knight only after staying in the hieron ruins for a couple of years? Did he really learn the secret method of Zhao Yuan the Alchemist Monster?'

None of them had imagined that they could hear such an amazing news and experience such a wonderful scene in the lobby of tower of brilliance. Therefore, they just held their breath and watched the drama.

"It turns out that Taiyi Fantasy Sect which ranks first among the top seven clans in Taixia Country are as narrow-minded as frogs in the well!" Zhang Tie watched Feng Yexiao with a disdainful look as he crossed his arms, "There're so many secret methods in the world. You know that Zhao Yuan the Alchemist Monster could absorb others' chakras in purgatory samsara and promote to a higher level rapidly. However, do you really think that it's the only secret method in the world that could help people promote to a higher level in a short period? Who could fully tap the secrets and potentials of human bodies? Due to good lucks, I promoted to an earth knight in a few years. But it has nothing to do with you. Where's the source of the purgatory samsara? In the far-ancient times, there were thousands of cultivation methods. Do you think that you know all of them?" Zhang Tie asked in reply.

Zhang Tie's words shocked all the onlookers like a spring thunder that they saw sparkles flying in front of their eyes.

All the knights at present had a question inside, 'Did...Cui Li from Yongzhou Province really learn a secret method that could match the Alchemist Monster's Purgatory Samsara Method by accident?'

# Chapter 1017: Winning a Bet

---

"You mean you promoted to an earth knight in a couple of years by a secret method?"

"Of course, besides me, nobody else in the world could master that secret method!"

"What's that secret method?"

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter, "My secret method has nothing to do with your Taiyi Fantasy Sect. Although Taiyi Fantasy Sect is powerful, it has nothing to do with me, either. I will not tell you about that, so what?"

Feng Yexiao replied with a sneer in an extremely domineering manner as if he had seen through everything, "Do you think that the secret methods that could help knights rapidly form chakras are as many as white cabbages? Taiyi Fantasy Sect was the head of the top seven clans in Taixia Country. We have billions of books, including various classics, many of which were the only one from far-ancient times and couldn't even be found in Xuanyuan Hill. Besides, our sect converges elites and powerhouses from all walks of life. Thousands of knights, elders and savants are spending their whole lives in studying classics. I've joined Taiyi Fantasy Sect for so many years, besides the purgatory samsara of Zhao Yuan the Alchemist Monster, I've not heard any other secret method that could help knights promote to a higher level in a couple of years. Besides Taiyi Fantasy Sect, the other clans in Taixia Country had not heard about it either. Do you think that you could get rid of the relation between you and Zhao Yuan only by a few words? You're too naive!"

Zhang Tie's heart pounded, 'These high-level knights are really tricky. Soon after I promoted to an earth knight, Guan Qianchong and this old guy in front had guessed the relation between Zhao Yuan the Alchemist Monster and I. If not having trump cards, I

really could not pass them.'

However, the more confirmative Feng Yexiao was, the happier Zhang Tie was. Because he planned to cheat this old guy in the same method that he used to cheat Guan Qianchong.

'This old guy is just coming on to me.'

Although Zhang Tie felt thrilled inside, he still looked outraged and disdainful. He just spoke louder unconsciously so that everyone at present could hear it clearly, "You're narrow-minded. What a frog could see in the well is nothing different than what one million of frogs could see in the same well. How dare you say that one million frogs could see the whole world? Hahahaha, Taiyi Fantasy Sect is just so so..." When Zhang Tie spoke, a familiar qi had come to the outside of the tower of brilliance. Zhang Tie was afraid that someone had noticed the mogul in the Lion Fortress when he confronted with this elder of Taiyi Fantasy Sect. Feeling the familiar qi, Zhang Tie became more decisive, "This Cui has to drink with my friends, I don't have time to argue with you. I will lose hundreds of thousands of gold coins per second. Given that you're elder than me, I will not care about your rude words..."

As Zhang Tie said, he directly walked towards the gate.

"Do you think that you could leave so easily?" Feng Yexiao narrowed his eyes like watching a mantis which wanted to stop a vehicle by its arm.

"I will try." Zhang Tie's face turned solemn at once as he strode one more step forward.

Feng Yexiao stretched out one arm and stopped Zhang Tie like an overwhelming mountain.

Zhang Tie directly collided against Feng Yexiao's arm.

In the next second, the entire tower of brilliance was shocked. Those onlookers didn't even see clearly what happened as they just felt the lobby turned darker at once while an extremely huge

virtual image of fire dragon appeared in the lobby. With a powerful qi of earth knight, it covered everyone at present...

Being covered by the virtual image of the fire dragon, all the common black iron knights felt their hearts pounding.

Earth knights were absolutely overwhelming in front of black iron knights in realms.

When the fire dragon roared, it flapped its wings, causing a powerful battle qi full of battle will to sweep over...

The huge virtual image of fire dragon filled the entire tower of brilliance. Its eyes were like two suns. The moment it closed its eyes, the lobby would be in the dark; the moment it opened its eyes, the lobby would be filled with a powerful battle qi that could tear off everything.

When the lobby turned bright and dark alternatively, thunders drifted from Zhang Tie and Feng Yexiao constantly. Most of the people at present could not see clearly their movements until it came to an end...

The light in the lobby recovered to normal at once.

Zhang Tie had moved a few steps back with full of battle will. The huge and magnificent virtual image of fire dragon as long as hundreds of meters were above his head. The fire dragon was gazing at Feng Yexiao in a brutal manner as if it was going to dive and charge at Feng Yexiao at any time...

Careful ones had found that Feng Yexiao had moved one step back with a great dumbfounded look.

Those disciples of Taiyi Fantasy Sect behind Feng Yexiao had already pulled out their weapons and pointed at Zhang Tie in some 3-in-1 battle formations.

One more person appeared between Feng Yexiao and Zhang Tie. Although being urbane, this one's qi was not weaker than that of Feng Yexiao. He even had a greater killing intent.

He was Guan Qianchong, the High Chancellor of Black Armor Army.

Besides Zhang Tie and Feng Yexiao, none of the others in the lobby discovered how did Guan Qianchong enter and stop Cui Li and Feng Yexiao.

"Brother Feng, don't you know the regulation in Lion Fortress? Why do you fight a junior here?" Guan Qianchong asked in a calm look; however, he was blaming Feng Yexiao faintly.

After hearing Guan Qianchong's question, Feng Yexiao revealed a faint smile as he restrained his look, "This old man has found that someone might be related to the Alchemist Monster. I stopped him and asked him to clarify it to me in case that he escaped."

"Who's that? Does Brother Feng doubt that Cui Li is related to the Alchemist Monster?" Guan Qianchong asked with a dumbfounded look purposefully, "But why? Cui Li has killed the earth-level shadow demon knight and made great military exploits in Tiewei Mountain, how come he's related to the Alchemist Monster?"

"If he's not related to the Alchemist Monster, how could he promote to an earth knight in a couple of years? I doubt that Cui Li is the apprentice of Zhao Yuan the Alchemist Monster!" Feng Yexiao looked at Zhang Tie as he firmly believed in his judgment.

'F\*ck, he hit it.'

Zhang Tie was really shocked by this old guy's precise judgment. However, only Zhang Tie himself knew the truth. 'At this moment, even if Zhao Yuan the Alchemist Monster was here, he would not be sure that I'm his apprentice. Therefore, I don't care what others think about me.'

Guan Qianchong turned around and blinked his eyes towards Cui Li. Apparently, he looked solemn, "Cui Li, what do you explain the Elder Feng?"

Watching Guan Qianchong blinking his eyes towards him, Zhang

Tie almost burst out into laughter, 'Although others don't know about my ability, Guan Qianchong who has suffered a loss from me knows how I could promote to an earth knight in such a short period. If Guan Qianchong doesn't explain to Feng Yexiao at this moment, he's sparing a chance for me to make another bet with Feng Yexiao!'

'It seems that these high-rank military officers in Lion Fortress dislike Guan Qianchong. Guan Qianchong must want to have me punish this old guy severely. What am I waiting for?'

Although being very thrilled inside, Zhang Tie still explained what happened just now to Guan Qianchong in an outraged way. Closely after that, he watched Feng Yexiao with a furious look, "How can you say that what you doubt is real? If one day you doubt that Emperor Xuanyuan is a demon, will Emperor Xuanyuan transfer the throne to someone of Taiyi Fantasy Sect?"

"Taiyi Fantasy Sect has a deep animosity with the Alchemist Monster. He killed the deputy head of Taiyi Fantasy Sect. It's of great significance, which could not be bamboozled easily!" Feng Yexiao gazed at Zhang Tie before revealing a sneer once again, "Even though you survived today, you could not survive tomorrow!"

"Hahaha, what a domineering Taiyi Fantasy Sect..." Zhang Tie glared at Feng Yexiao, "Now that you say there's no other secret method in the world that could help people promote to an earth knight rapidly, dare you to bet with me?"

"How?" Feng Yexiao replied with a sneer as he didn't believe that a lonely earth knight like Zhang Tie could have any marvelous secret method. 'Taiyi Fantasy Sect has spent hundreds of years in searching for it in vain; how could a common earth knight have one so easily? Is that secret method as popular as white cabbage?'

"Gamble our lives!" Zhang Tie said generously, "If I could prove that there's another secret method that could help knights form



my water chakra rapidly, I would be the winner and you should commit suicide in front of me so as to verify that I'm innocent. If not, I would chop off my head. Dare you bet with me? Dare Taiyi Fantasy Sect bet with me?" Zhang Tie's voice sounded aggressive.

Feng Yexiao revealed a shrewd eye light. Even though he hesitated a bit inside, under the eyes of the onlookers, he could only accept Zhang Tie's proposal; otherwise, Taiyi Fantasy Sect would be mocked by the rest of the world and Feng Yexiao would be a rustic who only seek for oral benefits. What happened inside the Lion Fortress would spread over all the human countries in the blink of an eye. Neither could Feng Yexiao nor Taiyi Fantasy risk it.

Watching Zhang Tie's excited look, Feng Yexiao was more confirmative that Zhang Tie was afraid of being found out. It was absolutely a small trick in his eyes.

"Why not?" Feng Yexiao answered Zhang Tie at once.

"The holy war has broken out. As knights in Taixia Country, you should cooperate with each other to fight demons. One of you is an earth knight who has made great military exploits, the other is a shadow knight who's going to promote to a heavenly knight. It's improper for you to bet with your lives in Lion Fortress. Now that you two want to make a bet, why not change a wager?" Guan Qianchong suggested as he threw a glance at Cui Li in a secret manner, "Brat, if you have a shadow knight commit suicide in the public, you will not stay in Taixia Country anymore. Feng Yexiao's floating airboat in the Earth-elements Realm is not bad, there are only a few floating airboats in Taiyi Fantasy Sect, why not bet with him using your bounty land?"

Zhang Tie smirked as he said, "Alright, I will take the suggestion of High Chancellor Guan. It's said that the airboat of Elder Feng is not bad. I will bet with you using my bounty land, namely 10 cities and over 700 square miles' land. You can use your airboat as the wager. Dare you bet with me?"

When Zhang Tie said, he directly took out the certificates of his bounty land from his portable space-teleportation equipment.

"It's just an airboat. I'd like to see your ability!" Feng Yexiao sneered.

"Are you betting here?" Guan Qianchong asked. Apparently, Guan Qianchong was inquiring about the two people's opinions; actually, he was on Zhang Tie's side.

"My secret method could not be exposed to the public. If Feng Yexiao wants to bet with me, only he has the access to see it. High Chancellor Guan could prepare a room for us and be the notary on the spot!" Zhang Tie understood Guan Qianchong's meaning at once.

"Brother Feng, what do you feel about it?" Guan Qianchong turned around and asked Feng Yexiao.

"Fair enough!" Feng Yexiao put it straight. No matter how many onlookers there were, he didn't believe that Cui Li could play any trick in front of him. Additionally, he wanted to know how Cui Li explain it to him when his trick was exposed.

"Find a secret cultivation room for us!" Guan Qianchong ordered a manager of the tower of brilliance who was standing in the distance.

Feng Yexiao turned around and told his followers behind him, "Stay in the lobby for a short while!"

Only after a few seconds, a manager in military uniform of logistics department of Lion Fortress walked towards them and gave a salute to Guan Qianchong, "High Chancellor Guan, the room is ready!"

"Please!" Guan Qianchong told Zhang Tie and Feng Yexiao.

After exchanging a glance with each other, Zhang Tie and Feng Yexiao followed the logistical military officer silently away from the lobby towards the staircase.

When Zhang Tie left, the silent lobby suddenly became boisterous.

"Ahh, did you see how Cui Li fought the elder of Taiyi Fantasy Sect?"

"That's too fast..."

"Splendid, splendid, Cui Li from Yongzhou Province is indeed a tough guy who's not afraid of bigwigs..."

"What's the virtual image of Cui Li? How could he be so fierce?"

"Fire dragon, an immortal beast..."

"Could there be a secret method that could match Purgatory Samsara Method?"

"We will know it after a while!"

The knights in the lobby started hot discussions, making it as boisterous as a marketplace.

The sudden collision and the gamble between an earth knight and a shadow knight could not be usually seen at all...

In the tower of brilliance, some knights had already taken out their remote-sensing crystals to summon their partners here to watch the fun.

...

Under the guidance of the military officer in the tower of brilliance, Zhang Tie, Feng Yexiao and Guan Qianchong soon came to a secret room above the lobby. Closely after that, the military officer left, leaving Zhang Tie, Feng Yexiao and Guan Qianchong in the room.

Zhang Tie then grinned up at Feng Yexiao, "Elder Feng, do you have water-element crystals?"

"Yes, why?"

"Lend me one. I will show you my secret method with your

water-element crystal in case that you doubt that there's something wrong with my water-element crystal and I have to perform it once again."

Feng Yexiao looked at Zhang Tie and Guan Qianchong before revealing a sneer and having one quality water-element crystal in his hand. Closely after that, he threw the crystal towards Zhang Tie.

Although Guan Qianchong had long known the result, he still looked solemn at this moment as if it was his first time to watch it. 'The High Chancellor of Black Armor Army is indeed vicious.'

"High Chancellor Guan, can we start?"

"Brother Feng, what do you think? Shall we start?"

"Let's start. I want to take a look at his trick. Besides the Purgatory Samsara Method, I really wonder about another secret method that could help people form their chakra rapidly!"

Holding the water-element crystal, Zhang Tie let out a sigh inside, 'I might not have such a good chance anymore in the future.'

...

Over 1 hour later, more knights arrived at the lobby to watch the fun.

When many people were guessing and discussing the result of the gamble, Cui Li went downstairs in his tall and sturdy figure and symbolic bald head while bursting out into candid laughter.

"Elder Feng, I will take the airboat of Taiyi Fantasy Sect, This Cui has not taken an airboat yet. Thanks a lot!"

Cui Li went downstairs with a spirited look. After throwing a glance at those knights in the lobby, Zhang Tie directly walked out silently.

After Cui Li left for a few seconds, Feng Yexiao went downstairs

with a pale and extremely bad look...

Needless to say, everybody had known the result.

'Cui Li has won the elder of Taiyi Fantasy Sect?'

Many people were greatly shocked inside.

What was more shocking was the meaning of Cui Li's victory, which indicated that Cui Li mastered a secret method which could even match the Purgatory Samsara Method.

On the same day, this news had been spread over all the major clans in Taixia Country and all the subcontinents even the Western Continent being far away from Taixia Country by those fighters in the Lion Fortress in different manners.

...

This time, the name Cui Li shocked the Lion Fortress completely...

...

One hour later, Du Guyi the demon suppression general had heard about this gamble in the Lion Fortress.

"Cui Li... from Yongzhou Province...the same person!"

"I've just been told that Cui Li had killed a demon knight and saved some fighters of our Feathers Army when exploring the hieron ruins with Mountain Lifting Hermit a few years ago. Those fighters being saved told me that Cui Li was very dauntless and fierce in combats and killed demon knights like how a mad guy slaughtered dogs!" The one who passed the latest news to the demon suppression general continued.

"Not bad!" The demon suppression general replied.

Those who were familiar with the demon suppression general knew that he didn't praise people easily. Now that he praised Cui Li, it indicated that Cui Li had really aroused his attention.

# Chapter 1018: Friends

---

10 hours later, Zhang Tie met Filton, Bolam and Cecilia once again in a knights' bar of Lion Fortress.

Being different like before, when Zhang Tie entered the knight's bar once again, he heard a lot whispers from those knights in the bar.

"This guy is Cui Li..."

"He's an earth knight!"

"It's said that he's mastered a secret method which could help him form his chakra rapidly and as effectively as Purgatory Samsara Method. He even won the bet between the grand elder of Taiyi Fantasy Sect and him..."

"What kind of secret method could help a knight form his chakra rapidly?"

Among whispers, some knights' eyes flickered when they watched Zhang Tie.

Although all the whispers had drifted into Zhang Tie's ears, Zhang Tie seemed to have not heard that. After noticing Filton, Bolam and Cecilia, Zhang Tie directly walked towards them.

All the three people looked at Zhang Tie in a weird way. None of them had imagined that Zhang Tie could be a popular figure once again after returning to the Lion Fortress for only a few hours. After hearing what happened in the tower of brilliance, none of them could believe that Zhang Tie collided with a shadow knight and finally won the bet between him and the shadow knight and gained an airboat from the first sect in Taixia Country as a compensation.

"Wait, I know what you're going to say. I made it by good fortune!" Before Filton uttered, Zhang Tie had opened his mouth. After that, Zhang Tie took a seat and told the waiter to serve him a

glass of watermelon liquor.

"We've got the new watermelon liquor. It has a special taste. Do you want to have a try?" The waiter recommended Zhang Tie politely.

"Sure, I will have a try!" Zhang Tie replied casually. Whatever, the current watermelon liquor has already had the worst taste, Zhang Tie didn't think that it could be worse.

The waiter walked away politely and prepared the new liquor for Zhang Tie.

"Whenever I see you, I feel you have made rapid progress like an utterly different person. Is your secret method that sharp?" Filton finally asked Zhang Tie after bearing it quite a while.

"It's indeed a bit sharp; however, I mastered that secret method accidentally. The others could not fully master it at all. Additionally, a large number of element crystals are required to form my chakra rapidly!"

After winning the bet between him and Feng Yexiao, Zhang Tie had to expose the secret that he mastered a secret method that could help him form his chakra rapidly. Therefore, Zhang Tie had long worked out the countermeasures. After the secret was exposed, he could avoid from being doubted about having any relation with the Alchemist Monster; additionally, as long as he insisted on that the others could not learn this secret method or only very few people could master a part of it, everything was still within his control. In this way, the negative effect of the secret method could be reduced. Additionally, with one more trump card in others' eyes, he could do other things easily.

Of course, the other knights could not absorb elements crystals 10-20 times that of average speed like him; however, as long as they could meet proper conditions, they would increase their cultivation speed by a couple of times. Therefore, this secret method became a bestseller of Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie had not worked out a method to package "mental arithmetic by abacus" into "mental multitasking sutra" and prevent learners from leaking his secret in case that those who knew "mental arithmetic by abacus" could connect Zhang Tie with Cui Li.

"What do you mean by that the others could not fully master this secret method?" Bolam asked Zhang Tie as he was a bit slowwitted as a martial mania.

"Not fully master it means that someone could master it partially. This secret method could only work on very few people. Less than 1 of 1000 knights could cultivate it. As for the others, this secret method would not increase their cultivation speed at all even if they barely cultivated it. However, if a knight's spiritual energy is powerful enough, he could absorb elements crystals two times faster!" Zhang Tie said frankly.

"Two times faster?" Filton took in a deep breath.

As long as the knight had sufficient elements crystals, he would form his chakra two times faster. As for those common knights who always lacked elements crystals, this secret method might not be very attractive; however, it had a special meaning for major clans and sects which could provide sufficient earth-element crystals. That was to say, as long as some major clans and sects could master this secret method, they could cultivate two times more earth knights in the same period.

The spiritual energy of Bolam, Filton and Cecilia were just average. Spiritual energy was the most difficult cultivation item for knights. Therefore, after knowing that it required them at least one more times' spiritual energy to cultivate that secret method, the three people's curiosities died out.

After looking at Bolam's broken arm, Zhang Tie took out that vial of regeneration medicament from his portable space-teleportation equipment before pushing it in front of Bolam.



"Ahh, regeneration medicament?" Filton knew what was inside it the moment he caught sight of the crystal case.

"Bolam, Cecilia, just take this vial of regeneration medicament as my gift for you. When you get married in the Western Continent, a bridegroom with two arms would look more handsome than a bridegroom with only one arm..." Zhang Tie said generously.

"This...this is too expensive..." Watching the crystal case in front of him, Bolam hesitated a bit as he shook his head.

After staying in the Lion Fortress for a few years, of course, they knew how valuable was this vial of regeneration medicament. Even though they had just participated in the large-scale battle in Tiewei Mountain at the risk of their lives, the total meritorious points that the three human knights made in the large-scale battle couldn't afford this vial of regeneration medicament at all, which at least required 1 earth demon knight or more than 6 black iron demon knights.

"Am I your friend?" Zhang Tie turned solemn at once.

"Of course!" Bolam nodded.

"Cut the crap then!" Zhang Tie directly pushed the crystal case in front of Bolam in an overbearing manner.

Bolam's lips quivered as his eyes turned wet at once...

"Take it..." Cecilia uttered as she took the crystal case on her own initiative.

"Look, even Cecilia is more straightforward than you. If you feel sorry, f\*ck those demons ferociously for me when you return to the Western Continent!"

"Yes, f\*ck those demons ferociously!" Filton patted the table.

The waiter served Zhang Tie a glass of new watermelon liquor.

"Come on, let's cheer up for this re-encounter. I hope that we could also have a chance to f\*ck demons together in the future so

as to live up to the name of knight!" Zhang Tie raised his glass, "For the name of knight!"

"For the name of knight!" Filton, Bolam and Cecilia raised their glasses at the same time.

"Nice toast. For the name of knight!" The other knights beside them also cheered up as they raised their glasses.

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter, "Boss, all the knights' consumptions tonight are on me..."

After all, he was going to leave the Lion Fortress, Zhang Tie wouldn't be able to use those consumption points in his identity plate anymore; therefore, he just behaved generously.

After hearing Zhang Tie's exclamation, almost everybody else raised their glasses and cheered up at the same time, causing the bar to become boisterous immediately.

"For the name of knight..."

Under everyone's exclamation, Zhang Tie bottomed up that glass of watermelon liquor...

The moment Zhang Tie tasted the liquor, he had sensed a familiar smell.

It was similar to a beer, which reminded him of that beautiful girl with a big braid, the crazy period in Blapei and those flying beer foams.

This liquor contained the flavor of "inferior" essential-energy aura yeast that Zhang Tie gifted to Hanna. After being added with the "inferior" essential-energy aura yeast, the watermelon liquor tasted a bit different. This sort of liquor would be beneficial to the human body if people always drank it. At least it was much better than the original watermelon liquor.

The familiar taste startled Zhang Tie slightly as he became a bit absent-minded...

"What's wrong?" Filton asked.

"Nothing, I just feel that this liquor tastes a bit special..." Zhang Tie smacked his lips.

"Bolam and I also feel that this watermelon liquor tastes a bit like beer; additionally, there're some bubbles inside it. It should be a new liquor!" Filton commented.

Zhang Tie smiled as he waved his hand and fetched the waiter.

"Where did you get this liquor from? It tastes good!" Zhang Tie asked casually.

"A few months ago, People of Heavens Fortune Sect came to the Lion Fortress. It was said that they presented a secret recipe and helped Lion Fortress modify the technology of watermelon liquor. The new watermelon liquor indeed tastes much better than the previous one; additionally, after drinking it, people will feel very comfortable. Now, it's a popular liquor in the Lion Fortress..."

'Heavens Fortune Sect?'

After thinking about it for a second, Zhang Tie understood it right away. Hanna was in Norman Empire. Marshal Lin Changjiang of Norman Empire was a member of Heavens Fortune Sect; therefore, Hanna's family even the exiled imperial households of Norman Empire in Taixia Country had already relied on the Heavens Fortune Sect.

Zhang Tie remembered that Filis the royal prince of Norman Empire told him that Norman Empire built a city called Bloody Dragon City in Guizhou Province in Taixia Country. Filis' two brothers were in the Bloody Dragon City.

After thinking about it carefully, Zhang Tie felt that it was reasonable. The exiled imperial households in Waii Subcontinent could not even match mushrooms in Taixia Country. Of course, the members of the exiled imperial households of Norman Empire would rely on the Heavens Fortune Sect.

It was out of Zhang Tie's imagination that he could know the news about his friends in Waii Subcontinent. After knowing that Hanna's family had a reliance, Zhang Tie was very satisfied inside. He felt that fate was really marvelous...

...

# Chapter 1019: My Airboat

---

After having the last party with Filton, Bolam and Cecilia, Zhang Tie took three remote-sensing finger rings. After that, he slept in the Lion Fortress and returned to the earth's surface the next day.

Filton, Bolam and Cecilia would stay in the Lion Fortress a few more days. After the airboat provided by Taixia Country for them to return to the Western Continent was full, they would return to the Western Continent; therefore, Zhang Tie left ahead of them.

On the early morning of July 15, Zhang Tie left his knight's tower. Closely after that, he went to the personnel affairs center to handle the formalities to leave Lion Fortress and submitted his identity plate to access to the Lion Fortress.

"After you leave, your meritorious points and consumption points in Lion Fortress will be preserved. As you've already been an earth knight, you could receive a new identity plate and enter the towers region of earth knights when you come to the Lion Fortress next time. If you're dead, your meritorious points and consumption points would be inherited by someone that you designated. If there's no designated inheritor, your meritorious points and consumption points would recover to zero..."

An oval-faced female military officer in the personnel affairs center explained to Zhang Tie with a glassy-eyed look. Zhang Tie touched his bald head as he felt that this female military officer really had a strong qi field. Although she was just a LV 7 captain, she dared look down upon an earth knight. Facing such a just female military officer in the fortress, Zhang Tie became speechless. Such 40-year odd virgins with eccentric temperaments were the trickiest female living being in the world. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't care about her demeanors. Even he had to surrender to such a kind of people.

After explaining a lot of words to him, the female military officer

asked Zhang Tie, "Are you sure that you're going to leave the Lion Fortress and cancel off your treatment as a Class II garrison knight?"

Zhang Tie replied with a grin, "I'm sure!"

The female military officer then took a seal and forcefully put it on a form. After that, she told Zhang Tie without raising her head, "It's okay, you could leave now!"

Touching his face, Zhang Tie turned around and left the lobby like being chased away as he couldn't afford rent.

'F\*ck!'

Until he left the personnel affairs center did Zhang Tie shake his head and get out of the shadow caused by that powerful female captain. He then walked briskly towards the exit of the Earth-elements Realm.

Outside the exit, there was a logistics auxiliary base of the Lion Fortress. All the airboats that came to the Earth-elements Realm would park here, including the airboat of Taiyi Fantasy Sect.

Since he won the airboat from Feng Yexiao, Zhang Tie had not seen it until now. After losing their airboat, Feng Yexiao and the team of Taiyi Fantasy Sect had to wait a few more days to leave the Lion Fortress. After all, Taiyi Fantasy Sect had one more airboat. As long as Feng Yexiao sent a message, Taiyi Fantasy Sect would dispatch another airboat here in a short period.

What Zhang Tie felt a bit "guilty" was that Lan Yunxi's schedule was delayed.

However, because Lan Yunxi was going back to Taiyi Fantasy Sect to apply for being the nuisance "Goddess", Zhang Tie didn't mind delaying it.

This time, Zhang Tie knew that he had contracted enmity with Taiyi Fantasy Sect completely, 'My master killed the deputy head of Taiyi Fantasy Sect; I made a shadow knight elder of Taiyi

Fantasy Sect embarrassed in the first collision between Taiyi Fantasy Sect and I and gained an airboat from Taiyi Fantasy Sect. In the future, if I grabbed Lan Yunxi away from Taiyi Fantasy Sect, the relationship between Taiyi Fantasy Sect and I is destined to deteriorate.'

However, Zhang Tie didn't mind having one more concern. As he had both offended the court of Taixia Country and demons, he didn't mind offending Taiyi Fantasy Sect.

Zhang Tie walked towards the logistics auxiliary base as he wondered, 'How could I not mind offending Taiyi Fantasy Sect? Is this the so-called confidence and growth?'

...

After a few minutes, Zhang Tie walked out of the Lion Fortress and caught sight of that floating airboat of Taiyi Fantasy Sect in the logistics auxiliary base outside the Lion Fortress.

Although he had seen airboats more than once and even paid a visit to the airboat of Golden Roc Bank and the Commander Cheng of Northeast Military Region, Zhang Tie still took in a deep breath at the sight of this airboat.

'Huge, it's too huge!'

This was Zhang Tie's first impression.

Previously, the largest airboat that Zhang Tie had met was that of Commander Cheng, which was longer than 500 m. However, this airboat was almost 600 m in length. From this point, Zhang Tie understood how powerful was Taiyi Fantasy Sect in Taixia Country. The traffic tool of one of the four elders of Taiyi Fantasy Sect could even match that of a commander of a military region in Taixia Country. What a terrifying power was Taiyi Fantasy Sect!

This airboat was not only huge but also very delicate. It was glittering a bizarre metallic luster and ruddy all over. It looked like a bird with a marvelous long tail. The head of the airboat was like

that of Phoenix, one of the far-ancient immortal beasts worshiped by Hua people.

As dragon-shaped airboat was exclusive to the court and governments of Taixia Country, the airboats of major sects in Taixia Country were in other shapes.

At this moment, the airboats were still taking off and landing in logistics auxiliary base. Compared to those airboats which varied from dozens of meters to about 200 meters, this vermeil phoenix-shaped airboat was as brilliant and eye-catching as a super luxury car among a lot of average cars.

About 20 people in common military uniforms of Taixia Country were standing solemnly at the entrance of the airboat. Watching Zhang Tie coming here, one of these people walked towards Zhang Tie and gave a military salute to him.

"Mr. Cui, you're welcome, we're here to follow your arrangements at the order of High Chancellor Guan!"

What Zhang Tie had not imagined was that the one who talked with him was a familiar person, Major General Liu Xing, whom he had met in the Tiewei Mountain Theater of Operations a few months ago.

After Zhang Tie won the bet yesterday, Guan Qianchong said that Zhang Tie himself could not operate the airboat. Coincidentally, a batch of fighters was returning to the earth's surface from the Lion Fortress. Therefore, he told the batch of fighters to operate the airboat for Zhang Tie. That batch of fighters could serve Zhang Tie for a year.

Of course, Major General Liu Xing didn't know that Cui Li was the very knight in the black robe who saved his life in Teiwei Mountain. Even though, they were not strange to each other as he had met Cui Li when Cui Li came to the Lion Fortress.

Zhang Tie noticed that there was no epaulet or military rank on



Liu Xing's shoulder although he wore the common military uniform of Taixia Country like the other fighters. This batch of fighters ranked from LV 6 to LV 9. Each of them had experienced bloody battles; therefore, they all looked steady, decisive and full of killing intent.

Compared to that a few months ago, Major General Liu Xing looked more steady and had changed sharply. The pupils under his sword-sized eyebrows turned profound.

"Major General Liu Xing, nice to see you again. Are you clear about the arrangement of High Chancellor Guan?"

"We're clear. We will follow your arrangements and orders for a year unless you tell us to leave in advance. During this period, all of these fighters will follow my orders!"

"That's good. Let's board then!" Zhang Tie waved his hand.

"Yes, sir!"

Liu Xing then led Zhang Tie towards the entrance of the airboat. After Zhang Tie boarded the airboat, Liu Xing made a hand gesture while all the other fighters followed them in one after another.

"Mr. Cui, do you want to look around this airboat?" Liu Xing asked Zhang Tie when he boarded. The others entered their own posts rapidly.

"Don't call me Mr. Cui. This Cui doesn't feel comfortable all over after hearing it!" Zhang Tie said before throwing a glance at the inside of the airboat. This airboat was as luxurious as that of Commander Cheng. Although it was not brilliant, it was unusual all over. This airboat was more low-key. However, it was also well-matched. The moment Zhang Tie boarded, he had seen a garden being covered with exotic flowers and grasses and a brook which was paved with cobblestones. There were some bizarre golden fish swimming in the brook. What unimaginable furnishings! All the airships were nothing but sh\*t in front of this airboat.

"Just call me Fire Dragon Hermit or Hermit!"

In Taixia Country, earth knights could have a private appellation being suffixed with Hermit like Mountain Lifting Hermit. When he promoted to a shadow knight, he could call himself Immortal XX.

These appellations belonged to the culture of knights in Taixia Country. Hermit and Immortal indicated that knights in Taixia Country were pursuing eternal laws.

As the only living earth knight who cultivated the "Fire Dragon Sutra" in the world, it was reasonable for Zhang Tie to call himself Fire Dragon Hermit. Taixia earth knights or shadow knights always named themselves in terms of the name of their cultivation method and hermit or immortal.

After returning to the earth's surface, Zhang Tie was ready to heft the banner of Fire Dragon Hermit. Previously, Fire Dragon Hermit was already famous in Taixia Country, it would be too wasteful if he didn't inherit this invisible asset of the predecessor.

"Sure, we will call you Hermit from then on!" Liu Xing nodded.

"Oh, weren't you serving in the Lion Fortress? Why do you return to the earth's surface?"

After hearing Zhang Tie's question, Liu Xing looked a bit sad, "I've already retired. This is our last task!"

"You've retired?" Zhang Tie became a bit amazed...

"My elder brother Liu Yang was killed in a battle 1 month ago. As the only male youth in my family, I was forced to retire by the military..."

"What about the others?"

"Almost the same as me..."

After hearing this reply, Zhang Tie became sad inside too...

Although the battle flames of the holy war had not reached Taixia Country, many families in Taixia Country had already paid

a high price for it. Someone lost their sons; some lost their brothers; some lost their fathers or husbands...

...

# Chapter 1020: Holding Bones in Gold Coffin for the Name

---

The floating airboat moved very fast. Zhang Tie left the Earth-elements Realm on July 15th by airboat and returned to the Military Province in Taixia Country on the same day.

Compared to that when Zhang Tie came to the Earth-elements Realm alone three years ago, Zhang Tie returned with glorious honors. The "Phoenix" airboat in the scale of that of commanders of military regions in Taixia Country was already eye-catching, not to mention others.

Previously, the name of the airboat was "Phoenix". As Zhang Tie felt the name was very vivid, he kept it unchanged.

The airboat directly spurted out of the gloomy and deep tunnel through air flows from the Earth-elements Realm to the earth's surface like volcanic eruptions.

Standing alone in the huge crystal cabin of the head of the airboat, Zhang Tie felt like dreaming when he saw the blue sky, the white clouds and the hot sun above his head in a split second.

After thinking about it carefully, Zhang Tie found that he had spent most of the time in cultivation in the hieron ruins over the past 3-odd years. He just took a round in the first abyss and the Tiewei Mountain and had not been to most of the places in the Earth-elements Realm. However, when he came out of there, he was already an earth knight.

It seemed that the Earth-elements Realm was really his fortunate land.

This might be called getting gold-plated.

At the sight of the blue sky and the white clouds, Zhang Tie felt as free as a bird returning to the sky or a fish returning to water at once.

Compared to the Earth-elements Realm, the earth's surface was more suitable to human existence.

As it was on the noon of a day in July, the sunlight shined the crystal dome of the "Phoenix" airboat, providing a sunbath for Zhang Tie...

Zhang Tie closed his eyes and slowly tasted the vitality brought by the sunshine which had been not seen for a long time.

At this moment, he heard Liu Xing's footsteps from his back.

"Hermit, we've returned to the Military Province on the earth's surface. Where are you heading for?"

"Where can I buy a coffin?" Zhang Tie opened his eyes while a shrewd light flashed across his eyes. He turned around and watched Liu Xing with a faint smile.

After hearing Zhang Tie's question, Liu Xing became stunned as he thought that he had misheard it, "Coffin?"

"Yes, the more advanced, the better. It'd better be a gold coffin!"

After thinking for a second, Liu Xing replied, "We could buy it in any Class A city in Taixia Country!"

Although gold coffins were rarely seen in other continents, they were usually used by major clans in Taixia Country. Of course, clans which could afford gold coffins would not be afraid of being stolen because they usually arranged people to look after their clan cemeteries.

"I plan to go to Lianyun Mountain in the east of Qingzhou Province. I will buy a gold coffin in a Class A city on the way!"

"Sure!"

Major General Liu Xing left.

With a clear destination, the airboat slightly changed its direction above the entrance of the deep and gloomy tunnel and darted towards Qingzhou Province as fast as lightning bolt...

Even the fastest airships were as slow as snails in front of this airboat.

'From today on, I also have an airboat as my traffic tool.'

'Hahaha...'

After standing there for a while and feeling the rapid movement of the airboat in the air, Zhang Tie finally touched his bald head and revealed a smile before returning to his private room on the airboat.

There was a great learning about the flight of airboat. In order to avoid it from colliding against airships, airboat always flew higher than all the airships. Additionally, airboats would follow different routes strictly in case of collisions between airboats in the air.

...

A few days later, the "Phoenix" airboat approached Lianyun Mountain in the east of Qingzhou Province. Zhang Tie saw the white clouds and the mountain peaks in the clouds which looked like islands in the sea.

Zhang Tie looked at it from above and found that Lianyun Mountain was a bit immortal.

Zhang Tie came to the control room and guided them to slow down the airboat and hover it above the mountain peak where he buried Fire Dragon Hermit.

"Here we are. Just hover here..."

...

As it was steep here, the airboat couldn't land; it could only hover about 5-6 m above the ground of the cliff of the mountain peak.

This was an advantage of airboat over airship as the latter could barely complete such a difficult hovering action in the air.

At this moment, one side hatch door of the airboat was opened when Zhang Tie jumped off the airboat with a gold coffin about 2

m in length by one hand.

The especially extravagant gold coffin weighed over 3,800 kg. Its surface was covered with Hua dragons and phoenixes. Zhang Tie bought it in a Class A city in Suizhou Province on the way from Military Province to here. Even though he jumped off with such a heavy gold coffin, Zhang Tie could still land lightly like a plume.

Liu Xing and some guys also jumped off the airboat after Zhang Tie.

Walking along the cliff, Zhang Tie directly walked towards one side of a pine in the distance. There was a simple mound under that pine, which looked like a grave. However, there was not even a gravestone.

Zhang Tie came to the front of that mound. Letting out a deep sigh, he waved his arm and blew off the soil and stones on the surface, revealing a pile of white bones.

"This is my teacher, also the earlier Fire Dragon Hermit. When I came here by accident, I gained the "Fire Dragon Sutra" from him. When my teacher died, he sat crossed legs. I couldn't even find a coffin for him at that time. Therefore, I could only bury him here simply. Today, I'm especially here to put his bones in the gold coffin and bring them back to Fire Dragon Bounty Territory to bury them in a grand way!" Zhang Tie said emotionally. He was not disguising; Zhang Tie really appreciated Fire Dragon Hermit for his gift, which led him to a different world.

'I benefitted a lot from your "Fire Dragon Sutra". Therefore, I will hold your skeleton by the gold coffin so that I could spread your name to the world in the future. Although I gained this secret method by accident, I still treat you as my teacher. That's our destiny!' Zhang Tie mumbled to the skeleton inside.

After bringing Fire Dragon Hermit's remains back to Fire Dragon Bounty Territory with Liu Xing and the others, from today on, nobody in the world would doubt about Cui Li's background

anymore. Therefore, his status as Cui Li would become legit and he would become the official successor of the earlier Fire Dragon Hermit. Everything was reasonable. This was why Zhang Tie came to the Lianyun Mountain.

The moment Liu Xing and the others wanted to help Zhang Tie hold the skeleton in the gold coffin, Zhang Tie had stopped them, "I will do that!"

Zhang Tie put down the gold coffin and carefully picked all the bones of Fire Dragon Hermit one after another. After cleaning the dust over them, he put them into the gold coffin. After doing all this, he covered the gold coffin and returned to the airboat with it.

"Go to the Fire Dragon Bounty Territory..." Zhang Tie turned domineering the moment he boarded the airboat once again.

When he realized that he could return to Youzhou Province rapidly, Zhang Tie felt extremely thrilled inside...



# Chapter 1021: A New Variant

---

Hundreds of sets of experimental installations such as vials and glassware, large or small were orderly placed in a room of the palace tree which covered over 2,000 square meters. Some vials and glasswares contained various colorful liquids, which were still bubbling...

Complete organs of demon knights and specimens of demon fighters were immersed in some vials and glassware.

Some colorful weird ptomaine miasmas were floating in some sealed professional laboratory vessels and gradually corroding pieces of bloody flesh...

This room looked a bit grim and terrifying; however, a voodoo pharmacist or a researcher in microorganisms would definitely flicker their eyes and feel that they'd come to the paradise if they came here.

This was the microorganisms evolution lab of Castle of Black Iron. The equipment in this lab might be nothing different than similar labs in the outside world; however, due to the special abilities of Castle of Black Iron, this microorganisms evolution lab must be one of the greatest labs among humans.

After creating Heller, Zhang Tie had transferred the management of the evolution of various living beings and species in Castle of Black Iron to Heller. He only waited for the results instead of caring about the processes.

It was Zhang Tie's first time to come to this microorganisms evolution lab.

When Zhang Tie was cultivating in the private room of his airboat, he received Heller's information. Heller said that he wanted to show something important to Zhang Tie; therefore, Zhang Tie entered Castle of Black Iron.

Even when the full-moons demon miasma completed its mutation, Heller had not used the word "important".

Therefore, Zhang Tie wondered what made Heller meticulous.

"Heller, what do you want to show me?"

Standing in front of so many glasswares, Zhang Tie glanced over the dozens of triangular flasks on the lab table as he wondered what Heller was going to show him.

Being silent, Heller just took one of the triangular flasks and gave it to Zhang Tie, "Here's the latest variant of essential-energy aura yeast. It's very special; I think Castle Lord should take a look at it!"

"Over these years, haven't we got dozens of variants of essential-energy aura yeast? Is there anything special with it?"

Over so many years, the essential-energy aura yeast that helped Zhang Tie to establish his undertaking already had dozens of variants. However, all those variants had various shortcomings. Not all the variants were perfect or available; therefore, those variants were not that valuable practically.

"Castle Lord will understand once you take a look at it."

Zhang Tie took that flask which was filled with faint yellow liquid. Watching the beer-like liquid, he shook it and found that the liquid was very clear and didn't have any impurity.

"Is this thing fermented by the latest variant?"

"Yes!"

After hearing Heller's answer, Zhang Tie opened the glass cork of the triangular flask and moved its mouth close to his nose.

In a split second, an extremely strong smell of alcohol escaped out of the triangular flask.

Zhang Tie had smelt alcohol; however, the alcohol inside the flask smelt more spicy than common alcohol.

"Alcohol?"

"Almost like that!" Heller replied as he gave another triangular flask to Zhang Tie, "Here's the common alcohol, Castle Lord can make a comparison by yourself!"

'Almost like that?' Heller' words faintly startled Zhang Tie. He took another triangular flask and smelt the liquor inside it. Zhang Tie felt that the liquid in this flask smelt like normal alcohol, which was not spicy and looked transparent.

Zhang Tie tasted a bit of the faint yellow alcohol. Only after touching a bit of it, Zhang Tie had felt his tongue numb. That flask of special alcohol smelt too stimulative and was not drinkable at all.

"Given the taste, this flask of faint yellow alcohol was spicier than common alcohol. Is there anything else special?"

Watching Zhang Tie tasting it, Heller revealed a smile, "Castle Lord, have you forgotten about the fuel that you added to your Faerie-dragon T9?"

After being reminded by Heller, Zhang Tie's heart raced. He watched the two flasks of alcohol in his hands and directly poured some in two burning crucibles respectively. After that, he shot out a sparkle from his fingers which split into two sparkles in the air before falling into two burning crucibles respectively like two fireflies.

A cyan flame flared up as high as 16 cm in front of Zhang Tie at once from the burning crucible which held the faint yellow alcohol...

By contrast, the common alcohol was burning calmly and steadily in another crucible, the flame of which was only about 7 cm in height.

The flame of the faint yellow alcohol was much fiercer, hotter and higher than that of the common alcohol.

From the effect, the flame of the faint yellow alcohol didn't remind people of alcohol.

Standing in front of the two burning crucibles, Zhang Tie's face looked cyan and kept flickering.

After quite a while, the flames in the two crucibles almost died out at the same time. Zhang Tie stretched out his fingers and touched the bottoms of the crucibles. He found the bottoms of the crucibles were still very clean, leaving no dust or remnants as if nothing had been burned inside yet.

Besides water and carbon dioxide, burning alcohol would leave nothing at all.

After swallowing his saliva, Zhang Tie asked Heller, "What's the fuel value of this new alcohol?"

"The fuel value of this new alcohol could reach 11,000-12,000 kilocalories per kg!" Heller replied, "Our latest variant of essential-energy aura yeast is featured by very single and powerful fermentation properties. Products being fermented by this variant would almost not contain any aura, namely, being inedible. However, this variant could extract the maximal energy and fuel value of the substance being fermented. When we ferment something with this variant, we would gain such a new alcohol which has an extremely high fuel value!"

After hearing Heller's words, Zhang Tie rushed out of the microorganisms evolution lab and came to the library of the palace tree almost at the fastest speed.

Watching Zhang Tie's back, Heller revealed a faint smile as if he had understood Zhang Tie's intention...

Zhang Tie had collected over 1 million books from Waii Subcontinent in the library of the palace tree. These books were inclusive and covered all aspects. Many of them were publications from before the Catastrophe.

Zhang Tie remembered that he had read something useful from a delicate publication before the Catastrophe.

After darting into the library as fast as a lightning bolt, Zhang Tie circled around the bookshelves which were higher than 10 m in the library for a short while before he found his target. He sprung up and rapidly took a book from the last layer of the bookshelf.

This book was a publication in Hebrew before the Catastrophe. Although it had been over 800 years old, it was still well preserved.

The book had a delicate hardcover, on which there were a propeller-driven airplane, a bus and some engine models before the Catastrophe. Beside these patterns were a lot of dense sugarcane field. It was a professional magazine targeted at engineers and professional readers. Its name was "New Energy".

In the middle of this magazine, Zhang Tie saw the topic of this magazine "Bacelia the big country in planting sugarcane starts the alcohol energy plan after the petroleum crisis"

There were two subtitles below the topic "Bacelia's first ethanol-fueled airplane made a maiden flight successfully on October 5th after ethanol service station and bushes were spread across the country".

Under this subtitle, there was another line of eye-catching scarlet letters "Three petroleum groups strictly condemn that Bacelia government for destroying local energy supply structure and quota plan"

Zhang Tie rapidly turned to the page about the introduction of an alcohol-driven airplane——

"The first alcohol-driven airplane successfully accomplished its maiden show in Salaburg City, Bacelia Country on October 5. Before this, this airplane called "Hope" had completed 300 hours' trial flight being driven by alcohol. The pilots claimed that the "Hope" was in very good condition..."

Zhang Tie skimmed over this passage so as to gain the key information that he wanted.

"[Hope] is jointly developed by Bacelia Airplane Manufacturing Company and Bacelia University. Being renovated from a mustang propeller airplane which was fueled by petroleum, this plane adopts a Lycoming 320 horsepower 6-cylinder engine. It could hold 2 people..."

"Engineers declared that ethanol-driven airplane is more durable than petroleum-driven airplanes; additionally, its driving efficiency was 7% higher than that of petroleum-driven airplanes..."

"It was Bacelia government's another major measure after modifying 1/3 of the buses across the country into dual-purpose buses..."

"On the very day the "Hope" accomplished its trial flight successfully, Bacelia Airplane Manufacturing Company had received the orders of 150 ethanol-driven airplanes from the farmers and sugarcane producers in this country. Farmers and sugarcane producers in Bacelia Country had not imagined that what they planted could be used to produce alcohol and could help airplanes fly in the sky. Therefore, farmers and sugarcane producers were very spirited. What counted most, the cost of this sort of airplane was only 1/3 of that of traditional petroleum airplane. Additionally, this new-energy airplane would not cause any pollution in flight. By contrast, petroleum-driven airplanes would produce a lot of harmful gases and pollute the air..."

"Coolio, a sugarcane producer said that he would save a lot of money by using this new sort of airplane to spray pesticide. Additionally, it was more convenient for him to do short-distance travel..."

"An official of Bacelia Airplane Manufacturing Company expressed that alcohol-driven mini aircraft were in research and

development..."

"If the alcohol energy plan could be implemented smoothly, Bacelia, as the biggest alcohol producer in this region would become an energy output country..."

After skimming over the content, Zhang Tie flew off once again and took out another magazine called "New Energy" from the bookshelf. Compared to the earlier one, this magazine's cover was black which felt especially depressive. Given the date of publication, Zhang Tie knew that it was published half a year later after the earlier one.

There were two titles under the cover.

"A coup broke out in Bacelia Country, the ex-president of Bacelia was killed by guns in the coup"

"The new Bacelia Parliament has passed the energy use act and will forbid the production and sales of all the alcohol-driven airplanes; additionally, the alcohol fuel of buses will be strictly mixed with petroleum according to certain proportion"

"The three top petroleum groups provided a loan of 120 billion gold coins for Bacelia government so as to recover the domestic orders"

...

After putting back the two publications before the Catastrophe, Zhang Tie was in deep meditation. According to the introduction of one of the magazines, in the age of humans before the Catastrophe when the petroleum would dry up, as a major energy in that age, the fuel value of gasoline was 10,450-11,250 kilocalories per kg; however, the fuel value of alcohol before the Catastrophe varied from 6,000-7,000 kilocalories per kg. In that age, humans had already developed a complete set of means to replace gasoline with alcohol. All the internal combustion engines being driven by gasoline could be driven by alcohol only after minor modifications.

Before the Catastrophe, alcohol didn't become a popular fuel because of political reason instead of technical reason. It was the profits of petroleum groups that killed the possibilities.

In the Black Iron Age, the reason that alcohol was not a popular energy source lay in the marvelous changes that happened after the Catastrophe, causing the fuel value of alcohol to decrease a lot. As a result, alcohol couldn't meet the demand for internal combustion engines anymore. Sports cars like Faerie-dragon T9 had to use external combustion engines instead of internal combustion engines.

'The latest mutated essential-energy aura yeast could produce an alcohol whose fuel value varies from 11,000 to 12,000 kilocalories per kg through fermentation. This figure is much greater than that of alcohol before the Catastrophe; it even surpasses that of gasoline. Doesn't it mean that I could produce many machines and equipment which were driven by gasoline before the Catastrophe and run them, such as propeller airplanes which moved faster than airships, high-performance buses and armored vehicles which had greater assaulting capability on the battlefield?'

Zhang Tie was startled by the wholly new possibilities and prospects brought by the mutated essential-energy aura yeast.

'This alcohol might bring an energy and industrial revolution in the Black Iron Age.'

...

Two days later, when Zhang Tie had recovered his composure and was cultivating with crossed legs in the cultivation room of the airboat, the doorbell rang. Zhang Tie then opened his eyes.

Liu Xing's voice drifted from outside, "Hermit, we've arrived at Fire Dragon Bounty Territory!"



# Chapter 1022: Golden Invitation Card from Iron-Dragon Sect

---

In the Provincial Governor's Manor, Yougzhou City, Yougzhou Province...

A receptionist who came from Huaiyuan Palace took a golden invitation card and hurriedly passed through the winding corridors and parlors in the provincial governor's manor before coming to the Crape Myrtle Palace where the provincial governor always took a rest and received the guests.

"Is provincial governor receiving a guest now?" The receptionist asked a guard standing outside the Crape Myrtle Palace in a low voice.

After the guard whispered something into the receptionist's ear. The receptionist took in a deep breath before waiting outside the Crape Myrtle Palace quietly in a modest manner to be called in...

Anyone whom provincial governor was receiving now was qualified to let the receptionist wait whether in Huaiyuan Palace or Youzhou Province.

It was August, the crape myrtle flowers in the parterre outside the Crape Myrtle Palace were in a vigorous flowering phase while being surrounded by bees and butterflies. As provincial governor felt that crape myrtle flowers were vigorous yet not excessively gorgeous, a lot of crape myrtle flowers were planted in this parterre of the Provincial Governor's Manor of White Tiger Platform 3 years ago. Therefore, this parlor was renamed as Crape Myrtle Palace and became the very place where provincial governor received his trusted subordinates.

In the provincial governor's manor of Youzhou Province, being received by provincial governor in the Palace of Brightness was utterly different than being received in the Crape Myrtle Palace.

After ruling Youzhou Province for 4 years, Zhang Taixuan had already established his authority in Youzhou Province; Huaiyuan Palace also stabilized its position as the first clan in Youzhou Province. Therefore, some rules in the provincial governor's manor were unconsciously spread over Youzhou City and were enjoyed by people.

Since Zhang Tie issued the article "The Inscription on Gravestone of the Despicable" in the forum of the Mountain of Brightness, Huaiyuan Palace and Zhang Clan had been smooth in all aspects. Even those who didn't expect Huaiyuan Palace to be smooth in all aspects became silent in recent years. They didn't offend Huaiyuan Palace anymore in case of being a target for all.

In the territory of Youzhou Province and the Northeast Military Region, almost everyone thought that Zhang Tie was wronged, although people in other places might not think so.

On one hand, Huaiyuan Palace was holding the immense power of Youzhou Province; on the other hand, a backbone of Zhang Clan was wronged and had to escape everywhere. Under the formidable and touching dual atmosphere, Huaiyuan Palace officially rooted in Youzhou Province, even in Taixia Country and expanded its living space.

The Crape Myrtle Palace was bright and clean. Outside the glazed rosewood partitions, the breeze blew by, bringing in a faint fragrance. A brilliant crape myrtle exposed its twigs outside the window as if it wanted to push inside the window so as to adorn the room with a bit brilliance...

It was hot outside the palace; by contrast, it was cool and comfortable inside it. In the four corners of the room, four tin-copper toads were holding ice cubes in their bellies. Widely opening their mouths, the four toads were silently spitting cool air so as to drive away the heat...

Zhang Taixuan was sitting behind a long table and sipping tea

with a man on the opposite.

The one who sat on the opposite of Zhang Taixuan was Zhang Yang, Zhang Tie's elder brother. After 4 years, Zhang Yang looked steadier as he had entered his heyday in terms of physical strength, spiritual energy and ability.

Zhang Yang wore a black golden boa silk robe with a thin and black mustache. His eyes flickered, shooting out shrewd, heroic eye light. Even though being on the opposite of the clan head, he was still personable, neither being humble nor pushy.

Even in the territory of the entire Northeast Military Region, everyone had known that the family of Zhang Yang, the biggest shareholder of Jinwu Business Group was the richest family in Youzhou Province or the Northeast Military Region, not to mention those in Youzhou Province. Zhang's all-purpose medicament was like gold bars that could be produced constantly. Of course, such a family would be rich.

In Taixia Country, people used to describe "rich" people as "earning 1 dou of gold each day". This expression was evidently dwarfed by Jinwu Business Group. Because Jinwu Business Group could definitely make one ship of gold per day.

Now, the airships which were queuing up in Jinwu City for loading all-purpose medicament had to leave gold two times the weight of the vials of all-purpose medicament. Therefore, it was not excessive to say that Jinwu Business Group could make one ship of gold per day.

2 years ago, Jinwu Business Group which had promoted to be the noblest VIP of Golden Roc Bank had already been able to enjoy the free protection of two knights arranged by the Golden Roc Bank. Due to the special relationship between Jinwu Business Group and Heavens Fortune Sect, Heavens Fortune Sect also dispatched a knight powerhouse to directly reside in Zhang Yang's family as the head of the bodyguards of Zhang's Mansion. Last year, Jinwu

Business Group spent a lot on purchasing a floating airboat from Heavens Fortune Sect. Therefore, Zhang Yang became the second one who had a private floating airboat after Zhang Taixuan in Youzhou Province.

This year, according to intelligence, Zhang Taixuan knew that Zhang Yang traveled to Chaosang Subcontinent by floating airboat one month ago and recruited 2 more knights and many powerhouses on different levels below knights from there.

That was to say, 5 knights were serving Zhang Yang, which was almost equal to the number of elders of Huaiyuan Palace.

Zhang Yang had just come back from Chaosang Subcontinent. During the period when Zhang Yang was in Chaosang Subcontinent, of course, Zhang Taixuan as the provincial governor of Youzhou Province neighboring Chaosang Subcontinent knew what happened in Chaosang Subcontinent.

"Is that done by you in Immortal Wind Country?" Zhang Tiexuan slightly blew the tea water as he asked Zhang Yang with a calm look.

"The emperor of Immortal Wind Country is old and muddle-headed. The royal prince is tyrannical and immoral. I went to change a royal prince for them..." Zhang Yang said calmly as he also slightly blew his tea water before having a sip.

Zhang Taixuan knew that Jinwu Business Group had managed in Chaosang Subcontinent for a long time. It was really out of his imagination that Jinwu Business Group could have such a big power over there. He threw a glance at Zhang Yang as he felt that this young man had become more tolerant, decisive and vicious after Zhang Tie was framed and escaped away.

Fengjing City, the capital city of Immortal Wind Country had almost become ruins with a casualty of over 300,000 soldiers and commoners. The forces and armies that were loyal to the earlier royal prince were absolutely uprooted. However, Zhang Yang

described it so casually.

"Chaosang Subcontinent is neighboring Taixia Country. All the countries on Chaosang Subcontinent have relations with major clans in Taixia Country. Honestly, Most of the royal households and high-ranking government officials in Chaosang Subcontinent are just watchdogs and agents of major clans of Taixia Country in Chaosang Subcontinent. Tang Clan of Yanzhou Province is on the back of Immortal Wind Country..." Zhang Taixuan reminded Zhang Yang.

"You could exchange everything with money!" Zhang Yang smiled as he put down his teacup, "An elder of Tang Clan went to Immortal Wind Country together with me. He killed the No. 1 knight on the side of the royal prince of Immortal Wind Country..."

"An elder of Tang Clan also went there?" Zhang Taixuan let out a sigh, "Is that worthwhile?"

"Immortal Wind Country is just a tiny country. It doesn't have any powerhouse or valuable resources. However, I like how it trains its dare-to-die soldiers, who might be useful in the future. As long as they are dauntless and could advance wave upon wave, I prefer to take it as a business, whether it's profitable or not..."

"Hidden forces are surging in Taixia Country. You'd better be careful!" Zhang Taixuan said with a distant look.

"After the news that Emperor Xuanyuan is missing drifted from the Earth-elements Realm, it has been spread over Taixia Country only in a few days. Even the kids on the streets know that. Huaiyuan Palace should prepare for it as soon as possible!" Zhang Yang suggested as a shrewd light flashed across his eyes.

After throwing a glance at Zhang Yang, Zhang Taixuan nodded. After being silent a few seconds, Zhang Taixuan replied, "It seems that Yanghe Prefecture should build a high-profile Class A city. With a Class A city on our back, people would feel safe!"

"If Huaiyuan Palace wants to build a Class A city, Jinwu Business Group will bear half of the expense!" Zhang Yang said generously, which meant that he had to spend billions of gold coins.

"What does Jinwu Business Group need?"

"Whether the alchemist bombs that our clan stored should be cleared..."

Zhang Taixuan nodded, "The marriage between Zhu Clan of Yanzhou Province and Huaiyuan Palace..."

"Just let them send the woman here!" Zhang Yang didn't even care about who was that woman. Because it didn't matter at all. He only knew that Zhu Clan was a major clan in Yanzhou Province, whose woman was definitely not ugly. Whatever!

The two people then exchanged a glance with each other before nodding at the same time silently...

After having a cup of tea, Zhang Yang got up and bade a farewell to Zhang Taixuan. Zhang Taixuan saw him off until the entrance of Crape Myrtle Palace...

Watching Zhang Yang walking out of there with a confident look, those guards and the receptionist standing outside the Crape Myrtle Palace bowed towards Zhang Yang respectfully at the same time.

Jinwu Business Group today could never be matched by that yesterday. In late years, with the foundation of Jinwu Business City and the gradual expansion of Jinwu Business Group, Zhang Yang's status and position in Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace could almost match that of clan elders.

Zhang Taixuan touched the fingerstall. Until Zhang Yang disappeared behind those brilliant crape myrtle flowers did Zhang Taixuan turn his eyes to the receptionist of the Provincial Governor's Manor, "What's the matter?"

As an earth knight, he had long heard what did the receptionist

talk with the guard just now. Therefore, he knew that receptionist had something to report to him.

The receptionist trotted forward before bowing towards Zhang Taixuan. At the same time, he presented the golden invitation card to Zhang Taixuan with two hands. At the sight of the eye-catching golden invitation card, Zhang Taixuan's pupils narrowed at once...

Because there were the qi and image of an earth knight on the golden invitation card. The image was a ferocious and grim fire dragon with two wings.

In the knight's world, this indicated that the one who delivered this golden invitation card was a noble earth knight.

After opening it, Zhang Taixuan only saw one paragraph:

——On August 18, I will hold the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect in Xuantian City, at the foot of Yangui Mountain, Fire Dragon Bounty Territory. I've prepared some drinks to invite all the dignitaries in Huaiyuan Palace to attend it.

The signature was——Cui Li, the Fire Dragon Hermit, also the owner of Fire Dragon Bounty Territory.

"What a fierce dragon..." Zhang Taixuan read the golden invitation cards twice. Feeling its weight, after considering it a few seconds, he turned around and told the receptionist, "Invite the elders of Huaiyuan Palace to discuss something in White Tiger Platform..."

...

On the same day, many major clans in Youzhou Province, Tongzhou Province and Yangzhou Province in the territory of the Northeast Military Region which neighbored Fire Dragon Bounty Territory received the same golden invitation card.

Zhang Yang received the same golden invitation card when he returned home...

# Chapter 1023: The New Look of Fire Dragon Bounty Territory (I)

---

After coming to the Fire Dragon Bounty Territory, Zhang Tie spent 2 days in finishing the formalities with the land resources administration of the Northeast Military Region and left border piles around the Fire Dragon Bounty Territory. From then on, Fire Dragon Bounty Territory became Zhang Tie's private territory.

Being in the southwest of Yangui Mountain in Taixia Country, Fire Dragon Bounty Territory covered 1.34 million square miles and neighbored Youzhou Province, Tongzhou Province and Yanzhou Province in the territory of the Northeast Military Territory of Taixia Country. There were 18.76 million people who could move freely and 10 cities in the bounty territory.

3 of the 10 cities were in Miyun Prefecture in Youzhou Province, namely Tianxuan City, Xinlu City and Langyun City respectively. Tianxuan City was a Class II Level B city, which was the largest one in the three cities with more population; Xinlu City was a Class II Level C city; Langyun City was a Class III Level B city.

4 of the rest 7 cities were in Xingyuan Prefecture in the territory of Tongzhou Province, respectively Anning City, Xuesong City, Yande City and Qinghe City; all of them were Class II Level C cities.

Dashang City, Wugong City and Dongyang City in Gaoping Prefecture of Yanzhou Province where the hub of the Northeast Military Region was located in, were divided into Fire Dragon Bounty Territory. Dashang City and Wugong City were Class II Level B cities while Dongyang City was Class II Level A city.

As Tianxuan City was in Youzhou Province and was one of the only two Class II Level A cities in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory, Zhang Tie directly chose the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect in Tianxuan City.



Zhang Tie entrusted the official post of Northeast Military Region to deliver his golden invitation cards on August 1; on the same day, two notices had been posted in Tianxuan City, XinLu City, Langyun City, Anning City, Xuesong City, Yande City, Qinghe City, Dashang City, Wugong City and Dongyang City on the same day.

The first notice was——Cui Li, the owner of Fire Dragon Bounty Territory establishes Iron-Dragon Sect and will recruit apprentices in the Fire Dragon Bounty Territory.

The second notice was——all the cities in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory will select local representatives. From then on, all the cities, districts, counties, towns and villages in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory will be autonomously managed by the delegations on all levels.

After the two notices were posted for 1 day, the entire Fire Dragon Bounty Territory had been boisterous. Not only that, but the two notices in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory also spread over the all the prefectures in three neighboring provinces as fast as the wind.

Local representatives autonomy had existed in Taixia Country since far-ancient times. The so-called democratic parliament and the other forms of organizations in other continents were actually borrowing the intelligence of Taixia Country although they looked advanced. This sort of organization had existed in Taixia Country for thousands of years. However, as Fire Dragon Bounty Territory was almost as large as a prefecture in a province, the selection of local representatives became unusual.

The cities in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory were previously administered by the government of Taixia Country. Each city in the territory had a mayor and administrative agencies on different levels which were dispatched from the royal government of Taixia Country. However, after this territory was rewarded to Cui Li and was renamed by him, its property had changed; the officials on

different levels could almost be ignored as the existence of agencies and officials in the entire Fire Dragon Bounty Territory would completely determine the owner's willingness, except for the taxation and judicial agencies. The selection of local representatives indicated the willingness of the owner of this territory clearly.

The so-called local representatives were composed of local dignitaries.

According to the notice, each city of Fire Dragon Bounty Territory would organize a local representatives association which contained 21 members. Any legal resident in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory would be qualified to be a candidate and be received and finally appointed by the Cui Li, the owner of this territory as long as he or she could gain 3000 people's support in terms of signature, regardless of gender and age.

Once local representatives associations were established, each city would have 21 local representatives, who would wield the scepter of the city and be as powerful as the mayor.

The moment this news was spread, all the dignitary clans in the cities of Fire Dragon Bounty Territory became active at once. If one of their clans could become a local representative, their clan would gain both fame and wealth. Of course, all the clans were drooling about it.

What was more eye-catching was the news that Cui Li, the Fire Dragon Hermit, also the owner of Fire Dragon Bounty Hermit was going to recruit apprentices.

The news that Cui Li the Fire Dragon Hermit cultivated the marquis-level secret method "Fire Dragon Sutra" had already been spread over. If anyone could join the Iron-Dragon Sect and become Fire Dragon Hermit's direct apprentice, he or she would rely on an earth knight who had a private bounty territory and might learn a powerful marquis-level secret method. Such a good news was

nothing different than a shortcut towards the fame and wealth. Therefore, this news shocked the neighboring regions at once. Across the Northeast Military Region, even major clans with knights were moved by this news, not to mention commoners.

After Cui Li delivered his golden invitation cards and notices, Tianxuan City which was not eye-catching in the Northeast Military Region immediately became the focus of the entire Northeast Military Region. As a result, more and more airships and people arrived at Tianxuan City abruptly...

...

On the early morning of August 6th, the couple of Boss Liu of Yuean Hotel in the south of Tianxuan City got up before daybreak.

Yuean Hotel covered about 700 square meters. With a 4-storey building and two courtyards, it contained more than 30 guestrooms. Although being limited in area and ranked medium among the hotels in Tianxuan City, it was the achievement of the couple after over 20 years' hard work. Therefore, the couple always did many things in the hotel themselves.

Starting from August 2nd, the business of the hotel suddenly became flourishing. The hotel, the greater part of rooms of which were usually vacant was full in only a couple of days. Not only the couple, but even the lads in the hotel also became busy.

"Those who have been living in Heavens No. 1 and No. 2 since yesterday are rich fighters from Yanzhou Province. They are a bit picky nicky. As they don't care about price, you'd better buy some good ingredients from the marketplace..." Boss Liu's wife told boss Liu seriously when he was going to buy ingredients from the marketplace with his lads in the early morning.

"Cooks are a bit busy, you'd better pay more attention to them!" Boss Liu also warned his wife.

"I see. I've invited Aunt Liu in our neighborhood and my

youngest aunt from Zhao family to give us a hand in the kitchen today. They're diligent; they will arrive soon. You can leave now!"

After hearing that his wife had made an arrangement in the kitchen, Boss Liu sat in the back of a tricycle as he told a lad to leave.

Those who came to buy ingredients in the marketplace so early were mostly bosses of hotels and restaurants and stewards and lads of major clans in the city.

After buying various fresh vegetables and fruits, Boss Liu caught sight of a hunted snow deer. It might be hunted last night as its flesh was fresh and tender. When he thought of those rich guests from Yanzhou Province, he shared the snow deer with Boss Zhou of another hotel after reaching an agreement. After weighing it, he loaded it in his tricycle.

After finishing all this in half an hour, Boss Liu came to the old storefront of Rongshengxiang and took the fresh beef and mutton.

As Boss Liu often visited here, at the sight of Boss Liu, the lad of Rongshengxiang immediately carried the beef and mutton into his tricycle without being requested by Boss Liu.

The moment the basket of beef and mutton were loaded, the vehicle sunk faintly.

It was a bit too much today!

Boss Liu mumbled inside as he told the fatty Boss Zhao inside Rongshengxiang, "Boss Zhao, the meat today looks too much. Yuean Hotel doesn't need so much meat today. Because it's too hot, they might go bad tomorrow!"

"Hahaha, it's not too much, it's not too much. Just take it. I will give you 20% off..." Boss Zhao replied with a smile.

After hearing the reply of Boss Zhao who was known as miserly, Boss Liu became dubious. After checking those beef and mutton once again, he found that they were all fresh and qualified. He

then mumbled inside, 'How does this miser turn so good today?'

At this moment, Boss Zhao walked towards him with a big smile as he took out a roll of white cloth and said, "Hehhehheh, Boss Liu, don't think too much. The biggest shareholder Qian of Rongshengxiang is collecting the signatures these days. He said that Rongshengxiang was holding preferential activities these days to the old guests. As long as Boss Liu do us a favor by signing your name here and take it back to have your lads sign their names or press their fingerprints one after another, in the next 1 month, Boss Liu will enjoy the same discount..."

After hearing Boss Zhao's words, Boss Liu widely opened his eyes with an amazed look, "Ahh, the biggest shareholder Qian is competing for the local representative of Xuantian City?"

In the hotel, by listening to the discussions of guests from all walks of life, Boss Liu knew all the big events that happened in Youzhou Province and Taixia Country. Boss Liu knew that Fire Dragon Bounty Territory was going to select local representatives almost the moment the notice was released.

"Our biggest shareholder Qian is also an influential figure in Xuantian City. He has over 10 pastures, farmsteads and slaughterhouses; 1/3 of meat in Tianxuan City are supplied by our biggest shareholder Qian. Now that the others could attend the selection for local representatives, our biggest shareholder Qian could also attend it!" Boss Liu immediately became solemn at the sight of Boss Liu's amazed look, "Does Boss Liu feel that we're humble and look down upon our butchers?"

Boss Liu hurriedly revealed a smile, "You're thinking too much. I just wonder that biggest shareholder Qian has over 4,000 staff. He only needs to request all of his staff to sign their names for him. He doesn't need ours at all!"

"Hahaha, the more supporters there are, the more glorious our biggest shareholder Qian will be. It's said that Boss Feng in

Tianxuan City is also competing for local representative; additionally, she has collected over 5,000 signatures. Although our biggest shareholder Qian was a butcher, he has contributed a lot to Tianxuan City these years such as paving roads and building bridges. Whatever, he could at least match a prostitute..."

Boss Feng was another legendary female hero in Xuantian City. As the top prostitute in the 27 brothels across Xuantian City, her fame in the "entertainment circle" could match that of the biggest shareholder Qian in "catering industry" in Xuantian City.

# Chapter 1024: The New Look of Fire Dragon Bounty Territory (II)

---

When Boss Liu and the lad returned to Yuean Hotel by tricycle, the day had just broken.

At this moment, the guests in Yuean Hotel started to get up and have breakfast. As a result, the hotel gradually became boisterous.

Boss Liu took out the roll of white cloth which was given by Boss Zhao as he thought inside, 'It's just a matter of signature. Although it sounds fresh, it's not a big deal. Although the biggest shareholder of Rongshengxiang was a butcher, he's generous. It's actually not bad if he could become a local representative. In the future, I might gain some advantage from him.'

According to Boss Zhao, many butchers and hotel bosses in Xuantian City supported the biggest shareholder Qian. He had also collected many signatures from the farmsteads in the rural areas outside the city. It was said that the biggest shareholder Qian had already gained over 6,000 signatures.

After the selection for local representatives started a few days ago, it had already become more and more interesting. Many dignitaries, rich men and influential figures in many industries had started to canvass.

It might be the same in other cities.

Boss Liu remembered Boss Zhao's request. After taking out the roll of white cloth, he told all the lads and his wife to sign their names on it, including the two women who came here to give a favor to them in the kitchen. Those who didn't sign their names would press down their fingerprints on it. After dealing with it, Boss Liu put away the white cloth and started to arrange the affairs in the hotel.

He would give the roll of white cloth full of names to Boss Zhao

tomorrow.

Soon after 9 am, almost all the guests in the hotel had already gotten up. The hotel was also selling breakfasts such as steamed stuffed bun, noodles, peanuts, porridge, rich puddings, assorted cold or hot foods and pot-stewed meat. Many idlers would come here to have breakfast, morning tea and listen to storytelling by the way.

By 9:30, the dining hall in the hotel had been covered with people. Many of them were especially here to listen to storytelling. Many old people came here with their grandsons.

The moment the angular storyteller in cyan gown sat down at the only table on the stage by raising his robe and had a mouth of tea water, the entire dining hall became quiet. Even those kids stopped uttering as they watched the storyteller with widely opened black eyes.

With a sound of "Shua", the storyteller unfolded the paper fan with plum blossoms on it suddenly and waved it. Even the lads who were responsible for adding tea water for the guests in the dining hall trod slightly as they pricked up their ears.

The storyteller was telling "The Legend of Black Iron Hero". The moment this book was published 3 years ago, it had become popular across Taixia Country. As a storyteller, if he cannot tell "The Legend of Black Iron Hero", he would be shameful of telling others that he was a storyteller.

"Zhang Tie experienced a bloody battle in Selnes Theater of Operations and was framed by the moles of demons in the allied human forces. Selnes Eagle broke its wings and almost lost his life. Finally, the entire Selnes Theater of Operations collapsed. Zhang Tie couldn't bear it alone; therefore, he had to evacuate towards the south as he fought the vanguard of the demons corps. Tens of millions of demonized puppets were as dense as a tide, which would destroy cities and countries wherever they were. Any



humans in front of them would be eaten; any god in front of them would be slaughtered. They were like tens of millions of wild beasts with bloody eyes which could devour everything. Wherever they passed by would become barren land. They rolled over the entire north region of Waii Subcontinent and surged all the way towards Norman Empire..." The storyteller said as he opened his foldable fan and waved it. Along with his tone, facial expressions and movements, the storyteller attracted everyone's attention in a split second. From then on, the entire dining hall was filled with his sound. All the audience in the dining hall were immersed in the dramatic plots...

Many audiences had not realized that two hours had already passed...

When the storyteller patted the judge's gravel on the table, everybody at present was shocked...

"Right then, a boom as loud as millions of muffled thunders sounded. The entire land then started to shake like screening rice shaff by quivering the winnowing fan, causing sand and rocks to jump. Tens of millions of demonized puppets at the foot of Nein City of Norman Empire were all vacant as they thought that it was an earthquake. Zhang Tie was fighting three powerhouses of Three-eye Association on the city gate and would soon be in a crisis. All of a sudden, the city wall started to shake heavily and almost fell down. The 3 powerhouses of Three-eye Association were shocked. Seizing this opportunity, Zhang Tie broke off the encirclement and jumped onto the top of the city gate which was over 20 m high and looked in the distance..."

At this moment, the storyteller stood up and put his hand over his forehead as if he was looking in the distance.

"Zhang Tie looked in the distance as his heart raced. My god, a white line in the far like a rolling cloud sea as higher as 100 m was surging towards Nein City in an overwhelming manner. Dear guests, what do you think that white line is..."

"Do you remember that there's a marshal called Lin Changjiang in Norman Empire? He's also a member of Hua people of Taixia Country. Speaking of Lin Changjiang, he's really excellent. His real status was a talented apprentice of Heavens Fortune Sect in Taixia Country. Dozens of years ago, he came to Waii Subcontinent at the order of the sect and made preparations for resisting demons. After coming to Norman Empire, Lin Changjiang had been responsible for building the largest irrigation project in the north of Norman Empire—the Imperial Dam. The white line over 400 miles away from Nein City was the flood that was poured down from the Imperial Dam of Norman Empire. How much water? 80 billion cubic meters. Do you know what does that figure mean? It's irresistible. 80 billion cubic meters of water could inflict the entire Miyun Prefecture..."

"Nein City was the graveyard of the tens of millions of demonized puppets in Marshal Lin Changjiang's plan. Heavens Fortune Sect was good at fortune telling. As long as dozens of years ago, they had known that Nein City would be collapsed by tens of millions of demonized puppets in this holy war. Therefore, Marshal Lin Changjiang built a dam in the upper reach of Nein City so as to store water and prepare for today's trick..."

After hearing this, all the audience who had been immersed in the story exclaimed one after another.

"At that moment, Marshal Lin Changjiang didn't know that Zhang Tie was fighting demonized puppets at the foot of Nein City. Neither did Zhang Tie know Marshal Lin Changjiang's trick. After hearing the abnormal sounds in the distance, the three powerhouses of Three-eye Association who fought Zhang Tie just now also jumped onto higher places and looked in the distance. When they figured out what happened, they were all scared too much and exerted their full efforts to escape away. They just hated that they were born with just two legs. The white line was surging towards Nein City like tens of thousands of galloping horses. In the

blink of an eye, it had covered everything and destroyed everything in Nein City in an overwhelming way. It was even much more powerful and irresistible than the greatest knights..."

"Tens of millions of demonized puppets were collapsed at once. They escaped in all directions only to survive themselves in this overwhelming flood. In such a critical situation, everyone else would almost lose their lives, except for Zhang Tie. Watching the over 100 m higher huge waves, Zhang Tie burst out into laughter as he shouted, "The god helps me!"

"After saying that, Zhang Tie sprung up from the top of the city gate and stepped onto the top of the surging waves like how he saved a beauty in Hidden Dragon Island as a Yaksha. On the top of the huge waves, he just overlooked the embarrassed looks of the tens of millions of demonized puppets like a yaksha cruising the ocean and a dragon swimming in the sea!"

"In water, the demonized puppets were like sh\*t; how could they defeat Zhang Tie in that situation? Zhang Tie walked on waves as freely walking on the plain ground. As long as he waved his longsword, he would send demonized puppets' heads flying away. Stepping on the huge waves like Nezha, Zhang Tie soon caught up with the three powerhouses of Three-eye Association. Only after waving his sword twice, he had sent two heads flying off..."

"However, he missed the third one. Zhang Tie didn't think too much about that at that moment. He just continued to kill those demonized puppets who were struggling on the waves and made a cool massacre. Zhang Tie didn't imagine that the one who escaped could bring him a great meritorious deed in the future..."

"There's a poem for this accident——The rolling waves were covered with blood; the young hero behaved dauntlessly like a Chinese dragon; the heavens fortune broke through tens of millions demonized puppets; the yaksha stepped on huge waves across Nein City..." After finishing the poem, the storyteller patted the judge's gravel, causing another sound "Pah" as he continued, "If

you want to know what happened later, please listen to it tomorrow!"

The moment they heard the word "tomorrow", the dining hall was filled with regrets and complaints.

"Ahh, it's just come to the climax..."

"Continue, continue..."

Someone shouted while the storyteller cupped his hands and bowed towards all directions, "Dear guests, this old man is too thirsty and become breathless. I could barely continue. If you want to listen to my story, please come here tomorrow. Finally, this old man will make an advertisement for Boss Feng——8 pm tonight, Boss Feng will have the top 8 prostitutes in Xuantian City play a "Mudan Pavilion" in Pear Fragrance Garden. What's more, Pear Fragrance Garden will be free tonight. You only need to select Boss Feng to be the local representative of Xuantian City!"

After saying that, the storyteller walked off the stage and bade a farewell to Boss Liu before leaving...

In the dining hall, nobody had noticed that a tower-like tough guy in a cloak was standing in the corner of the dining hall on the 2nd floor and watching the storyteller leaving with a dumbfounded look. At the same time, the tough man mumbled inside, 'What the hell! When did this daddy kill a demon in Nein City?'

# Chapter 1025: The Legend of Black Iron Hero

---

Since Zhang Tie came to Fire Dragon Bounty Territory, after finishing the handover formalities of Fire Dragon Bounty Territory and authority confirmation, Zhang Tie always wandered around alone. He almost traveled all the 10 cities and Yanguai Mountain Range in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory. After a few days' travel, Zhang Tie was already familiar with the local customs and practices.

Zhang Tie came back to Xuantian City in the morning. When he found this common hotel which was a bit boisterous, he entered it to have some food. By the way, he would learn about the situation in Xuantian City. Zhang Tie thought that the simplest way for him to be familiar with a place was to listen to the free chat of those people from all walks of life in the mass-gathering public places like teahouses, pubs and hotels.

However, it was out of Zhang Tie's imagination that he could listen to the "Legend of Black Iron Hero", in which he was the main character.

This story was vivid. Some contents were real although being processed artistically; some were fabricated reasonably. As a result, Zhang Tie's image turned full and real which was righteous and hot-blooded just like a vivid legendary figure.

'What the hell?'

Zhang Tie wondered about it very much.

After hearing that Boss Feng was going to have the top 8 prostitutes in Xuantian City play "Mudan Pavilion" in Pear Fragrance Garden tonight, the audience in the dining hall started to discuss Boss Feng while they shifted their topic to the selection of local representatives of Xuantian City. After bidding a farewell to Boss Liu, the storyteller left the hotel under the guidance of a lad.

"Boss Feng is our heroine in Xuantian City. It's said that Boss Feng only sold her talents instead of her virginity when she was young. Later on, as she was very shrewd, she rented a hub and gradually expanded her business..."

"I was told that Boss Feng never forced her girls to sell their virginity. As long as those girls could work enough years for her or make enough money to redeem themselves, Boss Feng will recover their freedom on her own initiative. If any of them meets her Mr. right, Boss Feng will even gift her a dowry. The third son of the mayor of Xuantian City wanted to sleep with Ruoxi in Phoenixflute Pavilion, Boss Feng stopped him as Ruoxi had already met her Mr. right. It displeased the third son of the mayor; as a result, he had people damage half of the entire Phoenixflute Pavilion..."

"If not, how could the geishas exert their full efforts to work for Boss Feng?"

"But it's a bit improper for a woman who was once a geisha to attend the selection of local representatives..."

...

When those people were discussing on the 2nd floor, Zhang Tie stood up. After throwing a gold coin onto the table, he followed the storyteller downstairs.

"Sir, you've paid too much; wait a moment, I will give you the change..."

The food and tea water that Zhang Tie consumed were worth at most 2 silver coins. However, Zhang Tie dropped 1 gold coin. It really was too much. Therefore, at the sight of the gold coin, Boss Liu hurriedly stopped Zhang Tie.

Boss Liu was not short; however, his top of the head could only touch Zhang Tie's elbow.

"Your stretched noodles and steamed puffed buns tastes good, keep the change..." Zhang Tie waved his hand. In Zhang Tie's eyes,

gold coins were already nothing different than silver coins. He just paid in terms of gold coins in case of change.

Additionally, Zhang Tie found that he liked the satisfied looks of these commoners caused by one gold coin because it would remind him of himself when he worked as a human sandbag for others in the Iron Thorns Fighting Club. Behind each generous deed, Zhang Tie was warning himself to think like a commoner and not to get lost because of wealth and strength.

No matter how many buildings one had, he only needed one bed to sleep on; no matter how many fertile arable lands one had, he could not eat more than 7kg's food per day; no matter how many gold one had, he could only wear 1 kg's silk and linen cloth at most. Even knights would have unfortunate moments or even die; therefore, even as an earth knight, Zhang Tie still treated himself as a commoner.

Boss Liu felt happy as he had not imagined that the tower-like tough man was such rich. After watching Zhang Tie's look carefully, Boss Liu said, "If you like my food, you can always come here. Given your special sturdy figure, I will keep your look deep in mind. If you come here in the future, I will not take your money anymore!"

Zhang Tie threw a glance at Boss Liu as he had not imagined that Boss Liu was really good at doing business. Although it was just a few silver coins, his words sounded very comfortable.

Zhang Tie burst out into his laughter as he patted Boss Liu's shoulders. Closely after that, he clattered downstairs...

After coming to the gate of Yuean Hotel, Zhang Tie looked left and right and found that thin frame less than 50 steps away on the bustling street. He sped up and patted the storyteller's shoulder. The storyteller turned around. Zhang Tie's eyes flickered as he said, "Follow me..."; closely after that, he walked towards the teahouse in the distance.

The storyteller just followed after Zhang Tie at the same speed all the way towards the teahouse.

After coming to the teahouse, Zhang Tie ordered a tranquil compartment and entered it, followed by the storyteller.

After taking a seat, Zhang Tie pointed at another seat in the room and told the storyteller to sit down.

"May I know your name?"

"This old man is Liu Yuqing!" The storyteller's eyes looked clear as he replied fluently. However, he felt that the words of the tough man in front of him were as euphonious as music from heavens. As a result, he just followed the tough man's will and replied honestly.

"How many years have you told stories?"

"This old man has told stories for 26 years!"

"Did you fabricate the Legend of Black Iron Hero ?"

"No, the Legend of Black Iron Hero was written by Mr. Jingan..."

'Mr. Jingan?' Zhang Tie slightly frowned as he had not heard about this name before, "Who's Mr. Jingan?"

"Mr. Jingan is a great novelist. His novels are most popular among storytellers..."

"How long have you told the Legend of Black Iron Hero ?"

"About 2 years!"

"Who let you tell the Legend of Black Iron Hero in Xuantian City?"

"This old man doesn't know who's he. Two years ago, a strange guest gave me the novel Legend of Black Iron Hero and told me that I could gain 10 gold coins a month in my account of Golden Roc Bank if I kept telling this book in Xuantian City. After saying that, that guest gave me 10 gold coins as the advance payment for the first month. You know, storytellers could make 3-4 gold coins a



month at most. Those poorer could make at most 1 gold coin a month. Therefore, from then on, I started to tell the Legend of Black Iron Hero in Xuantian City. In the second month, I really gained 10 gold coins in my bank account. Therefore, I have been telling Legend of Black Iron Hero every day in Xuantian City until now..."

"What about the other storytellers in Tianxuan City? Are they also telling Legend of Black Iron Hero?"

"2 years ago, the novel Legend of Black Iron Hero had been popular among storytellers and guests in the Northeast Military Region. You could listen to the story in each city, even in the towns..."

"Whether the other storytellers will also gain 10 gold coins a month as a payment by telling the same story?"

"I have no idea. However, in the last sacrificial anniversary of my teacher, I met a junior fellow apprentice who was mainly telling stories in Yanzhou Province. He told me that he had the same experience as me. As long as he told Legend of Black Iron Hero, he could also gain 10 gold coins a month in his bank account. As my junior fellow apprentice was younger and healthier than me, he was paid 12 gold coins that month by telling Legend of Black Iron Hero in the teahouses of towns outside the city where there was no storyteller. As a storyteller, the more you tell Legend of Black Iron Hero and more audience you have, the more money you will get..."

"Where can I buy the novel Legend of Black Iron Hero?"

"You could find it in all the bookstores in the city. Previously, there was only novel, now you can even buy a comic book..."

After knowing that he could not get any intelligence from the storyteller, Zhang Tie dropped a gold coin on the table. After that, he stood up and walked out of the room.

...

After Zhang Tie left the room for 2 minutes, the storyteller who was sitting quietly at the table suddenly quivered all over. He looked around the room in a vacant expression before uttering, "Ahh, what's wrong with me? Why am I here? Shouldn't I have returned home? Why am I drinking tea here?"

...

After leaving the teahouse, Zhang Tie felt that this event was a bit weird. Besides being confused about that, he felt deeply moved. Therefore, he took a walk on the street and looked for a bookstore.

Only after a few minutes, Zhang Tie had found a bookstore and entered it.

"Boss, do you have Legend of Black Iron Hero ?"

The clerk pointed at a bookshelf a few meters away.

Zhang Tie walked over there and noticed a very delicate novel Legend of Black Iron Hero in the most eye-catching place. Beside it, there was a set of many delicate comic books of Legend of Black Iron Hero. At the sight of the figures on the cover of the comic book, Zhang Tie felt it was very interesting. Therefore, he stretched out his hand to take it. Out of his imagination, another person on his side also stretched out her hand to take the same comic book. Therefore, their hands pressed on the same book.

Zhang Tie turned around and saw a pair of beautiful, big and black eyes...

A young lady in many precious headwears was watching him with a strong 7-8-year-old boy in her hand.

At the sight of this woman, Zhang Tie was shocked inside because she was Lv Shasha, his junior fellow apprentice on Hidden Dragon Island...

# Chapter 1026: Being Always Together

---

Zhang Tie's memory returned to Hidden Dragon Island where he met Lv Shasha for the first time.

When he saw Lv Shasha for the first time, she was crying and said that she missed her home and her mother so much while Du Yuhan was comforting her.

In Zhang Tie's memory, Lv Shasha was always the most shy and sensitive one among his junior sister apprentices. As there was a bit misunderstanding between him and her, this bashful junior sister apprentice was even afraid of him for quite a long time. Although being together with a lot of junior sister apprentices, Lv Shasha still dared not see Zhang Tie face-to-face each time...

He met Lv Shasha and the other junior sister apprentices in Jinwu Castle of Hidden Dragon Island last time. At that time, he and his junior sister apprentices were all drunk. After performing a fist position and a swordsmanship and reciting a poem, Zhang Tie broke his double fish swords by battle qi as his "unique" gift to these junior sister apprentices...

From then on, Zhang Tie didn't use double swords anymore.

That night, he drank too much. In his memory, Lv Shasha, Du Yuhan and Qu Liangying were all drunk. Many junior sister apprentices even cried...

That was the most beautiful and memorable night.

That night was very special.

The ever youth, the passionate, innocent, nice and simple emotions, those which were described and undescribed all turned into merry laughter and tears. After that night, all these had vanished in the battle flames of the holy war. After that, Zhang Tie went to the Selnes Theater of Operations being far away from Hidden Dragon Island and didn't see these junior sister apprentices

anymore...

A few years ago, when he returned to Youzhou Province, he heard that most of these junior sister apprentices had married others. Some of them like Guo Miaolu were still in hard-working cultivation as they wanted to further increase their battle strength...

Zhang Tie didn't bother those who had got married. As for those who were still in hard-working cultivation, Zhang Tie told Huaiyuan Palace to look after them stealthily. Zhang Tie didn't go to see them either. Something had better be buried deep in mind.

It was really out of his imagination that Zhang Tie could meet a junior sister apprentice in a bookstore of Xuantian City after many years later.

Lv Shasha was still as beautiful as before; however, she was more mature. The former innocent maiden had already become a young lady although she was still as reserved as before. That little boy's eyes and face was very similar to that of Lv Shasha. At the sight of the little boy, Zhang Tie knew that he's Lv Shasha's son.

Zhang Tie became a bit absent-minded as he had mixed moods inside...

The reason that Lv Shasha gazed at Zhang Tie with her widely opened eyes was that she had not imagined that a tough man could be interested in the comic book Legend of Black Iron Hero ; additionally, that large bamboo rain hat on Zhang Tie's head looked a bit weird.

'Is this man a lunatic?'

Before Zhang Tie withdrew his hand, Lv Shasha had already withdrawn her hand rapidly with a disgusted and terrified look. After that, she turned around and told her son, "Xiaozhi, let's take a look in other bookstore!"

When Lv Shasha said this, she pulled her son back a bit stealthily

in case of stirring up Zhang Tie.

"No, mom, I will read Legend of Black Iron Hero. We've been in many bookstores and they were all out of stock..."

"Hush!"

Zhang Tie revealed an embarrassed smile. As an earth knight, if the news that he quarreled with a little boy for a comic book in a bookstore was spread over, it would shock many people. Therefore, he took that comic book and gave it to that boy, "Here you go. I will read this version. I was just wondering that this novel had a comic book just now..."

As Zhang Tie said, he took the novel...

"Xiaozhi, say thanks to the uncle..."

"Thank you, uncle!" The boy called Zhang Tie in an innocent way when he received the comic book with a big smile.

"Ahh, you're welcome, you're welcome..."

Lv Shasha was still as reserved as before. Only after a brief dialogue with Zhang Tie, she had pulled her son away.

Zhang Tie was a bit thrilled. He wanted to say something; however, when he thought up his current status, he could only rub his face and see Lv Shasha off.

After dropping a gold coin, Zhang Tie took that novel and walked out of the bookstore.

Outside the bookstore, Lv Shasha and her son entered a black limo while a driver opened the door for them. At the sight of Zhang Tie coming out of the bookstore, the boy even waved his hand towards Zhang Tie.

'The origin of the license plate of the black limo is Xuantian City; it seems that Lv Shasha married someone in Xuantian City.'

A whim occurred to Zhang Tie's mind when a tracing feather shot out of his forehead and attached to the black limo.

The limo ran away leaving smoke...

Outside the bookstore, Zhang Tie skimmed over the novel. With his current spiritual energy, he could absolutely skim over 100 lines in one second. He could read one page and keep it deep in his mind as fast as taking a photo.

The main character of the novel was him. The story started from Blackhot City. The contents and framework of the novel were mainly based on his article "The Inscriptions on the Gravestone of the Despicable". Of course, there were artistic creations, processing and modifications.

After turning over 20 pages, Zhang Tie noticed a plot which he had not experienced——It was already dark when Zhang Tie finished his part-time job and was going back home. Suddenly, Zhang Tie saw a poor beggar lying on the roadside nearby the railway station of Blackhot City due to hunger. Out of sympathy, the kind youth bought a loaf of bread for the beggar from the nearby bakery. He had not imagined that the beggar was a powerhouse who just traveled across the human world with a cynical mind. After having the loaf of bread gifted by the youth, the beggar gifted a secret method to the youth and taught him how to use the unique secret disguising method. As a result, the youth immediately mastered the senior skills to change his looks...

When Zhang Tie read this plot, he could almost confirm it right away that the contents in this novel were not fully written by Mr. Jingan. This plot could only be fabricated by Donder because Zhang Tie's disguising skills were taught by Donder. Besides Donder, nobody else knew it; neither did Zhang Tie say it to others.

As an evidence, the image of Hua Boss Tang of a grocery in the novel was too excellent, he was handsome, generous and wise. In the novel, Boss Tang could be the model of all the middle-aged men. According to the description, Boss Tang was absolutely a philosopher who enjoyed the average life and the beacon light and

first teacher of Zhan Tie. Damn! What made Zhang Tie speechless was that Boss Tang was not horny at all, 'A female boss in Blackhot City even courted him by spending money on him, f\*ck...'

The plots about Zhang Tie at home were not fully fabricated out of the void, because only Zhang Tie's elder brother knew some details.

Zhang Tie understood it at once, 'It must be my elder brother and Donder who joined hands to clarify my innocence using Legend of Black Iron Hero.'

'It's definitely an unprecedented masterpiece for beautifying my personal image. All the storytellers across Taixia Country have become my pluggers. As long as I paid them some money, I would have numerous fans and adorers in Taixia Country. If the Supreme Court in Taixia Country doesn't cancel off my arrest order, Taixia government will lose many people's support and have to bear too much stress and condemnation.

The Legend of Black Iron Hero and the Inscriptions on the Gravestone of the Despicable once being coordinated with each other would resist numerous soldiers for Zhang Clan and Huaiyuan Palace.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could be as hot as the sun at high noon across Taixia Country after becoming a murderer.

'You must be kidding me.'

Although it looked ridiculous, it was real.

Over the past 4 years, although Zhang Tie was not at home and didn't even contact his family members, his family members and friends were always on his side. They were trying their best to clarify his innocence so that he could return to the public.

On the roadside, Zhang Tie spent less than 10 minutes in reading the entire story, regardless of the amazed looks of the passers-by.

The end of the story was about the merciless situation. After

fighting hundreds of millions of demonized puppets to the end in Waii Subcontinent, Zhang Tie came to Taixia Country. After being outstanding in the competition for the provincial governor of Youzhou Province for Zhang Taixuan and inflicting the Heavens Reaching Church, he was framed by demons and Heavens Reaching Church. Although he survived the trap with his own ability, he had to escape everywhere with the fabricated crime as a touching, tragical hero...

Such an end was very outraged. However, in the spirit of law worshiped by Taixia Country, the order of arrest issued by the Supreme Court of Taixia Country was irrevocable. Therefore, the end of this story tested the result of the wrestle between conscience and the spirit of the law in Taixia Country. Whether did you believe that the hero was still the hero or the dubious evidence was still effective?

After putting this novel which was of special meaning to him into his coat and sensing the current location of that limo, Zhang Tie strode towards the direction where the limo was leaving for...

...

Over 10 minutes later, Zhang Tie came to a tranquil and spacious avenue in the south of Xuantian City. After throwing some glances at the signboard "Sun Mansion", Zhang Tie strode away before arousing the attention of the guards.

It should be a major clan in Xuantian City. The small limo was right in the courtyard of Sun Mansion.

"Many people from all walks of life come to Xuantian city lately, as a young madam and young master have just come back from outside, you'd better be vigilant in case of any followers..."

"Yes, sir, Steward Sun. It's said that master wants the young master to learn from Fire Dragon Hermit. Young master is wise, he will definitely be recruited..."



"Such a major event has nothing to do with you. Watch out your mouth..." Steward Sun reproached a guard...

Although it was over 100 m away, the dialogue between some people at the gate of Sun Mansion still drifted into Zhang Tie's ears...

...

After hearing this, Zhang Tie felt a bit weird as he returned to his foothold in Xuantian City...

# Chapter 1027: Being as Boisterous as a Marketplace

---

Zhang Tie's foothold was in an official manor of Xuantian City. The moment Zhang Tie reached the periphery of that official manor, he had been startled by what he saw.

The periphery of that official manor had been crowded with limos and beautiful carriages. Both sides of the greater part of a street were crowded with people with various gifts.

"Oh, ministry councilor Liu, nice to meet you..."

"Is that Boss Qu..."

"Wuh, and landlord Gao..."

Although there were many people outside the official manor, they just waited there patiently and greeted and chatted with those familiar ones beside them in a low voice. Although they were standing outside the official manor, they were still followed by their bodyguards and stewards who were lifting many cases, large or small, which almost occupied half of the avenue outside the official manor.

"It's said that the mayor's steward is also queuing up ahead of us?" A person in brilliant silk gown in front of Zhang Tie was whispering to another guy who was queuing up.

"Even idiots would come, if not in the official uniform of Taixia Country and have been dispatched away from Xuantian City, I'm afraid that Lord Mayor has long been waiting here himself!"

"Yea, Fire Dragon Hermit is a qualified earth knight. It's said that he has made great meritorious deeds in the Earth-elements Realm and has even killed over 2 earth-level demon knights. He's very prestigious..."

"Have you seen the red airboat in the official manor? It's said that

Fire Dragon Hermit won it from a shadow knight elder of Taiyi Fantasy Sect through a bet. Unbelievable..."

"But I was told that Fire Dragon Hermit had killed almost 4 earth-level demon knights in the Earth-elements Realm..."

"Two of them didn't leave any evidence; therefore, they could not be counted in Fire Dragon Hermit's meritorious deeds. However, all the others had witnessed that..."

"According to your news, Fire Dragon Hermit should be the No. 1 powerhouse in Youzhou Province, more powerful than provincial governor..."

"Hush, watch out your words..."

Zhang Tie heard many whispers like this. The moment Zhang Tie wanted to push into the gate of the official manor, some bodyguards beside a fat ministry councilor instantly turned around and watched Zhang Tie with unpleasant looks before reproaching him, "Bro, don't you know about queuing up when you want to pay a formal visit to Fire Dragon Hermit?"

'F\*ck, this daddy has to queue up to return to my own residence?'

Zhang Tie watched those people dozens of meters in front of him and found that he could not explain it to these people clearly; therefore, he directly took off his bamboo hat and revealed his signboard "bald head" before shouting, "Liu Xing!"

The moment Zhang Tie shouted, those in front of him turned around and watched him at the same time.

"Be quiet before the manor of Fire Dragon Hermit!" An old man turned around and gave Zhang Tie a lesson like an experienced elder.

The moment the old man finished his words, the gate of the official manor was in an uproar while those queuing up in front of the gate hurriedly dodged away. At the same time, a team of black armored fighters rushed out of the gate and opened a way for

Zhang Tie by force.

Those who were queuing up outside the gate of the official manor hurriedly gave a way to the team of fighters with big smiles.

It was said that those fighters were all brave warriors from the top four armies in Taixia Country who had experienced bloody battles in the Earth-elements Realm. They were also Fire Dragon Hermit's entourage. Of course, those who were waiting outside the official manor dared not stir up them.

Under the amazed looks of so many people, the team of black armored fighters opened a way from the crowd and came all the way to Zhang Tie's front. The team leader was Liu Xing.

"Fire Dragon Hermit!"

At the sight of Zhang Tie, Liu Xing hurriedly gave a bow to Zhang Tie.

After hearing Liu Xing's words, everybody else at present widely opened their mouths like being filled with some duck eggs. The entire street was pretty quiet; especially those bodyguards and that old man who reproached Zhang Tie just now whose faces had blushed too much while they were quivering all over due to fear.

"What's wrong with these people?" Zhang Tie asked Liu Xing.

"They come from all the cities in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory. After knowing that Fire Dragon Bounty Hermit is living here, these people have sent requests to pay formal visits to Fire Dragon Bounty Hermit. As hermit is traveling outside these days, they just waited here!" Liu Xing answered.

Zhang Tie nodded silently as he directly came onto the steps of the gate of the official manor in the welcome of those black-armored fighters.

This official manor was the former official reception mansion of Xuantian City, which was especially used to receive dignitaries from other places. The Department of Protocol of Xuantian City

was also in this manor. The official manor was in the best location of Xuantian City; there was an airport in the official manor. The entire official manor was like a luxurious showplace in the city. It contained pavilions, terraces, venues, independent courts and hotels. Therefore, after coming to Xuantian City, Zhang Tie chose this place as his residence. Additionally, he chose this place to hold the opening ceremony of his Iron-Dragon Sect. As this place belonged to him, he had the right to dispose of it freely.

Standing on the steps of the gate, Zhang Tie looked at those people who were waiting outside the official manor. Those people then hurriedly bowed towards Zhang Tie. Nobody at present could straighten up. Zhang Tie found that there were over 1,000 people outside his official manor.

Given these people's clothes and demeanors, Zhang Tie knew that they were major clans and landlords in the 10 cities of Fire Dragon Bounty Territory. Of course, in front of an earth knight, the so-called landlords and major clans were as trivial as ants, because there was a sharp difference between them and Zhang Tie in power, position, battle strength and wealth.

However, killing was not the only element in this world because development is closely related to these people. After all, this world was composed of many commoners. Knights were just a small part of people on the top of the pyramid.

Zhang Tie's figure was as sturdy and tall as the Mighty Miracle God. Standing on the steps, he looked very dignified.

"Who among you excels at civil engineering, especially building palaces?" Zhang Tie put it straight.

Soon after Zhang Tie finished his words, a swarthy and rich middle-aged man at his 50s raised his hand at once when the others were still confused about Zhang Tie's intention.

"You're?"

"Fire Dragon Hermit, I'm Lu Yishan, the biggest shareholder of Threerocks Engineering Group in Dashang City, Gaoping Prefecture, Yanzhou Province. Threerocks Engineering Group has a long history and remarkable reputation. Being founded by my ancestor, it's qualified to build a Class I City in Taixia Country. We're good at civil engineering, especially building palaces!" Lu Yishan answered calmly although in a faintly quivering tone.

"Hmm, not bad, come here!" Zhang Tie waved his hand towards Lu Yishan.

In the admiring eye light, Lu Yishan held his breath and walked to Zhang Tie's side calmly and bowed towards Zhang Tie once again before standing respectfully on a place two steps lower than that of Zhang Tie on the latter's side.

As a result, Lu Yishan became outstanding among those visitors outside the official manor at once.

Seeing Lu Yishan standing on Zhang Tie's side, some representatives of engineering groups of some major clans felt pretty regretful. They had not imagined that they could miss such a good chance to approach Fire Dragon Hermit only after being faintly hesitated.

When those guys were hesitating whether would they raise their hands now, Zhang Tie opened his mouth once again.

"Who has an alcohol brewage plant among you?"

This time, 3 people raised their hands at once.

Even in this age, alcohol also had special functions. Besides being used as fuel for sports cars such as Faerie-dragon T9, alcohol could also be used in medical services and food processing, etc.. Therefore, it was reasonable for some clans in the 10 cities in Fire Dragon Territory to run alcohol brewage plant.

"Well, you three, come over here!" Zhang Tie called the three people to approach to him.

In the others' admiring looks, the three well-dressed people came to the steps below Zhang Tie.

"Who could produce machines?" Zhang Tie tossed out another question.

This time, 5 people raised their hands. Zhang Tie let all of them move to his side...

"Which clan is most disgusting?"

After hearing this question, all the others exchanged glances with each other. This time, nobody raised hands. At the same time, everybody moved their eyes onto an emaciated old man in a black robe unconsciously. The old man was standing in the crowd with a cold look; two servants were standing on his side with gift packages; although it was bustling in the surroundings, there was open land beside him.

Noticing that everybody else was looking at him, the old man hesitated. Finally, he raised his hand.

"Fine, you, come here!"

Under the amazed eyes, the old man moved to a step beside Zhang Tie. Standing alone on the other side of Zhang Tie, he looked unsocial.

"Which clan have the most servants and worship kindness in accordance with strict disciplines as well as enjoy the good reputation among the public?"

This time, people became hesitated once again. Many people wanted to raise their hands; however, after looking around and measuring their own deeds, they finally didn't raise their hands, except one person who gritted his teeth and raised his hand bravely.

"Who're you?"

"Hermit, this humble man is Wang Chongde, the master of Wang

Clan, Yushun Palace in Ningan City. Wang Clan is known for its strict disciplines. Although being not that famous, we warn our disciples and servants to behave meticulously every day. We would reflect our home disciplines three times a day since young. All of us protect living beings and never kill any animals. Wang Clan provides free porridge in Ningan City all the year round at the request of our ancestors. As long as Wang Clan have food to eat, we will keep providing free porridge all the year round. Therefore, after hearing Hermit's question, I recommend myself shamelessly. If Hermit thinks that I'm improper, please forgive me!" The one who raised his hand said in a flurried way.

"Since how many years has your clan provided free porridge in Ningan City?"

"Starting from this humble man's great-grandfather, Wang Clan has provided free porridge for 71 years, 8 months and 21 days ceaselessly in Ningan City, regardless of the weather!"

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter which could almost be heard across the city, "Good, Wang Clan of Yushun Palace. A kind family must have a good fortune. This hermit will bring a good fortune to your clan today so as to satisfy the God's will. Listen, now that Wang Clan could provide free porridge over 70 years constantly, 7 disciples of Wang Clan could enter my Iron-Dragon Sect. If they're talented, they could receive all the contents of my secret method Fire Dragon Hermit !

After hearing Zhang Tie's reply, the master of Wang Clan immediately knelt down on the ground and forcefully kowtowed towards Zhang Tie, "I, Wang Chongde, thanks to the great favor of Fire Dragon Hermit on behalf of the ancestors of Wang Clan!"

When he raised his head once again, Wang Chongde's forehead and eyes both turned red. Being extremely thrilled, he quivered all over.

"Hmm, come over here!"



Wang Chognde then picked himself up and patted dust off his clothes. Closely after that, he walked to Zhang Tie's side very respectfully.

At this moment, all the others threw their shocked eyes at Wang Chongde.

Nobody could imagine that Wang Clan, Yushun Palace in Ning'an City could have such a special treatment like a carp leaping into the dragon's gate.

However, the master of Wang Clan was right. Many people at present had heard about Wang Clan's disciplines. They all knew that he was telling the truth. Therefore, they couldn't find any fault with him.

"The others could leave!" Zhang Tie swung his sleeves as he led those people whom he had selected into his official manor...

# Chapter 1028: I Have My Own Consideration (I)

---

After entering the official manor, Zhang Tie took a seat in a parlor beside a brook. At Zhang Tie's order, Liu Xing and the other black-armored fighters brought those selected ones into an assembly hall and received them for the time being. After learning what happened here during these days when he left the official manor from Liu Xing, Zhang Tie told Liu Xing to bring them in the parlor one after another.

During the period when Zhang Tie left the official manor, the requests to pay formal visits to Zhang Tie had filled many baskets. It was polite for them to send requests to pay formal visits to Zhang Tie. Liu Xing and the other black-armored fighters didn't know Zhang Tie's will; therefore, they just received all the requests and waited for Zhang Tie's decision.

The one who was brought in the parlor first was Lu Yishan, the former greatest shareholder of Threerocks Engineering Group in Dashang City, Gaoping Prefecture, Yanzhou Province.

Although Fire Dragon Hermit was known as a dauntless hero, he was not rude. Therefore, Lu Yishan was not as intense as before. Although recovering his composure a bit, he still behaved meticulously in front of Zhang Tie.

"Take a seat!" Zhang Tie casually pointed at a chair in the parlor and told Lu Yishan, who was of his dad's age, to take a seat.

"Erm...I...I'd better stand up...in front of hermit!" Lu Yishan said carefully.

In Lu Yishan's eyes, Fire Dragon Hermit was almost on the same level as the provincial governor. In front of such an influential figure, of course, he dared not sit. It was already his great honor to be received by such an influential figure. It was honorable enough

for engineering groups like his to sit in the same room with the city mayor after many years' efforts, not to mention an earth knight.

"Cut the crap!" Zhang Tie glared at Lu Yishan.

"Yes, sir...yes, sir...yes, sir..." Lu Yishan was scared too much that he hurriedly sat down on the chair with a small half of his butt on the edge of the chair while putting his hands on his legs in a very docile look.

"Do you know why I fetch you here?" Zhang Tie asked Lu Yishan before throwing a glance at him.

After throwing a glance at Zhang Tie, Lu Yishan gritted his teeth and replied, "Does Fire Dragon Hermit want to build a Class I city in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory so as to set people's minds at rest?"

After hearing Lu Yishan's words, Zhang Tie became faintly stunned. Zhang Tie then replied, "You think this hermit wants to build a Class I city in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory?"

"I'm really happy that Hermit favors me. Therefore, I just put it straight. If it's improper, please forgive me !" Lu Yishan cupped his hands towards Zhang Tie.

"Go ahead. I will not blame you for whatever you say!" Zhang Tie waved his hand.

"If so, Lu Yishan will put it straightforward..." After recovering his composure, Lu Yishan answered, "It's said that Hermit has just come back from the Earth-elements Realm. With your status and position, you definitely know that Emperor Xuanyuan is missing. This event has been spread over the commoners. As the holy war has broken out, it's unstable both domestically and abroad. In the holy war, only solid cities and castles could set people's minds at rest. As there's not a Class I city in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory now, if you want to shape a supreme image in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory, I suggest you to build a Class I city!"

Lu Yishan's words were out of Zhang Tie's imagination. Zhang Tie had not imagined that the news that Emperor Xuanyuan was missing could be spread over the commoners in Taixia Country so fast. Even businessmen like Lu Yishan had known it and were thinking about the countermeasures. This was actually not good for Taixia Country as a whole. It indicated that the aftermath of the event that Emperor Xuanyuan was missing had just come to a start.

Actually, Zhang Tie did not fetch Lu Yishan to build a Class I city. However, Lu Yishan's words reminded Zhang Tie. From the perspective of a knight, it was almost the same whether there was a Class I city or not. However, in the holy war, Class I city was of a special meaning for commoners.

"What's the expense of a Class I city?"

"It depends. A basic Class I city which could meet all the indicators and functions would cost you 200 million gold coins to 250 million gold coins. More advanced Class I cities like some of the nine immortal provinces would cost far more 200 million gold coins as its functions and defense facilities are much better than Class I cities in Taixia Country after many generations' construction of a clan. There's actually not an upper limit for that. Additionally, since a few months ago, it had been spread over Taixia Country that Emperor Xuanyuan was missing. Therefore, the number of clans which would build Class I cities abruptly increased. Out of the demand, raw materials such as steel and cement are constantly rising. Now, it will cost over 15% more to build a Class I city than that a few months ago..."

Lu Yishan answered professionally.

The Saint Peterburg cost Zhang Tie 90 million gold coins as the most magnificent city across Ice and Snow Wilderness; however, any Class I city in Taixia Country would cost almost 200 million gold coins. What a sharp difference!

"Now that the number of clans which are going to build Class I cities abruptly increases, could you Threerocks Engineering Group receive an order to build a Class I city in Yanzhou Province?"

After hearing Zhang Tie's question, Lu Yishan's face turned embarrassed at once, "Hermit...erm...Hermit, you might not know that. In Taixia Country, those who could build Class I cities are all real major clans. The Class I cities built by these major clans are always be involved with the secrets of the clans, such as the arrangement of hidden ways and weapons. As these secrets were very sensitive and might be easily exposed to the public if they were contracted to outsiders; therefore, these Class I cities could only be built by their own engineering groups. Our Threerocks Engineering Group is mainly responsible for building official projects. We are doing some small projects, but we've not received any task on building Class I cities..."

Zhang Tie understood that the government in the provinces and prefectures would not build Class I cities in a big way at such a critical moment. Even the current building plans would be prolonged for the time being. Because of the news that the Emperor Xuanyuan was missing, the commoners started to be scared. If the government exerted its utmost to build Class I cities at this moment, it would make commoners more scared. Some cunning guys might even stir up trouble in Taixia Country with it.

Touching his bald head, Zhang Tie replied, "We need to build a Class I city; however, we should not do it right now. This Hermit wants to establish Iron-Dragon Sect first! Otherwise, it would be ridiculous if we didn't even have a foothold."

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Lu Yishan understood at once. He almost wanted to slap his own face. He only thought about the importance of a Class I city from his point of view; however, he forgot about the importance of Iron-Dragon Sect for Fire Dragon Sect, which was even more urgent than building a Class I city. Although he thought that he had opened his mind to Fire Dragon

Hermit; however, he was still too anxious for profit in Fire Dragon Hermit's eyes.

Lu Yishan revealed a bashful smile as he twisted his body restlessly and asked, "Hermit, where are you going to build Iron-Dragon Sect?"

"After looking around these couple days, I find that the Xuantian 18 mountain peaks in Yangui Mountain Range are very beautiful and magnificent. This Hermit wants to establish Iron-Dragon Sect based on Xuantian 18 mountain peaks..."

Standing in Xuantian City, people could look at the Yangui Mountain Range in the distance, especially the contour of the Xuantian 18 mountain peaks in Yangui Mountain Range. Therefore, this city was named Xuantian City.

These days, Zhang Tie was considering the location of Iron-Dragon Sect. Among the major sects in Taixia Country, besides Gold and Power Law, almost all the major sects were in famous mountains, rivers or isolated overseas islands. Some were even in very secret places. 'My Iron-Dragon Sect has to rely on a famous mountain or river too.' As Yangui Mountain was magnificent with a special terrain, Zhang Tie decided to establish Iron-Dragon Sect in Yangui Mountain Range. Given that Xuantian 18 mountain peaks were grotesque in Yangui Mountain Range, Zhang Tie chose it as the core of his Iron-Dragon Sect.

"Ahh, Hermit, do you really want to choose Xuantian 18 mountain peaks as the foundation of Iron-Dragon Sect?" Lu Yishan was amazed.

"Yes!" Zhang Tie nodded.

"How large do you want?"

After combining Lu Yishan's question with the discussion between two of them about building a Class I city, Zhang Tie had a bizarre thought. Zhang Tie recalled the surrounding terrain of

Xuantian 18 mountain peaks that he had seen in the air as he burst out into laughter at once.

"Hahahaha, your words remind me. How about making it large? Why not combine the territory of Iron-Dragon Sect with a Class I city? I mean building an unprecedented sect, also a mountainous city in Yangui Mountain with the benefit of its terrain. In the future, the population in Iron-Dragon Sect will be planned according to that of a basic Class I city. Of course, we can develop step by step..."

Lu Yishan was startled at once. Closely after that, his heart pounded. It was a tough challenge and a great opportunity for Threerocks Engineering Group.

"Hermit...do you really want me to undertake this project?" Lu Yishan asked in a timid way after forcefully swallowing his saliva. At this moment, he really didn't believe that Zhang Tie could entrust him to undertake such a "major event" only after chatting with him a short while. In other places and periods, Threerocks Engineers Group would spend a lot of time and efforts in getting such a big project.

"Cut the crap, who else if I don't let you do that?" Zhang Tie glared at Lu Yishan before putting it straightforwardly, "You will take charge of this project. Don't waste my time. I will pay you according to the market price. If you could accomplish it perfectly, you will have an award..."

Lu Yishan immediately sprung up from his chair and bowed deeply to Zhang Tie. He felt being moved and impulsive like how a person would die for the one who favored him as he said, "Our Lu Clan in Dashang City will definitely live up to Hermit's trust even at the cost of our lives..."

# Chapter 1029: I Have My Own Consideration (II)

---

Soon after Lu Yishan left with excitement, Liu Xing had brought in another 3 people.

They all had private alcohol breweries.

Like Lu Yishan, the three people also behaved very meticulously when they entered.

The slightly younger one was more than 30 years old, the other two were at their 50s. All of them behaved politely and looked rich.

Zhang Tie told them to sit. After exchanging a glance with each other, the three guys also put a small half of their butts on the edges of their chairs in a very meticulous way like how Lu Yishan did.

"Well, you can introduce yourselves now!" Zhang Tie said as he waved his hand.

"Hermit, this humble man is Fang Tong, the master of Fang Clan in Qinghe City!" The eldest one stood up on his own initiative and introduced himself after throwing a glance at the other two.

"Do you have a private alcohol brewery?"

"Fang Clan indeed have an alcohol brewery in Qinghe City!"

"How large?"

"It could produce over 2,000 tons of alcohol each year!" Fang Tong answered respectfully when he just lowered his head and looked at the ground.

"Hmm, not bad, take a seat!" Zhang Tie nodded.

After Fang Tong sat down, another 50-year old guy in a blue silk robe picked himself up.

"Hermit, this humble man is Chen Zihui, from Chen Clan,



Muqing Palace, Langyun City. I'm the younger brother of Chen Zihao, the master of Chen Clan. As my elder brother is in Guanzhou Province, he could not come back to pay a formal visit to Hermit on time; after knowing that Hermit is arriving at Xuantian City, he especially told me to come to Xuantian City to learn from Hermit on behalf of Chen Clan!"

After throwing a glance at Chen Zihui, Zhang Tie revealed a smile, 'This guy is really talkative.'

"Do you also produce alcohol?"

"Chen Clan has produced alcohol for over 50 years. We could produce over 40,000 tons a year!"

"Hmm, take a seat!" Zhang Tie nodded.

After Chen Zihui sat down, the youngest one hurriedly stood up. After bowing deeply to Zhang Tie, he opened his mouth, "This humble man is Li Tao, the head of Zhongpin Business Group in Dongyang City!"

Zhang Tie threw two glances at Li Tao and found that he was a shrewd and able man with flickering eyes. Additionally, he had already reached LV 13 4-star battle general and was one with the greatest battle strength among the 3 people.

"You're not a native of Dongyang City, right?"

"I really admired your insight, Hermit, this humble man is indeed not a native of Dongyang City. This humble man comes from Li Clan, Wansheng Palace, Wuhua Prefecture, Zhuozhou Province. As I'm a branch of Li Clan and the second son in my family, I went out to survive myself and expand undertakings outside after becoming mature. Fortunately, I have some undertakings in Dongyang City. I have a business group and a small alcohol brewery which could produce 1,000 tons of alcohol a year."

'Li Clan from Wansheng Palace?' Zhang Tie's heartbeat

accelerated faintly when he recalled the major clans in Taixia Country, 'Li Clan is a major clan in Zhuozhou Province. Li Clans are all very famous in Taixia Country. It's even more powerful than Huaiyuan Palace. In such a large clan, as there are too many descendants from branches, not each of them could be well taken care of. Therefore, such a clan would encourage young descendants to establish undertakings outside. Li Tao must be one of them. There are many people like Li Tao in Huaiyuan Palace.'

'However, even after coming from major clans in Taixia Country, not each of these clan descendants who established undertakings outside could make a success. Sometimes, the signboard of major clans just granted them with a background of a young member of a family holding official rank for generations. There were numerous youngsters like this. If they wanted to establish some undertakings, they had to exert their utmost efforts. Big billows beat the sands, many young men who had the background of major clans could achieve nothing after making efforts many years in Taixia Country. By contrast, Li Tao is an able man as he could establish a bit undertaking in Dongyang City. Even guys like Zhu Dabiao was almost stewed alive by Master Jiang when he came to Youzhou Province for investment with the background of the grandson of the provincial governor of Yanzhou Province.'

Zhang Tie nodded and told Li Tao to sit down.

"I'm a straightforward man. I need your favor!"

"Hermit, what can I do for you?" Fang Tong asked as he slightly inclined forward.

"I will build an alcohol brewery in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory. Hmm, it's a bit large..." Touching his bald head, Zhang Tie continued, "Precisely, it should be an alcohol production base. As you're all running alcohol breweries and are familiar with this industry, I want you three to do that for me!"

"How large do you want, Hermit?" Chen Zihui asked as he was a

bit shocked by the word "base".

"At least 500,000 tons of alcohol a year!" Zhang Tie answered casually.

After hearing the figure, Chen Zihui and Fang Tong were startled so much that they almost slid off their chairs when their mouths could almost hold a duck's egg.

"5...500,000...tons?" Fang Tong would treat it as a joke if it was not from Zhang Tie's mouth. At this moment, there was not even an alcohol production plant that could produce over 100,000 tons of alcohol a year across Taixia Country. If this plant was founded, it must be the largest one in Taixia Country. However, it might also be a joke in the end...

"What? You cannot do it?" Zhang Tie looked a bit solemn.

"We can, but..." Fang Tong became silent after looking at the other two.

"Go ahead..."

"If so, this humble man will put it straight. If Hermit wants to build an alcohol production base which could produce 500,000 tons of alcohol a year, we will have no technical problems as technologies on this aspect have been very advanced; however, after the alcohol production base is established, it might not run smoothly!" Fang Tong said while gritting his teeth.

"What do you mean by not run smoothly?"

"Hermit, you might not know much about business. In the industry, we have to consider the market demands. There's not such a large market in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory the neighboring Youzhou Province, Tongzhou Province and Yanzhou Province. Now, the alcohol production capability and market in the three provinces are already saturated. The fluctuations in both supplies and demands are very small; additionally, the profit of alcohol in the three provinces has reached its lowest limit. Take

Fang Clan's alcohol brewery as an instance, after deducting the depreciative cost of equipment and the cost of labor forces, the profit of alcohol of Fang Clan is only 4% these years. Additionally, as long as the transportation distance is over 600 miles, our profit will reduce to zero. If our alcohol was transported to other places, it would become very expensive plus the cost of transportation. As a result, it could not match the alcohol that's produced in the other places. Even if we make a discount, we will sustain loss too. The more we produce, the more we will lose. Even if you could afford it for the time being, you could not afford it forever. It's the law of market, therefore..."

Fang Tong stopped because he had made it clear. It wasn't a problem for them to produce an alcohol production base which could produce 500,000 tons of alcohol a year; the problem was that such an amount of alcohol could not be consumed in the region within 600 miles with Fire Dragon Bounty Territory as the center. Such a production base would definitely sustain a loss; the more it produced, the more it would lose. Therefore, the three people didn't promise Zhang Tie at once.

Based on Fire Dragon Hermit's social status, it was normal for him to not know much about business. Nobody dared mock him. However, the three people understood it. Because they were alcohol producers and had been in this industry for so many years. They must know this industry clearly. If they ruined the task assigned by Fire Dragon Hermit, they would not bear it. It was not a joke. If Fire Dragon Hermit mistook that the three people were cheating him, they could only chop off their own heads so as to seek for the forgiveness of Fire Dragon Hermit.

After hearing Fang Tong's words, Zhang Tie revealed a smile. As he grew up in a family which sold rice brew and always did a part-time job in a grocery when he was young, of course, Zhang Tie knew the relationship between the cost of the commodity and the market capacity. Of course, these people didn't know about his

background.

After looking around Fire Dragon Bounty Territory these days, Zhang Tie saw exuberant corn fields in the wild as it was August. As corns were drought-resistant, worms-proof with a high yield, many places in the north of Taixia Country were planting corns; especially in the provinces of Northeast Military Region. After the holy war broke out, out of the demand of the war, many places started to expand the planting area of corns. Across Fire Dragon Bounty Territory, the corn plantation area almost reached 1 million hectares.

Through Zhang Tie's preliminary calculation, the over 1 million hectares of corn fields could produce over 12 million tons of maize straws in total in the standard that each mu of land could produce 800 kgs' maize straws.

Previously, most of these maize straws would be burned by local framers after summer harvest; only a few parts of them would serve as fuels in rural areas. A small part of fresh maize straws could also serve as fodder. However, generally, over 80 of maize straws were burned and used to fertilize the arable lands.

Two months later, when the autumn began, black smokes caused by burning maize straws would be seen everywhere in the fields of Fire Dragon Bounty Territory.

'Although maize straws are useless to others, they are valuable to me.'

'Because nobody could imagine that I have gained the latest variant of essential-energy aura yeast. I could produce high-power alcohol only with maize straws...'

# Chapter 1030: I Have My Own Consideration (III)

---

With maize straw as the raw material of alcohol, the cost of the same amount of alcohol was only 0.01 times that of the others.

'On average, with only 4 tons of maize straws, I would be able to produce 1 ton of high-power alcohol and two more tons of special plant fiber pulp. Those special plant fiber pulp could be used to make paper and paperboards. Additionally, they could be even used to make burning rods and balls like honeycomb coal after being mixed with some pulverized coal and coal cinders. Finally, after the 4 tons of maize straws finished their chemical reactions, besides alcohol and plant fiber pulp, I could get hundreds of kgs' organic fertilizers.'

Heller only presented Zhang Tie the most valuable alcohol in Castle of Black Iron.

'Even if I could only take advantage of half of the deserted maize straws in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory each year, I would gain over 1 million tons of high-power alcohol, over 2 million tons of special plant fiber pulp which could be used as fuel or made into paper boards and hundreds of thousands of high-power organic fertilizers a year.'

What a profitable business!

A whole set of industrial chains could be fully developed centered on maize straws.

'Such a cheap high-power alcohol doesn't have a good market? Even if it's used to make incendiary bombs, its supply will definitely fall short of its demand. I don't need to worry about its sales volume at all, not to mention that this is a high-effective clean energy.'

Compared to Waii Subcontinent, alcohol could be used in more

industries in Taixia Country, not to mention its users. For instance, the automobiles being driven by alcohol on the highways in Taixia Country definitely outnumbered that in Waii Subcontinent.

'As an alcohol with a higher fuel value, even if I only added it into the common alcohol appropriately, the thermal energy and fuel value of the common alcohol would increase greatly. With such a mixed alcohol as a fuel, those automobiles with external combustion engines would have better performance and could run farther at the cost of less fuel. It's priceless, not to mention that I could develop tentative machines.'

'As for the plant fiber pulp, whether it's used to make paper or combustibles, it would have a great advantage in cost. It's always profitable.'

'As for the organic fertilizer, it could be taken as extra gains.'

'With the trivial mutated essential-energy aura yeast, I could reach a paramount position in Taixia Country once again...'

'However, it's unnecessary for me to explain it to Fang Tong and the other two guys. I only need them to follow my orders and accomplish the tasks for me.'

The latest variant of the essential-energy aura yeast enabled Zhang Tie to understand another law——never look down upon any trivial matters or lives. Because the values of the trivial matters or lives might only be judged by the creator. It's these trivial matters or lives that bring him to higher realms constantly, such as earthworms, sand-scale fish and yeast.

"You don't need to worry about the sales volume of alcohol. You only need to establish the alcohol production base according to my requests. Additionally, I will make some modifications to the fermentation process of alcohol production..." Zhang Tie said as he directly took out the drawings of the alcohol reactor that had been designed by Edward, Aziz and Agan from Castle of Black Iron. In

order to adapt to the fermentation of maize straws, the new reactor was different than common ones on its inlet and outlet. This new reactor has three outlets in different shapes in three locations, which corresponded to alcohol, plant fiber pulp and organic fertilizer respectively.

When Fang Tong and Chen Zihui were confused about Zhang Tie's request, Li Tao, who had been silent, immediately stood up and promised Zhang Tie, "This humble man will definitely live up to your trust and accomplish Hermit's task at the fastest speed with the best quality!"

Zhang Tie threw a glance at Li Tao as he thought inside, 'The young man who leaves his major clan to establish his own undertaking is really more enterprising than the others. Fang Tong and Chen Zihui might still be thinking about how to persuade me; however, Li Tao has already stood out. This man is more decisive and enterprising, which is what I need urgently now. As to the other two, now that they've missed the good opportunity, they could only blame themselves for that.'

"Well, you will be responsible for this task. Let's make the address of the alcohol production base neighbor Gaoping Prefecture in Yanzhou Province within Fire Dragon Bounty Territory. I only have one request——leave space for renovation and expansion near the base!"

As Yanzhou Province was the hub of Northeast Military Region, with Commander Cheng on its back, those who were jealous about the alcohol production base would not dare destroy it easily. This was why Zhang Tie chose this place as the address of the alcohol production base.

The reason that he told Li Tao to leave space for expansion and renovation near the base lay in that Zhang Tie was not sure about the ultimate purpose of the plant fiber pulp in the future. As Zhang Tie had not seen the paper being made of the plant fiber pulp, he had to leave space for building a paper pulp production base



neighboring the alcohol production base. If the fact was that the paper being made of the plant fiber pulp was not competitive in Taixia Country, he would teach common farmers to mix the plant fiber pulp with pulverized coal and coal cinders and make them into honeycomb coal themselves. He didn't need that bit of money at all.

After Li Tao walked forward, Zhang Tie gave him the drawings of the alcohol reactor. Li Tao took it with two hands in a very respectful manner. Closely after that, Zhang Tie asked him, "How much do you need to build this alcohol production base?"

"Although the production and fermentation equipment of alcohol are huge, they are produced in many plants across Taixia Country. Therefore, they are not expensive. We can customize them in plants. As it's in the territory of Hermit, the land rent fee will be free. We only need 5 million gold coins to build it!" Li Tao replied calmly as his eyes flickered, "Although I'm not in the army, after promising Hermit to do that, it's as effective as a military pledge. I'd like to press my fingerprints on a military pledge. If I could not accomplish it with 5 million gold coins, I would chop off my own head!"

Zhang Tie appreciated the attitude of this disciple of Li Clan very much as Li Tao had a dauntless spirit, which was urgently needed on the battlefield.

"How long do you need?" Zhang Tie asked.

"4 months!"

"How about 3 months?"

Li Tao clenched his fist as he looked a bit solemn and nodded forcefully. At the same time, he squeezed some words out of his teeth, "3 months!"

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter as he instantly took out a pile of gold checks, each of which was worth 100,000 gold coins. After

that, Zhang Tie said, "Here are 5 million gold coins. If you could accomplish it in 3 months, I will promise you a bright future so that you could return to your hometown and Wansheng Palace with wealth and fame one day. Even the Li elders of Wansheng Palace will treat you politely!"

"Thank you, hermit!" Li Tao looked faintly surprised. Closely after that, he took Zhang Tie's gold checks and returned to his own seat while bowing his body.

In the past couple of minutes, Fang Tong and Fang Zihui just watched what happened in front of them like onlookers. Watching Zhang Tie deliver the task of building an alcohol production base to Li Tao and Li Tao promise to accomplish this task at the cost of his life in a brief talk, the two people felt like dreaming.

"Well, you can leave..." Zhang Tie waved his hand.

Until they heard Zhang Tie's last words did Fang Tong and Chen Zihui wake up from the dream.

'We can leave? It has nothing to do with me?'

Looking at Zhang Tie who was drinking tea at his seat and slightly quivering his throat, Chen Zihui wanted to say something else; however, Liu Xing had already appeared in front of 3 of them and made a hand gesture to invite them to leave.

Finally, Fang Tong and Chen Zihui were taken out of the parlor with a confused look by Liu Xing.

After leaving the parlor, being stimulated by the sunlight, Fang Tong and Chen Zihui woke up at once. At this moment, the three people had been over 50 m away from the parlor and were walking in the garden near the brook in the official manor. There were so many willows on both sides of the brook. When the breeze blew by, the twigs of the willows started to swing. After waking up, Fang Tong and Chen Zihui both felt that their moods were as vacant as those twigs of willows.

"Boss Li, why did you..." Fang Tong watched Li Tao with widely opened eyes.

Watching the two people, Li Hui knew what they were wondering as he asked in reply, "Does your clans have earth knights?"

After exchanging a glance with each other, Fang Tong and Chen Zihui shook their heads.

"What do you mean?"

Li Tao replied with a smile, "Li Clan of Wansheng Palace has an earth knight. He's the grand elder of our clan. Previously, my position in Li Clan was not remarkable; I didn't even have a chance to meet the grand elder since I was young. Although I've not met him, I have known one thing since young; it's also what my first teacher taught me!"

"What's that thing?"

"If you're not an earth knight, never conjecture what an earth knight is thinking about from your view. Because the world of earth knights is different than that of us. It's said that earth knights are worshiped as deities in subcontinents or remote lands. An earth knight's experience, opinions, ability and realm are absolutely out of a commoner's imagination. As a commoner below knight level, we'd better be modest in front of an earth knight. Many times, what you think and concern about are nothing but a joke in the eyes of an earth knight! There's a proverb in the Western Continent that the moment humans think, the God will laugh. Actually, it might be more proper if this proverb was changed into the moment commoners think, the earth knight will laugh..."

When Fang Tong and Chen Zihui were still considering about Li Tao's reply, Li Tao had already cupped his hands towards the two people as he said, "As this humble man has to accomplish the emergency task assigned by the Hermit, I have to leave Xuantian

City right now. See you!"

After saying that, Li Tao had strode away, leaving Fang Tong and Chen Zihui standing still there with a confused look.

In the parlor, although being far away, Zhang Tie had heard all the words that Li Tao told the other two people.

Zhang Tie let out a sigh inside, 'What a Li Clan! Although being just a branch disciple, being immersed in the deep background of the clan since young, his talent could really not be matched by commoners. As long as there's a chance, he will be able to catch it.'

This implied the deep background of major clans! Those clans without any earth knight would never know about the realm and world of earth knights. A commoner should never worry about what an earth knight stuck to. If not having his own considerations, how could an earth knight make important decisions?

When Fang Tong and Chen Zihui were still standing still in confused looks, the third batch of people had passed by them and walked towards the parlor where they had just left. Some familiar ones even hailed them on the way; however, they found that Fang Tong and Chen Zihui were disappointed and absent-minded.

After quite a while, Chen Zihui shook his head as he revealed a bitter smile and cupped his hands towards Fang Tong before saying, "Brother Fang, this time, we might really have missed a good opportunity. When my elder brother comes back, I even don't know how to explain it to him...the young man is really regarded with respect...alas...see you..."

# Chapter 1031: An Epoch-making Invention

---

Among the last batch of 5 people, Zhang Tie was attracted by the last person's introduction.

That was a young man at his 20s. Behaving elegantly, he looked a bit familiar.

"This humble man is Sun Qiming, from Hongyuan Business Group, Xuantian City; nice to see you, Fire Dragon Hermit!"

'Surnamed Sun?'

Zhang Tie suddenly figured out why this man looked familiar. Because this man's face reminded Zhang Tie of the boy's face on Lv Shasha's side. After looking at him carefully, Zhang Tie confirmed it that this Sun Qiming was the very husband of Lv Shasha, his junior sister apprentice.

'What a coincidence! Honestly, this Sun Qiming should also call my senior brother apprentice like Lv Shasha.'

After looking at Sun Qiming for a short while, Zhang Tie's voice turned kinder, "Do you Sun Clan also excel at making mechanical equipment?"

"I dare not tell a lie in front of Hermit. Hua people in Taixia Country ranks top among humans in making machines. There are talents in this line across Taixia Country. Although our Sun Clan is slightly dwarfed by the major business groups and clans which rank top in making machines in Taixia Country, our clan has also been in this line for many generations. We still excel at making machines. Our clan mainly sells several types of locomotives, many kinds of mini steam laches and some steam city-defense equipment. Our machines branded Hongyuan are well-known in Youzhou Province, even across the Northeast Military Region. They're also greatly favored by many old customers." Sun Qiming answered meticulously after hearing Zhang Tie's question.

Through his reply, he implied Sun Clan's advantages in making machines and didn't offend the other 4 clans at present.

"Now that Sun Clan has been immersed in this line for so many years, I have a question for you. Could you tell me about the difference between steam-driven machines and the machines with internal combustion engines which were popular before the Catastrophe?"

Sun Qiming replied modestly and seriously. Actually, any lad who had joined this industry could answer this question. Even though, nobody at present dared say that Fire Dragon Hermit was naive.

"The machines which were driven by internal combustion engines before the Catastrophe have more strengths than steam-driven machines, such as being smaller in size, lighter, more powerful, rapidly ignited and widely applied. That's why humans preferred internal combustion engines than steam-driven engines before the Catastrophe."

Zhang Tie nodded as he continued, "In your opinion, where do you think an internal combustion engine could work most effectively?"

"The technologies about internal combustion engines have been mature over 1,000 years ago. It's actually not difficult for us to make a perfect internal combustion engine with the modern technologies. What is difficult is that there's no suitable fuel for internal combustion engines. Although we've lost the possibility to continue to drive internal combustion engines, as we still pursue the high power and efficiency of internal combustion engines in this age, we've developed external combustion engines, which combine the features of steam engines and internal combustion engines with burning alcohol as the indirect driving force for steam cycle. Even though, it still could not match that of internal combustion engines in purposes as it's only limited to few limos, some city-defense equipment which requires rapid response and

gears of some difference engines."

After sensing Zhang Tie's pleasant attitude when he asked the representative of Sun Clan, the other guys threw admiring looks at Sun Qiming at the same time. They wondered why Fire Dragon Hermit was interested in Sun Qiming.

'Honestly, although Sun Clan is a bit well known in making machines, it is not better than the other clans in Youzhou Province in this line. Why doesn't Fire Dragon Hermit ask me about that? Is that because that Sun Qiming opened his mouth in the end? If so, I would not have been that positive.'

The representatives of the other four clans just sat aside and listened to the conversation between Sun Qiming and Fire Dragon Hermit carefully. Besides sighing with emotions inside that Sun Clan was fortunate, none of them dared express their dissatisfaction.

As a great artisan master, Zhang Tie was almost on behalf of the highest craftsmanship in steam engines. As long as a great artisan master had enough time, he could create a steam civilization himself. Of course, Zhang Tie had long known about the knowledge that Sun Qiming replied. Not only that, he even knew it better than Sun Qiming. Zhang Tie didn't expect to get an answer from Sun Qiming; instead, he just wanted to see whether Lv Shasha's husband was reliable and could undertake the heavy burden that he would assign to Sun Clan.

"Hehe, I mean if we could drive machines by internal combustion engines, what sort of internal combustion engine do you want to develop?"

After hearing Zhang Tie's question, Sun Qiming immediately replied, "As it's in the holy war, humans are in a life or death situation. If we could have this sharp weapon, of course, we should apply it in human armies so that we could fight demons; protect your man and homeland!"

"Hahahaha..." Zhang Tie burst out into laughter generously. 'Although Sun Qiming looks gentle and humble, he's also hot-blooded on the other aspect. He matches junior sister apprentice Lv. No wonder they got married, "I like your answer. Come here, take a look at this."

Zhang Tie took out a roll of drawing from Castle of Black Iron.

As for a person like Fire Dragon Hermit, it was not weird for him to have a space-teleportation equipment. The moment the roll of drawing appeared in Zhang Tie's hand, two of the five people who hadn't seen a space-teleportation equipment were shocked. Because of this, they were more awe-stricken to Zhang Tie.

Right under the extremely admiring gazes of the other four people, Sun Qiming stood up and came to Zhang Tie's front in a bit restrained way. After that, he took Zhang Tie's drawing by two hands.

The moment he got the drawing, he had known that it was a very regular and professional mechanic design drawing from its familiar texture and weight. As there were strict requests on the texture, drawing methods and specifications of mechanic design drawings, they could not be casually drawn. Those plots that design drawings could be drawn easily in novels were nothing but sh\*t.

"You can open the drawing over the table!" Zhang Tie pointed at a rectangular table in the parlor before throwing a glance at the other 4 guys who had long moved their eyes onto the drawing, "Don't sit there, come here for discussion!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's order, the other four guys flurriedly moved their small half of butts away from the chairs and opened the drawing together with Sun Qiming before watching it carefully.

That was a real complete mechanic design drawing instead of a draft. It even included various parameters and raw materials.



At the sight of that blueprint, they had identified that it was a design drawing of an 8-cylinder internal combustion engine.

The 8 cylinders, the reciprocating piston and the connecting rod had immediately reminded insiders that it was a blueprint of an internal combustion engine. Those who were familiar with the structures of internal combustion engines could see the waste supercharging device on the drawing at once.

However, it was not a common design drawing of an internal combustion engine because it was different than the common internal combustion engines in people's mind in many aspects.

When he looked at the design drawing, Sun Qiming's face turned weird at first; closely after that, his face turned surprised; finally, he turned very solemn.

The largest difference between this internal combustion engine and the common internal combustion engines was that the 8 cylinders on the design drawing were more like combustion chambers of a boiler than cylinders because the external layer of the 8 cylinders was hollow and filled with water. To a certain degree, the cylinders where the reciprocating pistons moved inside became the combustion chambers of an external combustion engine. When alcohol was burning inside, it would heat up the water layer outside the cylinders and produce steam power.

Sun Qiming slid his fingers across the design drawing slowly attentively. At the same time, he was imagining the operating condition of this engine. All of a sudden, Sun Qiming quivered all over as he got hang of the essence of this design drawing at once...

"Haven't you figured it out?" The moment Zhang Tie opened his mouth, he shocked the 5 people instantly, who hurriedly bowed and pushed themselves away from the table.

"We're too slow-witted and couldn't figure out the design mindset of this set of engine!" One person replied in an embarrassed way.

"Although this engine looks like an internal combustion engine, it looks more like an external combustion engine; therefore..." One person said slowly.

"This design didn't appear before and after the Catastrophe..."

Zhang Tie smiled as he raised his hand. The others hurriedly became quiet. Closely after that, Zhang Tie started to slide his fingers over the design drawing, "This set of machine is indeed unprecedented. It's a wholly new design. The idea of this design combines the essence of internal combustion engines before the Catastrophe and the essence of steam-driven force after the Catastrophe. Of course, you've not seen that before. It could be an 8-cylinder internal combustion engine and an external combustion engine with 8 combustion chambers. I name it..." Zhang Tie hesitated a bit as if he was recalling its name, "I name it dull-drive, full heat-power, high-effective driving system, briefly, dual-drive engine..."

# Chapter 1032: The Iron of Iron-Dragon Sect (I)

---

'Dual-drive engine?'

If it was told by an engineer, the 5 people in the parlor would not be surprised; however, it was told by Fire Dragon Hermit...

Watching Zhang Tie's tower-like figure which was as powerful as a violence machine in ancient times and his bald head which only lacked the slogan "I'm the boss", the 5 people in the room widely opened their mouths at the same time.

"Did...did...Hermit...invent it?"

The eldest man in the room asked Zhang Tie with a dumbfounded look.

"Yup, don't I look like a scholar? Knights should be muscled with the simple mind?" Zhang Tie goggled at the old man. The old man immediately felt an overwhelming stress and almost had a pee.

"No...no...I didn't mean that...I mean...Hermit..."

Being intense, the old man stammered. Only in a few seconds, the old man's forehead had been covered with big sweat drops.

"Hermit, please forgive us. Clan head Yan means that the one who could design this machine is definitely a top expert in this line. As we've not seen such a knight who excels at making machines, after Hermit took out the design drawing, we all admire you; at the same time, we are shocked too much as we've not imagined that Hermit is able to weld both the pen and the force. Amazing!"

It was Sun Qiming who helped the old man explain.

After hearing Sun Qiming's explanation, the old man who was still extremely jealous about Sun Qiming just now threw a glance at him out of gratitude immediately. At the same time, he wiped

off the sweat from his forehead and hurriedly nodded, "Yes, yes, that's what I meant. Hermit's talents...are too admirable!"

Actually, after entering the parlor, the 5 people had been in a competitive state. Even though, Sun Qiming still hoped to give the old man a favor when he was in trouble. Given this point, Zhang Tie found that Sun Qiming was benevolent and tolerant. Therefore, Zhang Tie felt that this man matched his junior sister apprentice Lv Shasha pretty well.

"Hmm, glad you mean that!" Zhang Tie nodded as he threw a glance at Sun Qiming and said, "Before promoting to a knight, I've been interested in the dynamic system very much. After promoting to a knight, due to my great spiritual energy, I could skim over 10 lines in one second and remember all the contents that I've ever read. After learning the predecessors' experience and knowledge, I even made a great breakthrough in this aspect..."

Actually, because of the greater longevity and spiritual energy of knights, knights in Taixia Country excelled at many aspects such as music, art and painting; however, as their military exploits were greater and more influential than that in these aspects, knights were usually known as great fighters.

It was not strange that a knight excelled at making machines; if a knight could keep this interest for 100 years, he or she would definitely become a top expert in this industry. As none of those at present knew Zhang Tie's real age, they were shocked by Zhang Tie's invention too much.

"We're too slow-witted, Hermit, please reveal the secret of this machine to us..." Sun Qiming bowed deeply towards Zhang Tie.

"Well, I will tell you about the key parts of this machine!" Zhang Tie replied as he turned solemn and started to make an introduction to these people referring to the design drawing.

This dual-drive engine was very important for Zhang Tie. Now that the 5 people at present were selected to produce this machine,

if they didn't figure out the designing mindset and the key technical principles, they would face problems for sure. Therefore, it's necessary for him to introduce it to them.

"Someone of you said that this machine was an internal combustion engine, yet more like an external combustion engine. It's right. This machine is really both an internal combustion engine and an external combustion engine because it has the essences of the both!" Zhang Tie pointed at the cylinders on the design drawing and said, "The designing essence is on the cylinders..."

"As the traditional internal combustion engine before the Catastrophe would give out a great amount of heat when in combustion, the entire engine would be in a very high temperature, which would further impact the running of the engine. Therefore, engines before the Catastrophe had to be matched with various water-cooling systems or wind-cooling systems so as to lower the temperature of the engine when running. As for many internal combustion engines before the Catastrophe, after they were lit a few minutes, the temperature of the water which was used to lower the temperature of the engine would rise rapidly, even boil up. As for people before the Catastrophe, it was pretty normal!"

"According to the literature about engines before the Catastrophe, in a period before the Catastrophe, drivers of small-power tractors with only dozens of power horses would always take three items: the handle of the engine, which was used to run the tractor; second, a huge water tank, which was used to lower the temperature of the cooling system of the tractor in case that the engine would be damaged due to high heat; third, chicken eggs, which could be cooked in the water cooling system and provide the driver a meal..."

"In this age, when steam and heat became the main driving forces, this water cooling system would be a joke and a great waste.

Take the common gasoline engine before the Catastrophe as an instance, the output power only accounted for 20-30% of the total heat of the burning fuel. The output power of the diesel engine would vary from 30-45% of the total heat of the burning fuel. The heat that escaped from a common gasoline engine would account 70-80% of the total heat of the burning fuel. Of course, it was a joke for designing a water cooling system at the cost of such a waste of heat. From the beginning, most of the internal combustion engines before the Catastrophe were suffering from a great loss of heat. Traditional internal combustion engines could not make full use of the energy of the burning fuel at all..."

"My dual-drive engine could fix this shortcoming of the traditional internal combustion engine to the most extent; meanwhile, it would combine the water cooling system of the traditional internal combustion engine with our current steam driving system. The key part of this combination is in the cylinders of the traditional internal combustion engine..."

"...When the fuel starts to burn with air in the cylinders, the reciprocating pistons in the cylinders would start to move by pushing the connecting rod to make strike movements. From this perspective, it's an internal combustion engine. On the other hand, look at the cylinders; they're different than that of the common reciprocating piston engine before the Catastrophe; namely, when the fuel burns in the cylinders, the power caused by air expansion would pass to the pistons in the cylinders and push the piston and connecting rod to make mechanic movements. Besides air expansion, the burning fuel in the cylinders would bring heat which could further pass to the steam water cooling system in the periphery of the cylinders and heat the water; as a result, the burning fuel in the cylinders could heat up the external combustion engine..."

"The core of this dual-drive engine is its cylinders, which are greatly different than that of traditional internal combustion

engine in the four aspects, namely, the layout of cylinders; the selection of the material of cylinders; the cooling system of the cylinders and the empty layer design in the periphery of the cylinders..."

When Zhang Tie talked about it, he became very attentive and professional. The audience even forgot that Zhang Tie was an earth knight and was gradually immersed in Zhang Tie's introduction.

...

"...being different than the material of the cylinders of common internal combustion engines, the material of the cylinders of this engine has to be wearable and hard enough; in order to pass the heat from the combustion chamber to the neighboring water cooling layer smoothly, it needs to have a very high thermal conductivity. Therefore, according to the Fourier heat conduction law of metals, the best material of the cylinders should be super-dense, double-layer, LV 3 aluminum alloy. This kind of aluminum alloy should experience a four-phase hot-dip coating in the water cooling layer. This technology is consistent with that of many Faerie-dragon limos..."

"Additionally, as the exhaust pipe of the internal combustion engine would take away a great amount of heat, the design of the exhaust pipe of this engine is a bit special. It adopts the circular and built-in designing mindset. After the engine is booted, it could accomplish the secondary heating for the heat in the steam power system using the high heat in the exhaust pipe."

"Therefore, the burning fuel in the cylinders could activate the pistons in the cylinders and the steam power system outside the cylinders at the same time. The efficiency of this engine is unrivaled. The displacement of its cylinders is 18.5 L. Comprehensively, the power density of its cylinders is...its cylinders' compression ratio is..."

"The internal combustion engine part has been reinforced through the two-stage turbocharger device. Its separate output power could reach 940 horsepower while the steam power system could bring 610 horsepower. The two sets of output power systems could be used separately; one serves as the driving force system, the other could be connected to the steam weapon module; we could also use a differential gearbox to output the power from the two sources to the same direction so that it could reach its maximal output in an aspect in a certain period so as to respond to different situations. If we don't connect it to the steam weapon module, the whole set of engine could be less than 800 kg in weight as the metallurgical material processing is unprecedentedly advanced..."

As Zhang Tie had been desiring for such an engine for so long, he introduced it very carefully; precisely, very considerably.

When Zhang Tie was introducing this engine, his spirit had long flown to the smoky and bloody Selnes Theater of Operations...

Zhang Tie had too many memories about Selnes Theater of Operations as he had bled too much over there.

This engine was exclusive for the first type of propeller-driven airplane in the Black Iron Age...

When Zhang Tie was explaining the design principle of this set of engine, he had a hypothesis in mind—if there was such an engine in Selnes Theater of Operations, there would be a propeller-driven airplane being driven by this kind of engine. What would be the result of the battle in Selnes Theater of Operations then? Would the airship troop in Selnes Theater of Operations have a better result?

Undoubtedly. If there were such an engine and such a kind of airplane at that time, the result across the Selnes Theater of Operations would be rewritten for sure. The demons might still be able to break through the human defense line in Selnes Theater of



Operations; however, they had to suffer much more losses than humans. Humans might still have to evacuate from the Selnes Theater of Operations strategically in the end; however, many tragical casualties should have been avoided.

'The honor of Selnes Eagle that I gained in Selnes Theater of Operations is more like the real reflection of the tragedy of the allied human forces especially the human airship troop in the Selnes Theater of Operations.'

'How could I shock the command of the allied human forces on a subcontinent and gain the great honor only by killing some wing demons in the air by myself? It's a bit ironical and helpless!'

The reason for this situation lay in that the demon air forces had an overwhelming advantage over human airships and air troops if the knights on both parties were excluded. In many situations, what waited for human airship troop and those brave glider drivers were absolutely a one-sided massacre when they encountered wing demons...

At that time, glider drivers could definitely be rated as the bravest and most respectable arm of services with the biggest casualty in Selnes Theater of Operations, if there was such a rating item.

As the only air cavalry in Selnes Theater of Operations at that time, Zhang Tie was clear that dauntless human glider drivers almost covered their blood about one million square kilometers in the sky above the entire Selnes Theater of Operations.

Selnes Theater of Operations was the elegy that human glider drivers and airship fighters played in Waii Subcontinent at the cost of their lives and blood...

# Chapter 1033: The Iron of Iron-Dragon Sect (II)

---

After listening to Zhang Tie's introduction of the working principle of the dual-drive engine, all the 5 people in the room became silent.

Of course, this engine was an unprecedented invention in the eyes of them; however, they didn't understand why Fire Dragon Hermit invented it. This engine was specially designed for high-power fuels such as gasoline; however, in this age, the 5 people had not heard of any fuel in Taixia Country which could fully replace gasoline before the Catastrophe.

As Zhang Tie looked very interested in it, even Sun Qiming didn't dare displease him by telling him that this engine would not be available even if it was invented.

"Am I clear?" Zhang Tie asked them.

After exchanging a glance with each other, the 5 people shook their heads at the same time before replying, "Clear!"

"Can you make it?"

They nodded at the same time again.

"Great, I will give this design drawing to you. There's a differential gearbox under this design drawing. As you've understood it, I will not make a further introduction about it!" Zhang Tie pointed at Sun Qiming as he continued, "4 months later, I need 100 sets of prototypes and differential gearboxes. Additionally, I want to see a plant which could produce at least 100,000 sets of engines and differential gearboxes a year 4 months later. Here are the gold checks of 3 million gold coins!"

3 million gold coins were enough to build a plant which could produce 100,000 sets of engines a year.

As Zhang Tie said, he took out a pile of gold checks from Castle of Black Iron and handed it to Sun Qiming. Additionally, he told the other 4 people in a domineering way, "You should follow his order for the next 4 months and assist him to do it well! I don't like to force people to do anything; if anyone of you is not willing to do that, you could exit right away. Is there anyone?"

Who would dare to refuse Fire Dragon Hermit at this moment? The other 4 people hurriedly determined their minds to help Sun Qiming accomplish this task so as to live up to Hermit's trust.

"Fine, now that all of you have agreed, if you cannot make it on time, I will punish you. If you could make it on time, I'll make sure that you gain a lot of awards!"

"Yes...yes..."

The 4 people hurriedly nodded, except for Sun Qiming who slightly frowned as if he still hesitated. Even Clan head Yan had thrown a glance at Sun Qiming; however, he seemed to have not seen that warning at all.

"Do you have any problem?" Zhang Tie asked Sun Qiming.

"I will definitely exert my full efforts to finish the task assigned by Hermit; however, there's one thing that I have to warn Hermit—as this dual-drive engine doesn't have a proper fuel, even if we could produce it, we'd barely use it; perhaps Hermit has other plans that are out of our commoners' imaginations..." Sun Qiming said meticulously.

"Don't worry about that. I have my consideration!" Zhang Tie replied with a smile as he continued, "You should finish this task in a low-key manner. Am I clear?"

"Clear!"

"You can leave!"

The 5 people bowed and moved backward. Until they exited the parlor did they turn around and leave under the guidance of Liu

Xing.

Sitting on the old-fashioned wooden armchair, Zhang Tie watched their backs as he touched his bald head.

'If Li Tao could accomplish the task on time, the alcohol production base would go online in 3 months. After that, it would produce over 40,000 tons of alcohol a month. By then, the engine production plant would go online too.'

The iron of Iron-dragon Sect was the same iron of Zhang Tie 1 and steel.

The change brought by Iron-dragon Sect would enable commoners to fight on the battlefield in the holy war. The power of iron and steam would present itself in a wholly new manner in front of the public.

Because of iron and steam, even commoners below LV 6 could become a major force that contended with the super demon corps, instead of being slaughtered by the latter.

What counted most, the reappearance of a propeller-driven airplane in this age would enable humans to wrestle with wing demons besides knights. It could be imagined that when the flames of war extended to Taixia Country, with the help of propeller-driven airplanes, Taixia Country would never repeat the tragedy of human airship troop above Selnes Theater of Operations—numerous fighters sprayed their blood in the sky as they could only watch the sky where the wing demons were indulging in wanton massacre.

Although there were airboats and knights in Taixia Country, the limited quantities of airboats and knights determined that these kinds of high-end forces and resources could only control limited areas. Actually, battles between commoners and demons accounted the most of the holy war.

It seemed that Zhang Tie had predicted the iron and steam storm

that would start from Fire Dragon Bounty Territory and finally spread over the entire Taixia Country...

...

After a short while, when Zhang Tie was working out his layout in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory, the fourth batch of people was brought into the parlor by Liu Xing.

The 4th batch of people was actually only one old man as slim as a bamboo pole, who was the representative of the most boring clan in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory.

Of course, the most boring clan was most estranged from the other clans in the Fire Dragon Bounty Territory. Now that this clan could still survive itself, it indicated that this clan had its own bottom line and had its own way to survive itself. Additionally, now that this clan could dispatch a representative to wait outside the official manor, it indicated that this clan understood the ways of people; at least, they held in awe and veneration toward power and force.

Fire Dragon Bounty Territory indeed required such a clan.

"Fire Dragon Hermit, this humble man is Gu Hongyi, the clan elder of Introspection Palace in Snowpine City!"

The moment the old man as slim as a bamboo pole entered the parlor, he had bowed deeply towards Zhang Tie.

Not all the clan elders were knights. In many common clans, seniors or able ones could also be the clan elders. Undoubtedly, Gu Hongyi was an able man. Given his age, he should have a high seniority in Gu Clan. Now that Gu Clan could dispatch him to Xuantian City, it indicated that he was an able man.

"Take a seat!"

After saying thanks to Zhang Tie, Gu Hongyi straightened up and sat on the chair with a restrained and solemn look, being different than that of the earlier three batches of people.

"Why is your Gu Clan unpopular in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory?" Zhang Tie put it straight.

After hearing such a straightforward question, Gu Hongyi didn't look embarrassed; instead, he replied frankly, "My elder brother Gu Hongsheng has been serving as an around-the-clock imperial censor for 34 years. He's upright. Over these years, each time he came back to see relatives and offer sacrifice to predecessors, he would investigate local major clans openly and secretly. Whenever he found any disciples or clansmen making illegal things, he would impeach them. Therefore, many local officials from the major clans in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory had been impeached by my elder brother; some of them were caned by my elder brother; some of them were even dismissed. Therefore, our Gu Clan has a poor human relationship in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory!"

After hearing this reason, Zhang Tie was shocked too much.

Actually, Zhang Tie was once impeached by an around-the-clock imperial censor in the imperial censorate of Taixia Country; therefore, he disliked around-the-clock imperial censors. It was out of his imagination that there was an imperial censor's clan in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory.

When he thought that an around-the-clock imperial censor would break out his occupational disease by collecting the illegal behaviors of the local major clans and impeaching them the moment he returned home each year, Zhang Tie would almost collapse mentally. An around-the-clock censor's impeachment to local clans would at least reach military region and be accepted by the commander of the military region. Now that these local landlords had established human relationships, they could never barely establish any relationship with the commander of the military region. Therefore, they could only suffer from the punishment by the commander.

"Now that your Gu Clan is so unpopular, what if the disciples of Gu Clan is found illegal?" Zhang Tie asked.

After hearing Zhang Tie's question, Gu Hongyi replied with a proud look, "All the disciples of Gu Clan could recite "The Laws of Taixia Country" at the age of 12. Therefore, disciples of Gu Clan would never do anything illegal, neither would our disciples be found illegal!"

'Treating "The Laws of Taixia Country" as domestic disciplines and family rules? Recite them at 12 years old? When he recalled "The Laws of Taixia Country" which was as thick as a brick, Zhang Tie could only stay silent and tribute for the disciples of Gu Clan, 'What a weirdo clan!'

"What does Gu Clan survive on in Snowpine City?"

"Gu Clan has over 6 million square meters of quality arable land in Snowpine City, some bookstores and a printing plant. Disciples of Gu Clan could be farmers and teachers, many of them work as lawyers in the courts of different cities and provinces..."

The lawyers of courts in Taixia Country were different than those in other continents and subcontinents. To put it straightforwardly, lawyers in Taixia Country were equal to the counsels of officials in the courts. Because officials in the courts could not recite all the articles of "The Laws of Taixia Country". In many situations, these officials needed a legal advisor who was familiar with "The Laws of Taixia Country".

There were also lawyers in Jinwu Business Group. In Taixia Country, anyone who was familiar with "The Laws of Taixia Country" would be able to be a lawyer, which was a special occupation in Taixia Country.

"I want Gu Clan to do one thing for me!"

"May I know what that thing is?" Gu Hongyi asked meticulously.

"The cities in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory would carry out local representatives autonomy from then on; however, the local representatives could not behave freely. Gu Clan will be

responsible for the supervision of local representatives of the 10 cities in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory!" Zhang Tie said generously. Previously, Zhang Tie just wanted Gu Clan to be his ear and eye as another information channel. However, after knowing that Gu Clan was such a weirdo clan, Zhang Tie directly handed the major task of supervising the local representatives to Gu Clan.

"Hermit, you're completely pushing Gu Clan to the opposite of local representatives in all cities of Fire Dragon Bounty Territory!"

"Aren't you Gu Clan already in such a condition?"

"Gu Clan can agree with you but on a condition!"

It was Zhang Tie's first time to see someone who dared bargain with him in the parlor. Therefore, he felt fresh and asked, "Go ahead!"

"Hermit, please take one Gu disciple as your apprentice!" Gu Hongyi replied after gritting his teeth.

"Hahaha, you're really audacious. Your Gu Clan is the first clan who dares propose a request to me today! I wonder why do you want your clan disciples to cultivate battle skills. Didn't you say that Gu Clan disciples just do farm works, be teachers and lawyers?"

"As the holy war has broken out, we have to prepare for it. It would always be good if one of Gu disciple could survive himself in the chaotic world for the sake of the continuation of the clan!"

"What if I don't agree with you?"

Gu Hongyi then stretched his long neck and replied, "Although Gu Clan is not powerful, we always observe laws and regulations; it's difficult for Hermit to find Gu Clan trouble! Whatever, Gu Clan doesn't have even one friend in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory. Even if Hermit dislikes Gu Clan, our clan will not be in a worse situation."

According to Gu Hongyi's words, if Zhang Tie disagreed with him, Gu Clan would not follow Zhang Tie's order.



What a Gu Clan!

"Hahaha, interesting, interesting..." Zhang Tie burst out into laughter as he said, "Now that Gu Clan treats it as a business, I will establish this trade with you. You can go back and have one of your qualified disciples to be my apprentice..."

Gu Hongyi stood up and bowed deeply towards Zhang Tie, "Thanks, Fire Dragon Hermit!"

...

After Gu Hongyi left, Wang Chongde, the master of Wang Clan, Yushun Palace from Ning'an City entered.

After chatting with Wang Chongde for a few minutes with a pleasant look and learning about Wang Clan's situation, Zhang Tie handed a task to Wang Clan.

"On August 18, I will hold the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect in the official manor. By then many guests would arrive. Previously there were some official servants in the official manor; I don't like them. When I arrived here, I've told them to leave. As the kindest clan in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory, Wang Clan has many servants and good family rules; you dispatch a batch of servants to the official manor and have them receive the guests from all walks of life in the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect!"

This was evidently a good opportunity for Wang Clan to be well-known in the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect, because those guests in the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect were all heroes and elites from all industries, who were all influential figures.

The moment Zhang Tie finished his words, Wang Chongde had sprung up as he replied in a quivering voice out of excitement with a blush, "Wang Clan...will exert our full efforts to live up to the Hermit's trust..."

...

After the 5 batches of people left the official manor, the entire Fire Dragon Bounty Territory started to run like gears...

However, Zhang Tie disappeared once again weirdly after making arrangements. Nobody knew where Zhang Tie was...

Actually, Zhang Tie had long been anxious to return home...

# Chapter 1034: Jinwu City

---

Jinwu City, Yanghe Prefecture...

Standing on the top of a mountain peak outside Jinwu City, Zhang Tie couldn't prevent his heart from racing when he looked at Jinwu City in front of him.

4 years ago, Jinwu City was only on the drawings; however, it had already come true today.

Compared to Class A cities in Taixia Country, covering a bit more than 100 square miles, Jinwu City was just a small city. However, the boisterous scenery of constant airships above Jinwu City and the bustling crowd outside Jinwu City made it more like a prosperous commercial center or regional air traffic hub than a small city.

Railways and highways had been built. Standing on the top of the mountain peak, Zhang Tie could see crisscrossed railways and highways radiate in all directions from Jinwu City. Smoking trains were running on the railways like boas while various vehicles were shuttling back and forth on the highways.

As it was too boisterous inside the city, Zhang Tie had not imagined that there were two high and magnificent castles being about 1 mile away from the city. They were defending Jinwu City like two silent guards and could divide human flows. Many airships accessing to Jinwu City were parking in the airship bases in the periphery of the two castles.

There were some villages, towns and plants around Jinwu City and two castles within dozens of square miles. Everything in front of Zhang Tie's eyes was thriving and vigorous.

Zhang Tie even caught sight of a huge camp outside the city.

Like that inside Jinwu City, that large-scale camp also looked very boisterous. Of course, the boisterous scene was composed of

shuttling steam armored vehicles, battle calls, collisions and sweat of numerous fighters and the dust flying in the air.

In Zhang Tie's lotus-flower eyes, although being dozens of miles away, that camp was still as clear as his own palm prints.

The banner in the camp was not the banner of the official army in Youzhou Province, Taixia Country, but the Jinwu banner of Zhang Clan, Huaiyuan Palace.

The Jinwu Banner was as overbearing as the emblem of Jinwu Business Group. On both sides of the golden bird, its one claw was holding a shield while its the other hand was holding a sword.

This was the symbol of the armored guards of Jinwu Business Group. In another word, it was the symbol of Zhang Tie's private army.

Under the Jinwu banner, the frozen fighters' firm and persistent looks didn't escape away from Zhang Tie's eyes.

Black sweat stains were left on the fighters' faces; the military officers and the steam armored vehicles were roaring. With the extremely rhythmic shocks and booms, the targeted slope was covered with pits...

...

Only after throwing a glance at the size of the camp and the trainees on the battlefield, Zhang Tie had estimated the population of this armored forces——about 100,000 people.

Zhang family had changed a lot after 4 years.

...

Being excited, Zhang Tie watched the Jinwu City in the distance for quite a while before finally taking in a deep breath and flashing away from the top of the mountain peak.

Half an hour later, Zhang Tie appeared in the huge shadow of the city wall of Jinwu City. He looked up at the super high city wall of

Jinwu City.

When he looked at it from the top of the mountain peak in the distance, he didn't feel that the city wall of Jinwu City was too high; however, when he came to the foot of the city wall, Zhang Tie realized that it was really too high.

The city wall of Youzhou City, as a Class A city was only a bit higher than 70 m; however, the city wall of Jinwu City was higher than 100 m like a high tower. Standing at the foot of the city wall and looking up at the city wall, Zhang Tie felt its overwhelming qi.

There were various city-defense machines on the city wall. The steam ballistas and heavy centrifugal cannons made the city wall an iron hedgehog. Besides, there were many pieces of movable iron armors over the city wall. It was more like the configuration of a battle fortress than a city wall.

Jinwu City was just a small city; however, it was more like a huge battle fortress.

After Zhang Tie was framed by demons and Three-eye Association and had to escape away, his family members had started to build this city. At the sight of such a firm city wall, Zhang Tie knew what his family members were thinking about when they built the city.

'If not for the sake of safety, Jinwu City would not have such a deterrent city wall. This city wall is actually the portrayal of my elder brother's thought. Over the past 4 years, my elder might be thinking about how to make our family firmer everyday in case that any one of our family would suffer from any misfortune like me once again.'

'No, it won't. As I'm back. From then on, nobody could bully us anymore!'

Zhang Tie mumbled.

...

"Wow, the city wall of Jinwu City is even higher than that of a Class A City..." A 17-18-year-old adolescent was exclaiming at the foot of the city wall.

Beside this adolescent, there was a middle-aged man at his 30s. They both looked like businessmen. The younger one looked naive while the elder one looked shrewd. Given their similar looks, Zhang Tie knew that they were father and son.

Many people who came to Jinwu City for the first time would stop and appreciate the magnificent city wall. Therefore, the demeanors of Zhang Tie and that adolescent at the foot of the city wall didn't look special at all.

"Do you want a photo at the foot of the city wall of Jinwu City? 2 gold coins per times. This is the highest city wall in the entire Northeast Military Region. If you pass by, you will miss this opportunity..." At the sight of Zhang Tie and the adolescent standing still there, a man with a camera instantly came to them for soliciting trade.

'The city wall could even be a scenery of Jinwu City.'

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter inside.

"We need to enter it now. We'd better settle down at first; after that, we have to take the sequence number and queue up tonight; if we're lucky enough, we could gain a chance to buy one case of vials of the all-purpose medicament..." The middle-aged man pulled the adolescent directly into the city, ignoring the photographer.

"Dad, is this all-purpose medicament really that popular in other provinces?" The adolescent asked him in a low and vigilant voice.

"It's very popular. I've already contacted the purchasers in Tongzhou Province. We could make 24 gold coins by selling one case of 12 vials of all-purpose medicament after increasing 2 gold coins for each vial. Although it's not too profitable and is a bit

painstaking on the way as well as it will cost us some time, if we're lucky enough, we could travel here twice a year..." The middle-aged man replied in a low voice as he walked.

"When we're rich in the future, we will also buy an airship!" The adolescent said in a naive yet ambitious tone.

"Yup, it's nice to hear that you're so ambitious. Our Hong family's undertaking was gradually established through doing business by your father and your grandfather..." The father patted his son's shoulder and encouraged him pleasantly.

When the father and the son talked in low voice, they entered the crowd at the city gate. There were two teams of city-defense guards and military officers at the city gate of Jinwu City, who were watching the passers-by's faces and personal packages with flickering eyes. Unless they saw something special, they would not check or purposely make difficulties for someone.

Watching the father and the son entering the city gate, Zhang Tie also prepared to enter the city among the bustling crowd.

Zhang Tie was in a medium-sized figure; he looked a bit strong and was dressed like a common warrior that could be seen everywhere in Taixia Country. In this way, he was neither eye-catching nor mediocre. Besides a tough, fierce and intrepid face, there was a common walking saber on one side of his waist.

Zhang Tie could almost see 7-8 people in the similar dress among the crowd.

Besides, guards of business groups, independent warriors and some valiant pedlars almost looked similar.

After making a comparison, Zhang Tie found that more people carried weapons in the crowd than when he came to Taixia Country for the first time.

The moment Zhang Tie wanted to enter the city, he had caught sight of a military officer who hurriedly walked downstairs the

tunnel in the city gate. The military officer whispered something to another military officer at the city gate. After hearing that, the military officer immediately became spirited as he hurriedly sorted his clothes.

The whisper of the military officer drifted into Zhang Tie's ears too, "The castellan is coming, watch out..."

After hearing this words, Zhang Tie almost stopped his footsteps right away.

'Castellan? Isn't he my dad?' Zhang Tie mumbled.

Only after a few seconds, a fleet of four black limos rapidly drove towards one side of the city gate and parked outside the city gate. Some people then got off the black limos. At the sight of this, the military officer at the city gate hurriedly walked over there and made a military tribute to one of them. Closely after that, he followed those people who had just got off vehicles and started to introduce something to them outside the city gate.

Because of sudden arrival of these people, many people who were accessing to the city gate turned around and looked at them out of curiosity.

However, after looking at the sharp eyes and sensing aggressive qi of those bodyguards, who were above LV 13, surrounding those people, none of the onlookers dared approach them.

Zhang Ping, Zhang Tie's dad was escorted by the crowd and came to the place where Zhang Tie stood still and looked up at the high city wall. He put his hand over his forehead to prevent sunlight from entering his eyes as he said, "This city wall is indeed high. It looks aggressive; as a result, Jinwu City feels intense. It's necessary to beautify it..."

When Zhang Ping said, a stenographer took down his words in shorthand...



# Chapter 1035: An Assassination

---

All of Zhang Ping's words drifted into Zhang Tie's ears.

'Beautifying city wall?'

Although it sounded staggering, Zhang Tie knew that his father could make it.

"A few days ago, I heard many business groups who came to Jinwu City complain that the city wall of Jinwu City was too high and as aggressive as a battlefortress. How about planting some creepers on it? When the creepers covered over the city wall, it would look a bit green and not that terrifying anymore..."

After saying that, Zhang Ping turned around and asked a military officer on his side as he knew that the city wall was designed for some special military purpose, "Will the creepers weaken the effect of the city-defense equipment?"

"Creepers could reach about 15 m in height at most; however, the lowest city-defense equipment of Jinwu City are above 30 m in height; additionally, as creepers would grow closely along the city wall, it could not hide any enemy. Therefore, it's acceptable to grow creepers at the foot of the city wall!" The military officer answered respectfully.

"That's good. We will plant creepers then!" Zhang Ping became very happy.

Hearing his dad's voice from a few meters away, Zhang Tie let out a sigh inside.

When Zhang Ping talked about creepers, his tone and facial expression reminded Zhang Tie of the scene when his dad whitewashed the fencing of the backyard of their house with him when in Blackhot City. 'Perhaps, dad has already treated Jinwu City as his own home; therefore, as a castellan, he would always do things himself.

'Zhang family's undertakings have expanded greatly; however, dad still remains unchanged.'

'If dad is more considerable, he should ask about the military officer's opinion before making a decision. Only in this way could he behave as authoritative as a castellan. However, dad did it conversely. He expressed his opinion of planting creepers first before asking about the military officer's opinion. Although it looks normal, what if the military officer opposes him? Whether dad will adopt his opinion or not? If dad doesn't adopt his opinion, he will feel domineering; if dad adopts his opinion, his authority and influence will be gradually weakened in others' eyes.'

'Of course, my dad is not domineering. If that military officer opposes him, I'm sure that my dad will adopt the military officer's opinion and work out another method. He won't even notice the utterly different influences of the two sequences at all.'

Although it was too meticulous, it was the essence of becoming an officer and making oneself authoritative in front of the subordinates.

'Actually, my dad could only be a factory director or manager at most. It might be his upper limit to be a castellan. However, in Youzhou Province, with the protection of Huaiyuan Palace and the management of my elder brother, my dad could be a qualified castellan pleasantly in my territory.'

'After 4 years, dad remains unchanged. He's just got nobler with a better look. Being always escorted and taken care of by a lot of people, he really looks like an ambitious old man.'

Zhang Tie didn't expect his father to be too prestigious; he had felt much better at the sight of his father's current situation.

After taking a look at the city wall and inspecting the situation outside the city wall for a while, Zhang Ping whispered to some guys on his side before going to the parking lot.

Many people had stopped outside the city gate and watched these "big figures" of Jinwu City out of curiosity. The two teams of fighters at the city gate were maintaining the order. Zhang Tie was also watching his dad in the crowd. Although having mixed moods inside, Zhang Tie looked nothing special but curious like the others.

Zhang Ping and the other guys on his side were talking as they walked towards the parking lot...

Right then, Zhang Tie felt a berserk qi in the crowd; closely after that, he felt a killing qi.

If not being a knight who had a super great knight's consciousness, he could almost not find anything wrong in the crowd.

...

"Go die..." Right in the crowd, a man who looked like a common pedlar suddenly pulled out his dagger and charged at Zhang Ping as fast as a lightning bolt.

"Protect the castellan..."

Although that man moved fast, Zhang Ping's bodyguards were not weak. Almost the moment the assassin jumped out, one bodyguard had already discovered him. The bodyguard immediately sprung up and rushed towards that killer. When that assassin was dozens of meters away from Zhang Ping, he had been blocked.

Right in the city gate, two powerful battle qis collided against each other, causing a bang.

The moment the two powerhouses crashed, those near them were immediately affected. Being affected by their battle qis, some innocent people were instantly blown off by the impact wave of the battle qis and crashed onto the wall inside the city gate, uttering miserable shrieks...

After suffering such an accident, the city gate was in chaos at once. Most of the onlookers became a bit flurried and started to escape in all directions. At the same time, the two teams of guards at the city gate rapidly formed a flesh wall around Zhang Ping almost the moment someone shouted, "Protect the castellan" and isolated Zhang Ping from those flurried commoners.

Zhang Tie slightly changed his face; however, he did not panic. With the protection of those guards, he accelerated towards his vehicle. The military officer whom Zhang Ping was talking with directly rushed towards the battlefield and wanted to arrest the assassin as fast as possible.

The city gate sounded the alarm at the same time...

The moment Zhang Ping wanted to get on his vehicle, a person in the flurried crowd who was close to the vehicle opened his mouth while numerous lights flew towards Zhang Ping.

Besides moving extremely fast, the lights were very powerful. Even though two powerhouses on Zhang Ping's side had already released their protective battle qi to cover Zhang Ping, the lights directly broke their protective battle qi and came to Zhang Ping's front in a split second...

# Chapter 1036: Saving His Father

---

At this moment, all the bodyguards at present changed their faces...

This was the trump card!

The assassin who exclaimed just now was just to attract the others' eyes, the real fatal strike was over here.

It was already unpredictable that an assassin could shoot out hidden weapons from his mouth; what was more terrifying was that the hidden weapon was not common as it could penetrate through the protective battle qis of the two bodyguards on Zhang Ping's side and covered Zhang Ping's upper body immediately.

At that moment, Zhang Tie felt a chilly qi approaching him after penetrating through his two bodyguards. His heart pounded...

It happened so suddenly that nobody could respond to it. As a result, the tragedy was going to happen.

"Ding..."

"Ding..."

"Ding..."

"Ding..."

Along with ceaseless metallic collisions which sounded like how raindrops beat leaves of Japanese banana trees, a gold light flashed around Zhang Ping, which almost covered Zhang Ping completely like a golden armor. After clattering the golden light, those lights immediately changed their directions and shot towards the top of the city gate...

Before that person who shot hidden weapons towards Zhang Ping responded, Zhang Tie had already appeared on his side and stretched his hand towards his neck.

One of Zhang Ping's bodyguards also darted towards here with a

roar.

After glaring at Zhang Tie for the last moment in a lifeless way, that assassin's face turned as pitch as ink at once while a wisp of black blood flew out of his mouth corners. Closely after that, his body crumpled. Zhang Tie held his neck without using any strength...

Actually, before assassin's neck was gripped by Zhang Tie, he was already dead.

After seeing that assassin was killed, the other assassin who was in the disadvantageous position made a response to it right away. His face also turned black almost at the same time. Closely after that, he was punched by one of Zhang Ping's bodyguards and was sent flying over 20 m away. After falling onto the ground, he couldn't get up anymore.

The entire process lasted less than 10 seconds since the first assassin launched the attack.

Zhang Tie knew that the combat was already over.

In Zhang Tie's perceptions, there were only two killing qis within hundreds of meters. Unless one above earth knight was lurking somewhere and preparing to launch another attack, nothing could escape from Zhang Tie's perceptions. However, if a shadow knight wanted to kill Zhang Ping, the two assassins became unnecessary as a blow of a shadow knight could solve all the forces beside Zhang Ping. Therefore, the combat had come to an end.

Until then did the golden light surrounding Zhang Ping break off and fall onto the ground while rotating. They were just a handful of gold coins.

Zhang Tie didn't move, he just gripped the assassin's neck and watched the assassin's face which was turning black and decomposing with a slight frown...

The assassin's brain rotted first. Zhang Tie just tried his utmost

to collect the remaining information from the decomposing brain of the assassin.

It was chaotic in the surroundings. Zhang Tie heard heavy footsteps. After hearing the alerts from the city gate, the fighters on the top of the city gate rushed off towards here...

Zhang Tie's dad looked a bit pale. After throwing a glance at those gold coins on his side before moving his eyes onto Zhang Tie whose look was strange to him. Closely after that, he was pushed onto the vehicle with the protection of his bodyguards.

The moment Zhang Ping and one bodyguard got on the vehicle, the vehicle had accelerated into the city. Although Zhang Ping got off the vehicle just now, the driver was still in it. The driver who had received professional training would drive Zhang Ping away from the dangerous place as fast as possible according to the emergency plan.

"Hmm..." With a muffled sound, a bodyguard beside Zhang Ping rapidly cut off his right palm by a dagger.

When the lights shot towards Zhang Ping, this bodyguard stretched his right palm to catch them; however, a light penetrated through his protective battle qi along with his palm, leaving a needle-sized bloody point on his palm. However, only after a few seconds, his palm had started to turn black and rot. After sensing the overbearing toxicity of the hidden weapon, the bodyguard immediately made a decision to cut off his right palm.

After falling onto the ground, the broken right palm gradually turned into a puddle of black water.

Zhang Tie also loosed his grip. After that, the assassin's body started to turn soft and smoke. Additionally, his face started to melt. The moment he crumpled on the ground, a puddle of stinky black water had flown out of his body.

Zhang Tie raised his head and found that the chaotic crowd had

been driven away only after such a short while. Meanwhile, a great batch of city guards of Jinwu City had already surrounded him and targeted at him with their long spears and crossbows.

Two bodyguards and some military officials on Zhang Ping's side also goggled at him with fully vigilant and intense eye light.

It was one bodyguard on Zhang Ping's side who stopped the others from attacking Zhang Tie. Because that bodyguard faintly remembered that the golden light that covered Zhang Ping flew off Zhang Tie's sleeve.

The golden light was actually caused by the flying gold coins. Although that assassin who shot his hidden weapons out of his mouth was irresistible and terrifying, Zhang Tie's move was really an exceptional art, which was already out of the realm of hidden weapons. It was more like an immortal, fabulous realm—although being launched a bit later, they blocked all the flying needles; additionally, they suspended around Zhang Ping. In the urgent moment, they protected Zhang Ping like an armor...

The others used hidden weapons to kill people; however, this one saved people with hidden weapons. Nobody had ever heard about this before even in Taixia Country, not to mention having ever seen it.

After throwing a glance at the people surrounding him, Zhang Tie took in a deep breath before saying, "I'm just a passer-by..."

Although revealing a smile, Zhang Tie felt colder inside than before. If he didn't come to Jinwu City out of a whim, his dad might have already...

When Zhang Tie thought about the potential result, he became scared. Besides, a killing qi surged in his mind.

"Tough man, please wait a moment in Jinwu City and coordinate with the aspect of Jinwu City for the investigation. If you've nothing to do with the assassination, Jinwu City will pay you a



great reward!" The bodyguard cupped his hands towards Zhang Tie with a solemn look while the others were gazing at Zhang Tie's hands and sleeves...

Facing such an event, Zhang Tie also knew that Jinwu City would not easily let him go. After throwing a glance at those people who were ready to charge at him at any time, Zhang Tie became faintly hesitated before slowly nodding his head...

...

In less than half an hour, the event that Zhang Ping was assassinated by powerhouses in Jinwu City had already spread over the entire city, even across Youzhou Province. Numerous people were shocked inside...

# Chapter 1037: Concerns and Surprises

---

Only after 2 hours, Zhang Yang had received the news and arrived at home in Jinwu City...

At this moment, Zhang family was living in the inner city, the core of Jinwu City, which covered over 1 million square meters. Being protected by castles and high city walls and set off by mountains, rivers and gardens, Zhang family had already looked like a real major clan.

Over 20,000 Jinwu guards were protecting the inner city. The camp of Jinwu Guards was close to the inner city which could be mobilized at any time. The moment the Jinwu guards heard the news that Zhang Ping was assassinated, they had turned as ferocious as furious beasts. The entire camp started to move. Even the inside of Jinwu City had started a curfew. Squads of fully-armored patrols appeared in the streets across the city at once, causing an abrupt intense atmosphere in the city.

Zhang Yang's airboat directly landed at the airport in the inner city. The moment the airboat landed, Zhang Yang had got off it with a solemn look. Those who had long been waiting over there hurriedly moved forward and followed after Zhang Yang towards the inner mansion.

"How's my father?" Zhang Yang hurriedly strode as he asked a steward.

"Master is fine. He was just a bit startled and was playing with some young masters in the mansion..." As Zhang Yang strode very fast, the steward almost trotted so as to catch up with him.

After hearing this, Zhang Yang looked a bit better, 'If dad could still play with his grandsons, it means that he's fine.'

"Have you closed the city gate?" Zhang Yang asked after throwing a glance at the other man in the uniform of Jinwu Guards on his

side.

"Castellan told us to not treat it too seriously in case of influencing the trades in Jinwu City. He ordered us to not close the city gate..." The military officer answered.

After hearing this reply, Zhang Yang slightly frowned. Closely after that, he relieved his frown. Because he knew that was how his dad always behaved. Although being a castellan, he still felt like being a boss of the rice brew store as before in Blackhot City. He would always consider the interests of his family; instead of his own hardships and safety.

When Zhang Yang entered the inner courtyard, all the male and female servants hurriedly stood aside as they bowed and greeted him.

After returning home, a knight dispatched by Golden Roc Bank to protect Zhang Yang stayed outside. Zhang Yang himself entered home.

After such a major event occurred, all the family members almost gathered in the lobby of the main mansion, including Zhang Tie's wives.

Zhang Yang saw his dad putting two 2-3-year-old babies on his legs and letting them climb over there while his mother was talking with Linda, Beverly and Fiona on one side with red eyes.

At the sight of Zhang Yang, those in the lobby almost stood up at the same time, except for Zhang Yang's parents.

Over these years, as Zhang Tie was not at home, Zhang Yang was responsible for the entire Zhang family and looked more like the master of a family.

"Papa..." A juvenile called Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang nodded. This juvenile was Zhang Chengan.

Born in 890 of Black Iron Calendar, Zhang Chengan already looked like a 13-year-old strong juvenile while his look was more

similar to that of Zhang Yang. As the eldest son of the 3rd generation of Zhang family, he had a lot of younger brothers and sisters; Zhang Chengan was calm and steady since young. Although he was young, he already looked a bit mature.

"Dad, are you fine?" Zhang Yang sat down in front of Zhang Ping. After looking at Zhang Ping from his head to toe, Zhang Yang became completely reassured.

"I'm fine, of course, I'm fine..." Zhang Ping replied as he strengthened his legs with a big smile, making it a sliding board for the two babies. Although Linda and Beverly wanted to cradle the babies away, they were stopped by Zhang Ping.

"I will let Liu Knight stay with you!"

"No need. You always do business outside. If not being protected by a knight, the entire family would be worried about you. In Huaiyuan Palace, knights are all clan elders. Heavenly Fortune Sect has already arranged a knight to protect our home, it's already very eye-catching. Many people outside have been blaming me about that. If the castellan of Jinwu City was followed by a clan elder-level powerhouse, what the others of Huaiyuan Palace would think about me?" Zhang Ping turned his head and told Zhang Yang with a serious look.

"But..."

Zhang Ping stopped Zhang Yang. Although Zhang Yang was decisive and more influential outside, he had to be docile at home in front of Zhang Ping.

Zhang Ping let out a deep sigh, "As you two brothers have established such a great undertaking in Taixia Country; the entire Zhang family is growing vigorous; Chengan and the other grandsons and granddaughters are growing more and more excellent. I'm already satisfied to help you brothers look after the family. Previously, when I made one gold coin a month in the factory of Blackhot City, who could imagine that I, Zhang Ping

could live such a wealthy life. Even if I could not come back alive, I wouldn't feel regretful at all..."

After hearing Zhang Ping's words, Zhang Tie's mom dropped off her tears once again, "I've told your dad to not be the castellan of Jinwu City anymore. It's too dangerous..."

"Woman! If those people really wanted to harm us; unless our Zhang family members stayed in the inner city for the rest of our lives, they would find a chance to do that sooner or later. It has nothing to do with my status. Jinwu City is the undertaking of our family. If our family became so timid in our own city, wouldn't it be a laughingstock?" Zhang Ping blamed Zhang Yang's mom. Although Zhang Yang's mom was always reasonable, facing such a big event, she didn't dispute with Zhang Ping anymore as she knew that Zhang Ping was right.

After saying that, Zhang Ping turned around and watched Zhang Yang, "I know my own ability. It's my upper limit to give a favor to this family as the castellan of Jinwu City. It's also what I could do for you brothers now. Don't make this event a fuss. After a few days, I will continue to do my job instead of dropping the official affairs in Jinwu City..."

Zhang Yang revealed a smile, "I know, I will arrange the other things!"

"Let's have a dinner. Coincidentally, Chengan came back today. We could have a meal together..." Zhang Ping said as he cradled the two babies and stood up.

...

At the table, Zhang Yang didn't mention this event anymore. He even asked about Zhang Chengan's studies in Youzhou Provincial School.

Youzhou Provincial School was not the supreme official school across Youzhou Province. Its teachers were the most excellent ones

in Youzhou Province, who were top talents in all aspects. Additionally, Knight-level elders or guests from clans in Youzhou Province always went to give lessons over there. Even Huaiyuan Palace, the clan of the provincial governor of Youzhou Province could not afford such excellent teachers. As Taixia Country paid attention to education very much, all the provincial schools would gather elites in all industries. As a result, both major clans and common families could share the quality education. Given comprehensive teaching capability, provincial schools definitely ranked first. However, some major clan's private schools could also match provincial schools.

Except for one point, namely, human relationship. Most of the disciples in private schools only shared one family name, including someone from other clans who had relationships with this clan or from collateral bloodlines. By contrast, surnames were not limited in official schools. One official school could have disciples from both major clans and common families. Even though those disciples from common families who graduated from official schools might become prefectural or provincial governors in the future, not to mention those from major clans. The original intention of official school was to select officials from commoners so as to balance the influence of local major clans.

Almost half of the learners in Youzhou Provincial School came from major clans across Youzhou Province according to the quota; the other half were the local excellent juveniles in Youzhou Province through public selection.

Zhang Chengan had already learned in Youzhou Provincial School for 3 years.

Of course, provincial schools were different than that of those major sects in Taixia Country because they were on two routes.

Coincidentally, Zhang Chengan attended the practicum of Youzhou Provincial School today. When he passed by Jinwu City and felt it was intense all over, Zhang Chengan asked people about

what happened inside. When he heard that his grandpa was assassinated, he hurriedly ran back home to pay a visit to Zhang Ping.

"After having a meal, go back immediately. Don't behave special in Youzhou Provincial School because of your status!" Zhang Yang told his son.

"Don't worry, papa, I've not mentioned about my status at school yet. Besides some teachers at school, most of the classmates only know that I come from Yanghe Prefecture. Additionally, I asked for 6 hours' leave from the teacher. As my grandpa is fine, I'm reassured. I will go back soon..." Zhang Chengan replied seriously.

After hearing his words, Zhang Ping nodded as he felt that his son had been docile, "What practicum are you having in Jinwu City?"

"It's about airship and geography which will last 1.5 months. We will circle around Youzhou Province by airship and learn how to manipulate airship and the terrain, distribution of natural resources, layout of cities and military geography..."

Hearing Zhang Chengan's answers, Zhang Ping nodded as he sighed with emotions, "Read and travel. Good method. Take a ride in the sky and learn whatever you see. You will learn both how to manipulate airships in the air and the knowledge on the ground. Such a good education condition could only be available in Taixia Country. When in Blackhot City, I remember that your Uncle Tie would rush towards school with a schoolbag while gnawing a roasted sweat potato. At that time, our home was far away from school, in order to save some copper coins, your Uncle Tie didn't even take a bus. The so-called practicum at school was just some simple items on the processing tables. Occasionally, he had to plow the land! As you've got such a good educational resource, you have to treasure it and study hard..."

"I've kept your words in mind, grandpa!" Zhang Chengan nodded.

When Zhang Ping talked about Zhang Tie, the atmosphere at the table became gloomy at once. The moment Zhang Tie's mom controlled her tears, her eyes had turned red once again, "Zhang Tie is still in the Earth-elements Realm?"

Zhang Yang nodded.

"I wonder whether Guoguo is fine in Earth-elements Realm. It's said that it's dark all the year round over there. It's full of dangers. Being covered with magma and mutated beasts, it was as perilous as the hell. These babies have not seen their papa yet although they could already speak like Chenglei at their age..." Zhang Tie's mom said with a worried look.

Linda, Beverly and Fiona slowed down their chopsticks. Although the table was full of delicious food, they didn't feel like eating anymore...

"Dad, mom, younger sisters-in-law, don't worry, as long as Jinwu Business Group still exists, I'm sure that Zhang Tie will come back aboveboard soon. I've already contacted the side of Xuanyuan Hill. There's already a hope..." Zhang Yang replied in a muffled voice.

After hearing Zhang Yang's news, the entire Zhang family became spirited.

Although Zhang Ping's accident made Zhang family scared, the moment they heard that Zhang Tie might come back aboveboard, the entire family became reassured as nothing else was more important than Zhang Tie's case.

Zhang Yang was the helmsman of this family and helped Zhang family tide over the ocean by dodging away from reefs and rapids. However, the entire family, including Zhang Yang knew that Zhang Tie was the key stand of this family. As long as Zhang Tie was at home, the entire family would be filled with cheers and would not worry about any difficulty...

...



Although the event that Zhang Ping was assassinated was severe, the 3rd generation of Zhang family were all kids. Additionally, Zhang Yang and Zhang Tie were all in the prime of their lives. If they wanted, they could deliver over 100 sons. Therefore, nobody would think about harming Zhang Chengan.

After supper, Zhang Yang arranged a bodyguard to escort Zhang Chengan away from the city.

The moment Zhang Chengan left, Donder the manager of Golden Roc Bank in Jinwu City had arrived.

After caring about Zhang Ping, Donder came to the study with Zhang Yang for a secret talk.

The moment Donder left, Elder Muen of Huaiyuan Palace had arrived with a great batch of powerhouses from the Court of Youzhou Province and Huaiyuan Palace. The moment they arrived, these powerhouses had scattered in Jinwu City for clues...

After talking with Elder Muen secretly, Zhang Yang arranged Elder Muen to settle down in the inner city for the time being. After that, a trusted subordinate of Zhang Ping found a chance to whisper to Zhang Ping...

The moment Zhang Ping heard that, his eyes flickered as he asked, "Where's he?"

"We've already arranged him in the Starlight Castle..."

"I will take a look over there..."

# Chapter 1038: The Tail of the Culprit

---

After leaving the spot of the assassination, Zhang Tie had been taken into a castle inside the city and was treated with tasty food and drinks. However, he was forbidden to leave under strict surveillance...

Starlight Castle was important for military affairs in Jinwu City. It was also a foothold of Jinwu Guards. As a result, it was under strict surveillance. The castle was covered with elite fighters and heavy machines. Those who were inside could barely break out by force if not a knight.

It would be a laughingstock if he fought his family members in another face in Jinwu City.

According to the status that Zhang Tie fabricated for himself, he was a vagrant warrior in Taixia Country who didn't belong to any sect. As he didn't care about his face, he just listened to the arrangement of Jinwu City and waited in the Starlight Castle for the big figures in Jinwu City.

He was in a parlor of Starlight Castle, which was briefly designed. It only had a map of Youzhou Province on the wall, some chairs, a table and a potted plant. As Zhang Tie was here, those who brought him in especially told someone to serve two plates of fruits on the table.

Two guards were standing at the door of the parlor. There was a small square window on the wall, which looked more like an embrasure. However, he could rightly see the Jinwu City from inside.

Standing at the window, Zhang Tie watched the Jinwu City as he waited for his family member.

'It was too coincidental this time. No wonder the side of Jinwu City would doubt about my motive. Even if I would doubt that it

was a plot if someone coincidentally blocked the hidden weapons at the critical moment. '

Zhang Tie was clear that it was not a plot. The reason that he could save his dad at the critical moment lay in that Zhang family's meritorious deeds over these years were favored by the God. The God didn't want to see any tragedy of Zhang family anymore; therefore, Zhang Tie stopped the tragedy at the critical moment.

When Zhang Tie recalled that those poisonous needles almost touched his dad's body, he started to drool sweat all over due to fear.

Standing in the room, facing the breeze at the window, Zhang Tie's sweat was dried; however, his heart turned colder.

'My dad is just a castellan of Jinwu City, who has nothing to do with the outside world. Honestly, although it sounds improper, my dad's status and good temperament are not worth an assassination at all if not I am related to Jinwu Business Group. Therefore, the two killers must target at me.'

'Besides me and Jinwu Business Group, there would be no other target. If it targets at Jinwu Business Group, its influence is limited. Because my dad is almost not involved with the business of Jinwu Business Group. Comprehensively, it probably targets at me.'

'The animosity of killing my father is unforgivable. If the news that my dad was killed drifted into my ears, how could I keep traveling leisurely in the Earth-elements Realm? If I ignored it, how would the others in the world regard me? Being influenced by it, even Jinwu Business Group and the entire Huaiyuan Palace might feel shameful. If I come back to Taixia Country, as long as I reveal myself in the public, the opponent might set a plot to kill me.'

'The target of the culprit is to force me to appear in the public; meanwhile; he wants to give a blow to the growing reputation and

influence of Jinwu Business Group and Huaiyuan Palace in Taixia Country.'

After thinking it through, Zhang Tie could almost confirm immediately that the culprit of this assassination was the very one who set him up 4 years ago.

'Who's he among the nine chancellors of Taixia Country?'

After launching a strike, the two killers didn't think about leaving Jinwu City alive. The poison that they used to commit suicide was too destructive. In a split second, their corpses had turned into puddles of blood, leaving nothing at all. Therefore, Zhang Tie could not get any information from their minds.

'However, the culprit of this assassination has not imagined that I could coincidentally prevent this assassination; additionally, I've touched one killer before he turned into a puddle of blood.'

'The culprit must have not imagined that I had mastered the essence of soul forbidden skill. Through a transient contact, I've already gained some intelligence from the killer's brain before it was melted by the poison.'

Zhang Tie read the killer's mind in sequence.

Through the transient contact, Zhang Tie knew that the two killers had already lived in the hotel outside Jinwu City for over 1 month, during which period they wandered near Jinwu City every day. Apparently, they were looking for business opportunities; actually, they were waiting for the order to launch an attack.

They didn't know who sent the order to them; neither did they have any contact in Jinwu City. The killer who launched an attack at first carried a portable small crystal remote-sensing communication device through which he could receive the order.

1 hour before the assassination, the killer received the brief order——east gate, in 1 hour...

After receiving the order, they destroyed the remote-sensing

communication crystal. Then, they waited for Zhang Tie's dad near the east gate of Jinwu City. As was told, Zhang Tie's dad indeed appeared at the east gate in 1 hour.

The assassination then occurred.

After dating back a bit earlier, Zhang Tie knew that the two killers came from the Zhongzhou Province, one of the nine immortal provinces in Taixia Country. They didn't even have names; instead, they only had code names, 137 and 224. They came from a mysterious killers' organization. 3 months ago, they received the task dispatched by their organization, namely, the assassination of Zhang Ping, the castellan of Jinwu City in Youzhou Province.

They had a photo of Zhang Ping and his introduction, two wholly-new fabricated identities and an amount of expenditure. After receiving the task, the two killers had set for Jinwu City. After coming to Jinwu City, they had been waiting for the order.

The killers' organization was very terrifying and unimaginably strict. After receiving the task, the two people didn't contact any member of their organization anymore. It was their first task and the last one. In the killer's memory, Zhang Tie saw a gloomy face of a person, who was called Steward Qi. It was Steward Qi who assigned the task to them.

If that killer's brain was well preserved, Zhang Tie might be able to gain more information. However, soon after the image of Steward Qi appeared, the killer's brain tissue had been eroded by poison. Therefore, Zhang Tie was forced to exit his secret method of Bloody Soul Temple from the killer's memory.

Zhang Tie got two intelligence from the killer's mind. First, that killers' organization was in a base of Zhongzhou Province; second the gloomy long face of Steward Qi. Although being limited in clues, The image of the culprit who framed him 4 years ago became a bit clearer in the heavy mist. Zhang Tie finally caught the tail of

the culprit.

...

When Zhang Tie was waiting inside the room quietly, he heard the familiar footsteps from the corridors in the outside.

Although the footsteps were still over 100 m away from Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie had already identified the arriver——Zhang Yang, his elder brother.

Out of imagination, Zhang Tie became slightly thrilled. After thinking about it for a second, he understood that his elder brother would catch any clue for sure based on his temperament.

Given the footsteps, Zhang Tie knew that Zhang Yang was accompanied by two knights, one of them had come to this room before, the other was a black iron knight, who didn't come from Huaiyuan Palace.

Given the frequency of the footsteps and relative positions, Zhang Tie knew that the knight who purposely fell one step behind Zhang Yang was Zhang Yang's bodyguard.

Hearing the footsteps approaching him, Zhang Tie sensed that Zhang Yang felt a great stress inside; at the same time, he let out a sigh inside.

If this accident didn't occur, Zhang Tie could continue to play hide-and-seek with his elder brother. However, now that it had happened, it was not necessary for him to cover his identity in front of his elder brother. Whatever, Zhang Tie believed in his elder brother. Additionally, Zhang Tie was preparing to establish a relationship with his elder brother in a new identity.

When he thought about this, although Zhang Tie was still standing at the window, he had recovered his original look.

...

"...The hidden weapon that the killer shot out towards castellan

through his mouth should be fierce soul-eating needles. This secret method was irresistible. When one releases his battle qi, he could shoot this hidden weapon out of his mouth almost 10 times more powerful than that of its original power. Additionally, it could penetrate through protective battle qis below knight level. In a close distance, it is barely resisted. Even battle spirits might be harmed if they were not careful. The only shortcoming of this hidden weapon secret method is that its cultivator could only apply it one time in many days at the cost of his aura severely. After that killer failed it, he immediately committed suicide by taking poison. It seems that he has already known that he has lost the last opportunity. According to the autopsy, the poison black bones erosion powder had been buried beneath their teeth in advance. Those who commit suicide by taking this poison are all dauntless fighters..."

A person was reporting to Zhang Yang on the way here.

"Do you know which sect or which person is cultivating fierce soul-eating needle in Taixia Country?"

"This secret method has been lost for many years in Taixia Country..."

"However, that person blocked the fierce soul-eating needle by a handful of gold coins?"

"That person's hidden weapon skill is excellent. He's definitely a master-level hidden weapon powerhouse!"

"Two hidden weapon powerhouses appear at the same time. One wants to kill people; the other wants to save people. I really wonder about the reason!" Zhang Yang revealed a faint sneer.

After that, an unimaginable voice drifted into Zhang Yang's ears, which was not discovered by the two followers on his side.

"Elder brother, I'm the one who saved dad at the city gate. I've not imagined that it's you who came here. I'm in the room. You'd

better come alone..."

Of course, Zhang Yang was sure that it was Zhang Tie's voice.

In a split second, a shocked look flashed across Zhang Yang's face. Closely after that, he recovered his face as he immediately stopped...



# Chapter 1039: Reunion of Brothers

---

Zhang Yang stopped less than 20 steps away from Zhang Tie's room. At the sight of Zhang Yang, two fighters at the door chested out and looked forward.

If not Zhang Yang was sure that he was healthy, he almost thought that he got a phonism.

However, Zhang Yang knew that it was not phonism, but a secret voice transmission skill used by knights. Now that the one in the room knew that he had arrived from so far away by ears and could talk with him in secret voice transmission skill without being discovered by his knight bodyguard, it meant that the one's overall strength had surpassed the knight bodyguard on his side.

Zhang Yang's heart raced. When he stopped, the two followers also stopped as they watched him with curious looks.

In a split second, Zhang Yang had considered well some things.

"Is that man inside the room?"

"Yes, he's still inside and waiting for colonel!" The military officer on Zhang Yang's side replied.

In Jinwu Business Group and Jinwu City, besides stewards and servants of Zhang family who called Zhang Yang first young master, all the others called him colonel—the colonel of Jinwu Business Group.

"Let the two guards at the door leave. After I enter it, keep people 50 m away!" Zhang Yang said with a glassy-eyed look.

After hearing this order, the two people beside Zhang Yang became startled.

"Colonel, this person is unidentified. Additionally, he excels at using a hidden weapon. His battle strength is also above battle general. I'm afraid that..."

One person became worried about Zhang Yang's safety.

"Don't worry about that..." Zhang Yang threw a glance at that military officer. The military officer then became silent. As Zhang Yang had been prestigious in Jinwu Business Group these years, nobody across Jinwu Business Group dared doubt his command. After hearing Zhang Yang's words, the knight bodyguard also became silent. He just nodded and expressed that he would wait for Zhang Yang from 50 m away after Zhang Yang entered the room.

This knight bodyguard came from Golden Roc Bank. He would immediately follow Zhang Yang's order like fulfilling a contract within his responsibilities.

When Zhang Yang walked over there, the two guards left the door too. As a result, nobody was within 50 m.

When Zhang Yang pushed open the door, a whim occurred to his mind, 'What if the one inside the room is not Zhang Tie, but another plot?'

However, Zhang Yang immediately revealed a smile, 'Based on the superb voice-transmission skill of this person, even if he was not Zhang Tie, he could raid me and probably kill me immediately the moment I entered the room even with a knight bodyguard on my side; instead of having to play such a trick.'

After taking a deep breath, Zhang Yang pushed open the door as he saw a figure standing at the window. After hearing the sound behind him, Zhang Tie turned around, revealing his original look and frame to Zhang Yang, although his clothes looked a bit loose...

Zhang Tie recovered his original look by activating his body-changing immortal bloodline; however, he didn't change his clothes.

Of course, clothes were not important at this moment.

Zhang Yang was a bit thrilled as he didn't care about the details of the clothes. However, after staying so many years in Taixia

Country, he had already known that seeing was not always believing. If not, his younger brother Zhang Tie would not be trapped by the tragedy in Fuhai City.

Zhang Tie watched Zhang Yang too. After 4 years, Zhang Yang had changed a lot in Zhang Tie's eyes. He looked more mature and dignified. Additionally, Zhang Yang had been LV 10.

"Elder brother..." Zhang Tie shouted.

"What did I do when I came to your school for the first time after you entered No. 7 Male Middle School in Blackhot City?"

After hearing elder brother's question and noticing the vigilance in his excited eyes, Zhang Tie became stunned. Closely after that, Zhang Tie grinned, 'How could anyone know that secret besides an elder brother and me.'

Honestly, it was a scandal. That year, Zhang Tie had spermatorrhea. Additionally, he wrote down many diaries about how much he liked Miss Daina. As a result, the bed sheet with the stains of sperm being exposed to the sun at the attic always attracted his elder brother's mocks. What was more, his elder brother found his diary from below his bed and knew his secrets. As his elder brother was also young at that time, he went to see the look of the woman whose name Zhang Tie had written many times in his diary when he picked up Zhang Tie at his school.

After recalling what happened at that time, Zhang Tie signed with emotions, "Elder brother, when you went to my school for the time, you let me understand how stupid it was for a bashful juvenile to write diaries."

Since his elder brother went to school, Zhang Tie had been mocked so many times by his elder brother. For a long time, he felt too bashful to raise his head and was a bit furious about his elder brother; however, his elder brother didn't tell this to their parents. He even solemnly told Zhang Tie to not write his secrets on the paper as it was not a good habit. After irritating Zhang Tie, Zhang

Yang also felt a bit regretful. He even bought a lot of snacks for Zhang Tie. Therefore, this conflict then became an anecdote and secret between the two brothers at their young age. From then on, Zhang Tie burned all of his diaries and didn't write it anymore.

After Zhang Tie answered it briefly, Zhang Yang had run towards Zhang Tie and hugged him tightly.

When they departed from each other, Zhang Yang's eyes turned red. He looked at Zhang Tie carefully from head to toe. After that, he punched Zhang Tie's chest before moving two steps backward and recovering his solemn look.

"It's too dangerous. You should not come back!"

This room had been inlaid with a special alchemical device, which could prevent the sound from leaking out of the room like a single-way glass. Even knights could barely eavesdrop their talk from outside the room. However, the sound outside the room could be heard from inside. Therefore, Zhang Yang was not worried that their talk would be exposed to the public.

Of course, people in Jinwu Business Group and Jinwu City could identify Zhang Tie's original look, neither would Zhang Tie enter the city in his original look. Additionally, Zhang Yang had heard about the look of the person who saved his father outside the city gate. Therefore, Zhang Yang thought that Zhang Tie just used that look to hide his real identity during these years' escape. therefore, he didn't ask Zhang Tie about the disguised look at all.

"If I did not come back in time, my dad would be in danger today..." Zhang Tie let out a sigh as he pointed at a chair in the room to let Zhang Yang sit down.

"You know that someone was going to kill our father; therefore, you came back especially?"

Of course, Zhang Yang thought so.

Zhang Tie forced a bitter smile as he shook his head with a

solemn look and said, "After this event, I was also scared too much. If I didn't pass by there accidentally and hear that the castellan was coming, the result of this event would be unpredictable. Previously, I just wanted to take a look at our family members stealthily. I've not imagined that I could meet this event. Our parents usually said that a good act would be well rewarded, as our mother always did meritorious deeds, the God might give Zhang family a favor so that dad could survive the dangers!"

Before coming here, Zhang Yang was still guessing about the identity of the hidden weapon powerhouse who saved his father at the critical moment and whether it was another plot. However, after meeting Zhang Tie, all the doubts had been cleared. Even though Zhang Tie had not shown his talents in using hidden weapons, his identity as a knight and his great military exploits in the past had already made people very confident about him. Therefore, Zhang Yang only wondered about the culprit of the assassination.

Jinwu City was searching for the clues behind the killers. Zhang Yang was also thinking about the major clans that had commercial competitions and conflicts of interests with Zhang Clan and preparing for the revenge. Now that they could assign dauntless killers to hurt Zhang family, Zhang Yang could also assign more dauntless killers to hurt their families. In the future, Jinwu Business Group would have endless dauntless fighters.

After Zhang Yang told Zhang Tie about his guesses, Zhang Tie shook his head, "Not these clans, the culprit of this assassination is definitely not any of those clans in Taixia Country who have commercial competitions and conflicts of interests with Zhang Clan and Jinwu Business Group, but the very one who framed me in Fuhai City!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Zhang Yang became shocked. He had also thought about this point before. However, after 4 years' peaceful period, those people who framed Zhang Tie almost

became the target for all in Taixia Country. The imperial court, local major clans, seven top sects and dark forces were all focusing on this event. Those people dared not expose themselves at all. Zhang Yang thought that those people dared not offend Zhang Clan anymore; therefore, he didn't owe the assassination to those people. After knowing Zhang Tie's firm attitude, Zhang Yang realized the severity of this event.

"Do you have any clue?"

"Yup, I've caught the tail of the culprit. The culprit is very powerful. He colludes with demons. Even the entire Zhang family and Huaiyuan Palace could not hurt him at all!"

Zhang Yang turned gloomy too. He gritted his teeth as a killing qi flashed across his face. He watched Zhang Tie with a firm expression, "No matter what, it never ends. That one targets at you, then papa; our Zhang family will definitely fight him to death. As you've caught the tail of the culprit, what are you going to do then?"

"I could not defeat the culprit previously; however, the culprit would be beaten like a rat crossing the road wherever he appeared in Taixia Country. Even though he's a shadow knight, he should also behave meticulously. Additionally, he must have a lot of opponents!" Zhang Tie revealed a faintly solemn look, "We don't need to fight them face-to-face. We only need to make use of the resources on our side!"

"How?"

"Now that two killers could appear at the city gate, there must be a mole in Jinwu City. Only after receiving the news of their mole could they arrive at the city gate on time and make preparations for the attack. We'd better check those people who knew about dad's schedule 1 hour before the assassination."

"Jinwu Guards have been on it!" Zhang Yang replied in a gloomy voice. There were powerhouses and talents in this aspect among

Zhang Yang's subordinates. Almost the moment they heard about the news that Zhang Ping was assassinated, they had known that Zhang Ping's schedule was leaked in advance. There must be a mole of the killers inside the city, who must be very familiar with the trace of Zhang Tie's dad. Therefore, they could make a timely arrangement.

"Jinwu Guards have been investigating them. After you were framed and escaped away, I've been paying attention to the safety of our family members these years; especially the schedule of our father, which was always arranged by security officers. Dad's inspection outside the city gate was temporary. Before the event, less than 100 people knew the concrete schedule of our dad. If those killers really have a mole inside the city, it's definitely among those people..."

"Can we put all of them under house arrest?" Zhang Tie asked.

Zhang Yang nodded as he replied without any hesitation, "Yes, we can. 2/3 of these people are staff in the castellan's mansion of Jinwu City, less than 1/3 of them were from the other places across Taixia Country, who gradually joined the system of Jinwu City and Jinwu Business Group with the expansion of Jinwu Business Group and Jinwu City. It's just a matter of word to have them coordinate with us for the investigation."

"Can we isolate these people independently..." Zhang Tie revealed a cold look.

Zhang Yang faintly frowned as he replied, "As there're so many people, the mole must have paid special attention to keep his secrets. Even if we isolated them independently, we might not get any intelligence. If we torture them one after another, I'm afraid..."

"Just put them under house arrest. As long as the mole is among them, I could find him..." Zhang Tie said in a profound way...

# Chapter 1040: Drive Tigers to Kill Wolves

---

"You could find that mole?" Zhang Yang became spirited after hearing Zhang Tie's words.

Zhang Tie nodded.

Zhang Yang became a bit thrilled. Since he saw Zhang Tie once again, he had become reassured inside. However, when he imagined how the two dauntless assassins attacked his dad today, he frowned once again and became a bit hesitated, "Referring to the firm mind of the two assassins at the last moment, the one who passed the intelligence must be a dauntless person too. The moment he finds that he's targeted, he will commit suicide and become a puddle of blood in the blink of an eye even if you could find him. I'm afraid that we could not get anything from him..."

Zhang Tie replied with a smile. Of course, Zhang Tie had thought about this situation. 'Actually, it's not important whether this person will commit suicide or not. In killers' organizations, such people who's responsible for passing intelligence don't know too much. What's more, I could find him; additionally, I've already got some intelligence. As long as we could make outsiders feel that we've caught this guy and got much intelligence from him through torture!"

"You mean..." Zhang Yang was a bit clear.

"The two assassins came from Zhongzhou Province. They are members of the same killers' organization. They only have codes instead of names. One's code is 137; the other's code is 224. The base of the killer's organization is located in Pinsha Valley, Longxi Prefecture, Zhongzhou Province, one of the top 9 immortal provinces in Taixia Country. As long as Jinwu Business Group expose this intelligence to the public and imply that this assassination is related to the culprit who framed me 4 years ago, the powerhouses from the supreme court and the 7 major sects in



Taixia Country would charge at that place and turn it upside down. Someone would definitely move ahead of us..."

"Drive tigers to kill wolves!"

"Yes, drive trigers to kill wolves!"

Over these years, the biggest pending criminal case that shocked the entire Taixia Country was the tragedy in Fuhai City. With Zhang Tie's escape and the release of the article in Mountain of Brightness, the tragedy in Fuhai City gradually fermented over the past 4 years. As a result, more and more people knew Zhang Tie's name; the influence of the case was also growing greater. Across Taixia Country, the supreme court, the local major sects and clans and numerous knights were paying attention to this case all the time. Because this event was weird and was involved with demons, the Heavens Reaching Church, the Bloody Soul Temple which had already been eliminated and an increasingly popular young knight in Taixia Country, any intelligence about this case would attract the attention of all parties; especially the identity of the culprit of this tragedy, which made many people restless. As long as there was any clue, the parties in Taixia Country would definitely charge at it like hungry tigers.

"The power of Jinwu Business Group and Zhang family could not reach as far as Zhongzhou Province. Even if we could, our power is limited!" Zhang Tie watched Zhang Yang as he said firmly, "However, it doesn't matter; because Zhang family is not the only one which wants to find that culprit and remove him!"

"As long as we release the news, the killers' organization in Pingsha Valley, Longxi Prefecture, Zhongzhou Province will be uprooted and eliminated. This is how we Zhang family revenge them!" Zhang Yang narrowed his eyes with a killing qi.

Zhang Tie nodded as he said, "After the supreme court and the seven major sects in Taixia Country launched an attack towards the base, they would get more things by clues if they're lucky. We

only need to wait for that..."

"Even your crime might be redressed!"

"It depends. However, at least, we could tell the culprit through this means that Zhang family is not weak, even if we cannot defeat him. If he wants to hurt us, he has to pay for that no matter how considerate he is. The price of framing me is to expose himself and make all parties in Taixia Country vigilant; the price of assassinating our dad is to eliminate the killers' organization. After failing twice, even though that culprit has not been discovered, he has to consider the outcome for the next failure."

Zhang Yang pounded one punch onto one palm, causing a bang in the room before saying, "Zhang family could expose the intelligence to Heavens Fortune Sect and have Huaiyuan Palace report it to the supreme court of Xuanyuan Hill. We can expose it tonight and take the enemy by surprise..."

Zhang Tie nodded, "The faster, the better!"

Zhang Yang tightly pursed his mouth, revealing two firm wrinkles on his face.

After exchanging a glance with each other, the two brothers burst out into laughter. Through the brief talk, the two brothers both felt the opponent has changed a lot and turned mature. They could carry more burdens and could understand each other much better...

Especially Zhang Yang, who sighed with emotions when he found that Zhang Tie could inflict heavy losses on the powerful enemy, influence the overall situation in Taixia Country and defuse Zhang family's crisis by making such a plan of driving tigers to kill wolves.

Before coming to the Starlight Castle, Zhang Yang still felt gloomy inside; however, only after meeting Zhang Tie a short while, he had already been much clearer about what to do next.

Zhang Yang didn't know how Zhang Tie knew the backgrounds and identities of the two assassins. Now that Zhang Tie didn't explain it to him, Zhang Yang didn't ask him about that. Since Zhang Tie gave that marvelous fruit to him, Zhang Yang had known that his younger brother had too many secrets. Therefore, Zhang Yang would not feel strange no matter what happened to Zhang Tie.

"Compared to that 4 years ago, Zhang Tie, you've changed a lot. I really wonder what you've experienced in the past 4 years..." Zhang Yang sighed with emotion, "Dad and mom are worried about you every day. When I see you, I know that your life is definitely out of our imagination!"

"Elder brother, you've changed a lot too. You look more like a master of a major clan. Even your bodyguard is a knight."

"I cannot make it without you. That knight-level bodyguard is hired from Golden Roc Bank." Zhang Yang revealed a faintly bitter yet relaxed smile. He put one hand onto Zhang Tie's shoulder forcefully and said, "It's good that you could come back. Your case might be redressed. The atmosphere in Youzhou Province is not as intense as that a few years ago. As long as you don't appear in the original look, you could stay in Youzhou Province safe and sound. Nobody could hurt you. If you do not feel free and want to take a walk in Chaosang Subcontinent, I can make arrangements for your schedule. After your order for arrest was revoked, you would come back aboveboard..."

After hearing his elder brother's words, Zhang Tie thought a few seconds before replying in a euphemistic tone, "Elder brother, I'm already...already an earth knight!"

'Earth knight?'

Zhang Yang goggled at Zhang Tie. Even though he was experienced and always behaved calmly, he still felt vacant in mind after hearing this news.

When Zhang Tie promoted to a black iron knight in Waii Subcontinent, the news had shocked the entire subcontinent. Even in Taixia Country, an earth knight was already a powerhouse on the same level as the provincial governor and Cheji General. Who could imagine that Zhang Tie had already promoted to an earth knight after escaping for 4 years? The fact was that there were very few earth knights in Youzhou Province.

Zhang Yang almost thought that he misheard it.

Zhang Tie's following words shocked Zhang Yang so much that he almost passed out.

"I have another identity, Fire Dragon Hermit!"

"Fire...Fire Dragon Hermit..." Zhang Yang stammered. Zhang Yang had already received the golden invitation card from Iron-Dragon Sect. As Zhang Yang was not a knight, when he received the invitation card, he felt a bit arrogant as he thought that it indicated that he himself had a greater influence due to the rising position and influence of Jinwu Business Group. It was really out of his imagination that Fire Dragon Hermit was Zhang Tie.

After being stunned a short while, Zhang Yang recalled something as he stammered, "Isn't Fire Dragon Hermit as strong as an iron tower like a Mighty Miracle God? Additionally, Fire Dragon Hermit is cultivating the famous "Fire Dragon Sutra", how come you...you..."

Watching his elder brother's dumbfounded look, Zhang Tie rubbed his face. Although his voice sounded normal, it was ethereal in Zhang Yang's ears. Zhang Tie replied, "I've awakened an immortal bloodline. I could change my figure and look freely. Additionally, I've mastered a secret method. I could simulate "Fire Dragon Sutra". Only elder brother knows these secrets. Remember to keep these secrets even to our family members and Huaiyuan Palace. If you expose these secrets to them, you might hurt them..."

Unconsciously, Zhang Tie had applied a secret skill in his Soul

Forbidden Method in his sound. After Zhang Yang heard that, these secrets would turn into information fragments and lie in the depth of Zhang Yang's consciousness forever. Even if Zhang Yang met another powerhouse who mastered the Soul Forbidden Method, the secrets in the depth of his consciousness could not be dug out either; unless the opponent was also a supreme dominator with greater spiritual energy than that of Zhang Tie and was much more proficient in Soul Forbidden Method. In that way, the opponent might discover the encrypted information fragments, extracting them and recovering them. However, it was almost impossible.

'In the worst scenario, even if there was such a person who could gain the secrets from my elder brother, he only knows that I've awakened a unique immortal bloodline which could change my own look and figure. He could never imagine that I could simulate "Fire Dragon Sutra" through "King Roc Sutra"; instead, he could at most think that I'm cultivating a marvelous secret method. As for the effect of "King Roc Sutra", only the cultivator himself knows it.'

The two secrets were very important for Zhang Tie; however, it was not the most important. Even though they were exposed, they would not cause any fatal outcome. Actually, Zhang Tie had too many secrets. In the current stage, the secrets which could really put the cat among the pigeons was Castle of Black Iron, his "King Roc Sutra", "Purgatory Samsara", his profession "Supreme Dominator" and the fact that he had "the Great Wilderness Sutra".

The two secrets would definitely arouse a great disturbance no matter who had them, except for Zhang Tie. Because Zhang Tie had too many secrets. By contrast, the two secrets became relatively not that important.

Even though, Zhang Tie had also considered a lot before exposing a small part of his secrets to Zhang Yang. Now that he had returned to Youzhou Province, he had to contact Zhang family. As

Zhang Yang was his brother, it would not bring him any trouble by exposing his another identity to Zhang Yang; instead, it would have a lot of benefits. With the help of Zhang Yang, many things would become more convenient. Additionally, neither doubts nor jokes would be aroused.

Zhang Yang watched Zhang Tie for 5 minutes before recovering his composure. However, he still didn't believe in what he heard. He felt that his heart was still racing.

As Zhang Tie's secrets were too shocking to be believed, Zhang Yang couldn't believe in that as if he was listening to a story.

"Erm...erm, your pupil changing immortal bloodline...I know that...is this another immortal bloodline..."

"Seriously, pupil changing immortal bloodline is just a part of this immortal bloodline. This is a body changing immortal bloodline, the real immortal bloodline; that's it..." Zhang Tie replied as he activated his body changing bloodline and started to change his skin, skeleton, muscles, hair, tendons and meridians in front of Zhang Yang. Only after 10 more seconds, Zhang Tie had recovered the look to when he saved Zhang Ping at the city gate. The strange figure and look had nothing to do with Zhang Tie; however, the clothes became proper.

Watching Zhang Tie changing his figure and look, Zhang Yang couldn't stand panting heavily as his face blushed. At the same time, he clenched his fist and put it onto his chest. He felt breathless as if there was a big stone on his chest. After quite a while did he recover his composure. After that, he let out a deep sigh and revealed a bitter smile, "If you have any more secrets, don't display them in front of me anymore. I'm afraid that my heart cannot stand that! I only heard that shadow demons could do that, I've not imagined that human could also awaken such a bloodline. What a marvelous ability...It only appears in the fairy tales..."

"Humans share 99% of genes with demons. Perhaps, everybody had such an ability in far-ancient times..." Zhang Tie said in his original voice.

"Your voice..." Zhang Yang wanted to say it was a loophole; however, before he finished his words, Zhang Tie had uttered once again.

"How about now?"

Zhang Tie's voice turned strange at once. Zhang Yang became speechless. After looking at Zhang Tie seriously quite a while, Zhang Yang finally recovered his composure and loosed his fist, "Let's go now. We need to catch that mole as soon as possible!"

"Fine!"

"How long do you need?"

"I only need to have a brief talk with each of them..."

"And, what's the name of your current look??"

"Just call me Xia Ping!"

"Xia Ping!"

A few seconds later, right under the gaze of the knight-level bodyguard 50 m away, Zhang Yang pushed open the door and exited it, followed by Zhang Tie with a glassy-eyed look...

# Chapter 1041: The Mole

---

After the assassination occurred at noon, the court in Jinwu City had started to move.

The grand justice of Jinwu City was an old man in Zhang family who was experienced and capable. Before Zhang Yang delivered the order, those people who knew about Zhang Ping's schedule before he left the city had been "invited" into the court of Jinwu City for inquiry in the name of assisting the investigation and were withheld in the court for the time being.

After leaving Starlight Castle, Zhang Yang led Zhang Tie to the court.

Nobody knew what Zhang Yang had talked with this stray warrior called Xia Ping in the room. However, after coming out of the room, evidently, Xia Ping had won the trust of Zhang Yang as he could take the same car with Zhang Yang. It was a bit amazing.

Since he got on the car, Zhang Tie had felt that the knight-level bodyguard in the front seat was always paying attention to him. Although the knight didn't turn around to gaze at him, Zhang Tie felt that the greater part of his knight's consciousness was on him; it was nothing different than turning around to gaze at him.

Jinwu Business Group hired 2 knights from Golden Roc Bank, one knight served as Zhang Yang's bodyguard, the other one was responsible for the safety of the all-purpose medicament production base. After Zhang Tie was framed and escaped away, the Heavens Fortune Sect also assigned an experienced and stable knight to protect the Zhang family in Zhang Mansion. Unconsciously, three knights were serving Zhang family.

Although the knight in the front seat was focusing on Zhang Tie spiritually, Zhang Tie felt that he had not discovered it at all. He just watched Jinwu City through the window by inclining his head.



It was already dark while the road lamps on the streets had been lit up. The news that Zhang Ping was assassinated had already spread over Jinwu City. Apparently, more patrolling Jinwu guards and criminal hunters were on the streets. Although being in an intense atmosphere, Zhang Tie could still sense the prosperity of Jinwu City on both sides of the streets.

Jinwu City was small yet chic.

On both sides of the spacious and tidy streets, there were well-planned buildings, villas and manors that were close to each other. Given the signboards of those buildings, Zhang Tie knew that they were all names of trading companies and offices and hotels with distinctive styles. Although it was already dark, those streets in the downtown were still brightly lit and extremely boisterous. Passers were jostling each other.

Besides these buildings, Zhang Tie was deeply impressed by the afforestation of the downtown. Over half of the city was covered with green trees, most of which were various fruit trees.

Both sides of the many streets were brooks. In the lamplight in the evening, the limpid water in the brooks was enshrouded by steam, which looked a bit fantastic.

In Zhang Tie's lotus-flower eyes, the water temperature under Jinwu City was very high. There was rich and plentiful water spring resource under the ground. It was a huge hot river beneath the ground. After one opened a well in this city, if it met a hot river, the water in the hot river would enter the well and would become a warm spring. The warm spring flows that densely distributed in this city were like the natural heat units in this city. In winter, as long as the volume of runoff was increased, the temperature in Jinwu City would be several degrees higher than that outside the city. With such a good condition, the fruit trees in the all-purpose medicament production base could be high-yielding. Even in winter, some fruit trees could also be planted in some valleys with higher temperature so as to realize self-

sufficiency and continuity of the production of the all-purpose medicament.

Jinwu City was indeed the perfect land for Zhang family to root in Taixia Country for a prosperity.

Over 10 vehicles were following Zhang Yang's vehicle. Because Zhang Ping was assassinated, there were even some wheeled armored vehicles among them. Such a fleet was especially awe-inspiring on the streets. Wherever this fleet arrived, it would move smoothly across Jinwu City.

Only after more than 10 minutes, the fleet had entered the gate of the court in Jinwu City.

The moment Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang got off the vehicle, the superior of the court had hurriedly walked towards them.

"Are they still there?" Zhang Yang asked.

"We're interrogating them!" The superior of the court answered briefly and immediately. At the same time, he threw a glimpse at Zhang Tie who was standing on Zhang Yang's side. Although he didn't know Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie knew him. Zhang Tie remembered that he had met this person once in the old mansion of the Zhang family. At that time, this man was on the side of Zhang Yuanshan as his subordinate.

"Prepare an isolated interrogating room. He will arrange the next steps!" Zhang Yang said as he pointed at Zhang Tie.

"This is..." The superior of the court looked at Zhang Tie.

"He saved my father today and is temporarily hired by me; he could find that mole!"

"Fine, please follow me, I will make the arrangement right away..."

That person led Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang into the building of the court.

"How many suspects did you get?" Zhang Tie suddenly asked.

"87 people in total!"

"After isolating them independently, bring them into the interrogating room one after another!" Zhang Tie sent the order.

"Hmm, what else do we need to do?"

"Nothing more!" Zhang Tie threw a glance at Zhang Yang before saying, "We will soon have a result!"

...

A few minutes later, Zhang Tie sat down in a hidden interrogating room of the court. The room was surrounded by iron walls. There was a mirror on each wall. Besides, there were one table, two chairs and one orange-colored fluorite lamp. Zhang Yang and the superior of the court were waiting in another room. According to the rule, the interrogation should be monitored by another person through the mirror, including conversation. However, Zhang Tie requested to interrogate himself.

After Zhang Tie sat down for half a minute, the first person had been brought in.

He was a young officer of Jinwu Guards. The officer probably had known the reason for the interrogation and realized that this process was unavoidable; therefore, he didn't intend to resist when being brought in. Whereas, out of his imagination, the one who interrogated him was a stranger.

The moment the officer entered, those who brought him in had closed the door from outside.

Zhang Tie watched the officer's eyes as he started to gradually inject his spiritual energy into the officer's consciousness. However, the officer didn't notice it at all.

Actually, Zhang Tie only needed to ask him a couple of questions, "Have you leaked the schedule of the castellan to anyone else

today?"

After hearing this question, the officer became stunned before shaking his head, "Nope!"

"Good, you can leave!"

After entering the room for less than 10 seconds, the officer had left. In less than half a minute, another person entered the interrogating room.

...

"Have you leaked the schedule of the castellan to anyone else today?"

"Nope!"

"Good, you can leave!"

...

After leaving the room, the second person could directly leave the court as it indicated that he had accomplished the task to coordinate with the investigation. When they left the interrogating room, they were all very curious because they had not imagined that the interrogation could be so simple. What a game! Until these people left the court for a few minutes did they find that they had no impression about what happened, whom they had met and what had they experienced in the interrogating room just now. They only remembered that they entered and exited the interrogating room with a grey metal door. It seemed the part of memory about the interrogation had been deleted.

...

In another room, watching those "suspects" accessing to the interrogation room one after another so rapidly, even the superior of the court frowned, 'What's he doing? Judging by reading their face?'

"Colonel..." The superior of the court watched Zhang Yang.

"Just wait..." Zhang Yang said in a muffled voice.

The superior then became silent. Everybody across Jinwu City knew who was the real master of this city.

...

Half an hour later, the 52nd person was brought in. He was an elegant young man in a pair of glasses.

Zhang Tie asked those questions mechanically.

"Have you leaked the schedule of the castellan to anyone else today?"

"Yes!"

"To whom?"

"A 137"

The moment he answered, he immediately widely opened his eyes in a dumbfounded manner and watched Zhang Tie. Closely after that, Zhang Tie disappeared from his chair and appeared on his side. Almost at the same time, Zhang Tie had dislocated his jaw while putting one hand onto his head.

The moment Zhang Tie touched the one's head, the one had quivered a bit while a wisp of black blood flew out of his mouth corner. At the same time, his face started to turn black; his body also turned soft...

A few minutes later, Zhang Tie had to move his hand away from his head. Watching the puddle of blood on the ground, Zhang Tie exclaimed inside, "How vicious they are! This man's consciousness has been set with a trick like a landmine spiritually. The moment Zhang Tie asked him about the two questions, the landmine had been triggered. After being triggered, the spiritual energy directly stimulated the central nervous system of the guy and caused the two pieces of muscles in his throat to sharply contract like a conditioned reflex, breaking the trichocyst in the muscles. As a

result, the guy was killed...

## Chapter 1042: Counterattack

---

This guy's teeth also contained a trichocyst, which was used to commit suicide on his own initiative when in an emergency. However, the trichocyst in his throat was broken negatively. Zhang Tie had not heard about such a means before. What a rigorous and terrifying killers' organization!

Actually, before coming here, Zhang Tie had another idea. He felt that he might find more clues from this killers' organization. Given the rigorous arrangement of this killers' organization, Zhang Tie found it was almost impossible to find the culprit through this killers' organization. Because each member of this killers' organization must have contained two trichocysts in both throat and teeth, it was very difficult for him to make a major breakthrough from this killers' organization.

However, each coin had two sides. From another perspective, now that this killers' organization was so rigorous and meticulous, it was impossible for the culprit to establish such an organization without great efforts. If this killers' organization was destroyed, it would also inflict a heavy loss and shock to the culprit. It was almost like breaking one hand of the culprit.

Only after a few minutes, the young man had turned into a puddle of stinky blood besides a pair of glasses, the remains of his clothes, some silver coins and gold coins...

This guy was an office secretary in the castellan's mansion. He had been in Jinwu City for over 1 year. This guy didn't do anything illegal in this term. He just received the order from his superior through his remote-sensing crystal lately. After reading this guy's memory, Zhang Tie only knew that this guy's code was 624 in the killers' organization. All the others in his memory were about his normal work and living trifles in Jinwu City and the scene when he contacted the two killers today...

Even though this guy contacted the two killers, they used the disposable contact code. It was not available for Zhang Tie at all. After contacting the two killers, this guy also destroyed his remote-sensing communication device.

Although this guy died, Zhang Tie didn't leave the interrogating room at once. After staying in the room for more than 10 minutes quietly, he opened the gate and exited.

Even the guards outside the door wondered why this guy was interrogated so long.

After leaving the interrogating room, Zhang Tie directly closed the door in case anyone else caught sight of the scene inside.

Zhang Yang and the superior of the court of Jinwu City walked over here right away.

Zhang Yang looked a bit solemn, "How about the result?"

Zhang Tie threw a glance at Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang then followed him in the interrogating room.

The moment Zhang Yang entered the room, he had smelt the stink and caught sight of the puddle of blood on the ground. Zhang Tie briefly explained the situation to Zhang Yang.

"I've found out the mole. However, as was imagined by you, elder brother, I couldn't get anything valuable from this guy. The opponent has made a more rigorous arrangement than us!"

"What else should we do now?"

"It doesn't matter that we couldn't get any intelligence from this guy. As long as the others thought that we've got what we wanted, it would be enough. Elder brother, you can release the news about the killers' organization right now." Zhang Tie threw a glance at Zhang Yang's hand and noticed three senior remote-sensing finger rings, one of them must come from Huaiyuan Palace given its art craftsmanship. This finger ring could be used to contact Huaiyuan Palace. As for the left two finger rings, one of them could be used



to contact the Heavens Fortune Sect.

"Because of your case, Huaiyuan Palace could establish a direct relationship with the supreme court of Xuanyuan Hill. I've not imagined that this relationship could be used by us for our own benefit!" Zhang Yang revealed a self-mocking smile before closing his eyes.

Zhang Tie knew that Zhang Yang was contacting Huaiyuan Palace and the Heavens Fortune Sect. Therefore, he just waited for him on one side. Zhang Tie could communicate with Huaiyuan Palace and Heavens Fortune Sect in the blink of an eye. However, his elder brother's spiritual energy was much weaker than his; his elder brother didn't have the multitasking ability, therefore, he had to concentrate on using the senior remote-sensing crystals.

Until 2 minutes later, Zhang Yang opened his eyes as he said, "I've already passed the news to them. Huaiyuan Palace will report the news to the Supreme Court of Xuanyuan Hill right away. Zhongzhou Province is one of the top nine immortal provinces in Taixia Country. The Supreme Court of Taixia Country is very powerful in Zhongzhou Province, which could never be matched by others local forces. If Supreme Court made a rapid response, the airboat of powerhouses of the Supreme Court would arrive at Pingsha Valley in Longxi Prefecture before dawn!"

"What about the Heavens Fortune Sect?"

"I'm afraid that Heavens Fortune Sect will not have enough time to join the action. However, now that they know that the culprit has a base in Zhongzhou Province, they will definitely dispatch powerhouses to Zhongzhou Province to seek for clues. Top sects like Heavens Fortunes Sect only cares about the overall situation in the world, even though this event is not directly involved with Heavens Fortune Sect, it might be involved with demons and dark forces in Taixia Country; therefore, Heavens Fortune Sect will not just stand aside. According to the customs of Heavens Fortune Sect, they would definitely coordinate with the powerhouses of

other 6 top sects in Taixia Country to make an investigation in Zhongzhou Province..."

"We could only do this much!" Zhang Tie nodded. Watching his elder brother's finger rings, he suddenly remembered something, "Elder brother, do you have any space-teleportation equipment?"

Zhang Yang revealed a bitter smile, "No, it could not be bought easily. Besides that one of Zhang Taixuan and that of you which you gained from Master Jiang, I'm afraid that nobody else could have one in Huaiyuan Palace. Over these years, no matter how much would I pay, I still couldn't get one!"

"If so, elder brother, take this one!" Zhang Tie fumbled in his clothes and directly took out of the portable space-teleportation item that he gained from the demon baron in the hieron ruins before giving it to Zhang Yang. This item had been renovated into a pendant on a necklace. Like an identity plate of a fighter, it could be put into the pocket or worn around the neck instead of being too eye-catching. This portable space-teleportation item was even better than that one which Zhang Tie gained from the demon general. It could almost be regarded as a small superb artwork among space-teleportation items.

At the sight of the identity plate, Zhang Yang widely opened his eyes, "Is this a space-teleportation item..."

"Of course..."

As Zhang Tie had shocked Zhang Yang too much today, he didn't want to shock his elder brother anymore. He put this item in Castle of Black Iron previously; if he directly took it out of the void, he was afraid that his elder brother would suffer a heart attack. As one space-teleportation item could not be held in another space-teleportation item under normal circumstance, Zhang Tie pretended to put his hand into his pocket.

Zhang Tie noticed that his elder brother's hand was quivering when he took the space-teleportation item.

"Elder brother, like how you use a remote-sensing crystal device, you can inject your spiritual energy into this space-teleportation item and use it freely!" Zhang Tie warned his elder brother.

After taking the space-teleportation item, Zhang Yang became stunned for a few seconds as if he was sensing the usage of this item.

This space-teleportation item was empty inside. It was much larger than that of demon general, which was less than 30 cubic meters. There was only one remote-sensing crystal finger ring inside it. Zhang Tie brought the finger ring from Earth-elements Realm. He brought back over 10 pairs of remote-sensing crystal finger rings from the Earth-elements Realm. As these items were rarely seen on the earth's surface, it was very difficult for Huaiyuan Palace to get one pair; however, in Lion Fortress, with sufficient merit points, an earth knight could easily exchange for them. Remote-sensing crystal finger rings could be regarded as a "local specialty" in Earth-elements Realm.

The moment Zhang Yang injected his spiritual energy into this space-teleportation item, he had realized that it was very precious. He took out that remote-sensing crystal finger ring out of the void and watched Zhang Tie with an excited look. He didn't know what to say.

"Elder brother, come on. We're brothers. Don't be that excited only for one item!"

Zhang Yang could only let out a deep sigh as he found that he could never see through his younger brother at all. Although Jinwu Business Group had been vigorous in both scale and power, compared to the casual attitude when Zhang Tie took out a space-teleportation item, Zhang Yang felt that what he had done for Jinwu Business Group was nothing at all. When he thought about another identity of Zhang Tie, Zhang Yang felt more absurd. He was having a hard time imagining the look of the elders of Huaiyuan Palace when they learned that Zhang Tie had promoted

to an earth knight.

"I really wonder what you've experienced these years. How could you take out a space-teleportation item so easily?"

"Heh heh, I'm too lucky..." Zhang Tie touched his nose as he revealed a smile. Space-teleportation items were very precious for others; however, it was nothing serious for Zhang Tie. After gifting one space-teleportation item to his elder brother and Lan Yunxi respectively, he still had some space-teleportation items such as the Xuanwu Secret Warehouse, Castle of Black Iron, those nanobeads and that one he gained from Master Jiang. Zhang Tie should be the richest one in Taixia Country given the quantity of space-teleportation items that he had.

"Do you want to take a look at home?"

"Is it convenient for me to go back home in this identity?" Previously, Zhang Tie prepared to go back home in incarnation; now that he met his elder brother, he didn't need to use that method anymore.

"You're now the savior of our father and the benefactor of Zhang family. There's no problem for you to pay a visit to our family members and receive the reward from Zhang family. When I came here, our dad and mom even told me to appreciate you with a great reward."

"Well, I will go back then. I will wait for the news from the Supreme Court of Taixia Country at home..."

When he realized that he could go back home soon, Zhang Tie became thrilled at once...

## Chapter 1043: The Softest Place

---

After the negotiation in the room, the two brothers immediately left the court and returned to Zhang mansion.

As Zhang Ping's savior, it was very reasonable for Zhang Tie to go to Zhang mansion in others' eyes. Additionally, given the series of behaviors since Zhang Yang brought Zhang Tie into the court, the others could only think that Zhang Ping wanted to recruit this unknown stray warrior for Jinwu Business Group.

The atmosphere in Jinwu City was still intense. Across Jinwu City, besides Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang, nobody knew that the news of assassination attempt had been passed to the Supreme Court of Taixia Country and the Heavens Fortune Sect. Actually, this intense atmosphere was specially designed for outsiders. Not only this, when Zhang Yang left the interrogating room, he sent an order to a guard—From now on, lock the door of the interrogating room; you two stand outside it. Nobody is allowed in without my consent; additionally, the court should step up efforts to search for the accomplices and suspects in Jinwu City; remember to bring more relevant people into the court for investigation...

After making such an arrangement, besides Zhang Yang and Zhang Tie, nobody else knew that the real suspect had already been dead, including the others members in the court.

Zhang Yang made such an arrangement in order to puzzle the enemy and strive for more time for the Supreme Court's action in Zhongzhou Province. If there were other moles of the opponent in Jinwu City, seeing such an intense atmosphere in Jinwu City, they could only think that Jinwu City had not gained any key information at all. Therefore, they would relax their vigilance.

'During the past 4 years, the culprit didn't make any action. Why did he dare move at this moment? What reason makes him think

that he could raise winds and waves once again?'

Zhang Tie had been thinking about this since he left the court for Zhang mansion in the inner city.

Wise people would know that the autumn was coming when he saw a leaf falling off the tree. Zhang Tie faintly felt that this was not a good omen.

Four years ago, few people knew that Emperor Xuanyuan was missing. However, a few days ago, this news had been spread over Taixia Country. Even commoners in the teahouses of Fire Dragon Bounty Territory had known that. Although they didn't discuss it in the public; privately, there were various discussions about this event. Everybody was faintly worried about it. As a result, this concern had started to grow in all areas.

The prices of grains within Northeast Military Territory which always remained stable had started to rise slightly in late months. The prices of bulk commodities such as steel and cement which were used to build cities and battlefortress slightly rose in Youzhou Province. Even prices of medicaments and weapons started to grow in Youzhou Province. The all-purpose medicament produced by Jinwu Business Group became urgently demanded. Additionally, people surrounding Class A cities started to pour in Class A cities at a faster speed.

All this reminded Zhang Tie of the scene when the holy war broke out in Waii Subcontinent. They were similar in many aspects. Even optimistic people had to be meticulous about this special scene.

Under this intense atmosphere, the assassination targeting at Zhang family happened. That invisible culprit started to move once again...

When the car entered the heavily guarded inner city of Jinwu City, at the sight of the prosperous scenery of Zhang family, Zhang Tie forgot about this question. He recovered his composure and

prepared to meet his family members in the identity of Xia Ping.

...

In Zhang family's grand mansion, Zhang Tie met his family members.

What happened today had the entire family reunite with each other. Although being a bit late, they had not gone to bed yet; instead, they were just chatting with Zhang Tie's parents and waiting for Zhang Yang.

In the parlor, Zhang Tie saw his father, his mother, his eldest sister-in-law, Linda, Fiona, Beverly, Aimei and Aixue...

There was a 3-year old kid beside each of the six women, 3 boys and 3 girls in total. All of them were cute and tender. They all looked similar to Zhang Tie. Linda and Fiona gave birth to two more girls who were like angels; Beverly, Aimei and Aixue gave birth to a boy respectively. As Aimei and Aixue were twins, their sons also looked like twins.

Since Zhang Tie was framed and escaped away, Zhang Chenglei, Zhang Chengting and Zhang Chengpei had left Youzhou Province and joined Heavens Fortune Sect. They were enrolled as apprentices by a grand elder of Heavens Fortune Sect. Therefore, they could only go back home once at the end of each year. Although Linda, Beverly and Fiona were not willing to do that, they could only send their kids away after Zhang Tie was framed and left home.

Thankfully, after sending away the 3 boys, they had 5 more younger boys and girls. Therefore, they didn't feel too sad.

Although 4 years had passed, Linda, Beverly and Fiona remained unchanged on both looks and figures. Not only that, they looked more beautiful. After becoming mothers, Aimei and Aixue looked more like mature ladies of high society.

Although with two more wrinkles at her eye corners, Zhang Tie's

mom looked good.

After looking at his family members and ensuring that they were all good, Zhang Tie became reassured at once.

At the sight of the stranger on Zhang Yang's side, all the others in the parlor paid more attention to Zhang Tie. As Zhang Tie had changed his figure and look completely, even his parents and wives could not identify him.

After taking in a deep breath, Zhang Yang pointed at Zhang Tie as he slowed his tone, "Dad, this is Xia Ping, he saved you at the city gate today..."

"Ahh, you saved me..." Zhang Tie's dad immediately stood up with an excited look.

It was a bit chaotic at the city gate at that moment, Zhang Tie's dad was circled by some bodyguards as he didn't have a great battle strength himself. In the last moment, he only felt that he survived the hell. The moment he felt a sharp cold wind approaching him, he had seen a golden light around him, which directly blocked the sharp wind, causing a sound "bang". He didn't know what happened concretely at that moment at all. He even didn't see clearly the faces of the last assassin and the one who saved his life before being taken away by two bodyguards by car.

When Zhang Tie's dad stood up, all the other family members followed him up too.

"I was just traveling across Taixia Country. After hearing that Jinwu City is well-known for its all-purpose medicament and its prosperity, I just wanted to come here. It was out of my imagination that I could save castellan by accident...ahem...ahem...it's nothing serious, castellan...don't need to be so serious!"

Although he had long prepared for it, Zhang Tie still felt very uncomfortable when he expressed it. He almost forgot what to say.



It was reasonable for the son to save his father. The moment his father wanted to appreciate him, Zhang Tie felt embarrassed.

"Although it's nothing serious for you, without your help, we Zhang family couldn't imagine about the outcome!" Zhang Tie's mom told Zhang Yang with a solemn look, "As this hero had saved your father, we should try our best to satisfy all of his demands. We have to appreciate him with a great reward. He's our savior!"

"Yes, mom, I know!" Zhang Yang nodded.

"Hero, thank you for saving my father-in-law!" Zhang Tie's eldest sister-in-law bowed towards Zhang Tie solemnly.

The others elder sisters-in-law and his wives all extended their thanks to Zhang Tie solemnly.

After that, Zhang Tie just sat on a chair seriously and chatted with his family members politely.

At this moment, some kids staggered all the way from their moms' sides to Zhang Tie. They surrounded him and pulled his clothes.

All the family members were startled by what they saw.

"It seems that the hero indeed has karma with my family. My grandchildren are not willing to be intimate to strangers in normal times. It's my first time to see them approaching a person whom they saw for the first time..." Zhang Tie's mom said with a smile.

"Heh heh, I also feel that these little guys are very cute..." Zhang Tie didn't know how to answer his mom. Although his look had changed, he shared the bloodline with these kids. The five little guys must have sensed it. Therefore, they approached him.

At the sight of this scene, Zhang Yang looked a bit sophisticated. However, he didn't say anything.

"Papa..." The moment Zhang Tie smirked, a little girl who was pulling his clothes had looked up and called him with big black

spirited eyes.

After hearing this, Zhang Tie's heart raced while the entire family became quiet. Closely after that, they all felt a bit embarrassed. The smiles of Linda and the other 4 wives of Zhang Tie faded away at once.

Zhang Tie's mom let out a sigh, "Linda, it's too late, you'd better take them to bed..."

Until he saw Linda take the 5 kids away did Zhang Tie move his eyes away from those kids. When they left, the 5 little guys even looked back at Zhang Tie unwillingly. The little girl's eyes were even filled with tears. Even Linda, Beverly, Fiona, Aimei and Aixue felt like crying...

"Sorry to make you embarrassed, hero. My grandchildren are poor. Although we don't lack food and clothes, they have not seen their father yet since they were born. As they're growing elder, they ask their mothers about the whereabouts of their father every day..." Zhang Tie's mom said gloomily.

After hearing this, Zhang Tie clenched his fist while the softest place in his body ached...

...

That night, Zhang Tie lived in an independent courtyard in the inner city that Zhang family especially prepared for guests. Zhang Yang sent him here.

After leaving his family members, Zhang Tie had been silent. Zhang Yang could sense Zhang Tie's mood; therefore, he didn't speak either until they came to Zhang Tie's courtyard. Zhang Tie then forced a bitter smile while telling his elder brother in a secret way, "Elder brother, don't think too much about my case. The Supreme Court of Taixia Country will not slap their own face in a short period. I'm already very satisfied to see you..."

Zhang Yang nodded with a solemn look as he didn't know how to

comfort Zhang Tie.

If someone told Zhang Yang that money was not omnipotent in Blackhot City, Zhang Yang would definitely spit his saliva onto that one's face. Because at that moment, money was omnipotent for Zhang Yang. If he had money, he would have a house, social status, power and everything else. However, today, Zhang Yang finally understood that money was really not omnipotent although it was very important. In Taixia Country, many things could not be solved with money.

After talking with Zhang Tie a short while, Zhang Yang left the courtyard with a complexed mood.

...

At midnight, Zhang Tie became restless. In a coat, he stood in the attic of the courtyard and listened to the cricket chirps at the window...

'The little guys should have fallen asleep!'

When he imagined about the cute looks of the little guys, Zhang Tie felt warm inside once again.

Zhang Tie was not a cold-hearted man; after hearing "Papa...", he felt soft and warm all over. Even being an earth knight, if he owed something to the most important person in his life and made the lives of his most beloved ones incomplete, it was meaningless for an earth knight to be unrivaled in battle strength and shock the entire province.

Zhang Tie looked at the direction of Zhongzhou Province while a whim occurred to his mind...

'Will I gain a chance to redress my case in that direction?'

Zhang Tie didn't know that what happened in Zhongzhou Province a few hours later would bring him the chance and shock the world, causing a great chaos in Taixia Country...

# Chapter 1044: Zhongzhou Provincial Court

---

Longxi Prefecture, Zhongzhou Province...

There was a faint white line in the skyline in the east. The Faerie-dragon Star in the east was radiating its brilliance before dawn. It was pretty tranquil over the land.

A 500-m longer grey airboat silently flew out of the stratosphere tens of thousands of meters high and entered the troposphere. The airboat darted towards the southeast of Longxi Prefecture like a sharp arrow and a fierce beast that was going to dive towards its prey after passing through the clouds.

An old man with silver hair was standing in the prow and watching the land in the distance with his hands crossed on his back in a black robe and Xiezhi-shaped crown. A team of knights from the court of Zhongzhou Province was standing still behind the old man with solemn looks for over 10 hours. As the old man remained silent, the prow of the airboat was silent too. They just watched the clouds being broken through and the land at their foot moving rapidly backward.

Zhongzhou Provincial Court was evidently much more powerful than other provinces, which could be judged from the team of knights at the prow.

As a lower province in Taixia Country, when Youzhou was established, Zhang Tie as a black iron knight could rule the court in Youzhou Province because there wasn't any knight in the entire judicial system in Youzhou Province. By contrast, there were over 20 black iron knights in the court system of Zhongzhou Province. Additionally, the chief justice of Zhongzhou Provincial Court was a famous earth knight.

Over 10 hours might be difficult for commoners to tide over; however, it was nothing serious for these knights who could cultivate 1-2 months per time.

They all remained silence; however, they all had questions inside. Because the knights in Zhongzhou court still didn't know why the chief justice summoned them to travel 10,000 miles overnight by airboat. However, the chief justice always behaved rigorously with unpredictable thoughts. As they all knew that the chief justice was bad-tempered, they didn't ask him about the reason at all. If the chief justice wanted to let them know, he would tell them; if not, of course, he had his reason.

At this moment, besides the chief justice, almost half of the knights on duty in Zhongzhou Provincial Court were in the prow. Besides, all the most elite subordinate forces of Zhongzhou Provincial Court, Bian Camp had sallied forth in full strength and gathered in the airboat.

Nobody knew about their destination and what they would do; however, they all knew that chief justice was going to solve a big case given such a large-scale action. The chief justice had not organized such a large-scale action for the latest decade.

"9 o'clock; full speed ahead; suspension in 5 minutes..."

The chief justice finally opened his mouth after over 10 hours' silence. The moment the pilot received the order, he immediately adjusted the flight route of the airboat and had the airboat make a big turn in the air. Through this adjustment, all the knights who were guessing about the destination just now became confused.

Commoners might not be able to determine the precise location in the air without asking the captain or the navigator as Zhongzhou Province was too large. However, the chief justice had kept everything in Zhongzhou Province in his mind, including grasses, woods, mountains and rocks. As long as he looked down, he would be able to determine the precise location of the airboat. This ability alone was admirable enough.

The moment the chief justice opened his mouth; it indicated that the puzzle would be revealed right away. Those knights who were

familiar with the style of the chief justice were all spirited as they chested out and waited for the chief justice's order.

Finally, they heard the news...

"Last afternoon, the castellan of Jinwu City, Yanghe Prefecture, Youzhou Province was almost assassinated..."

It was the second sentence of the chief justice tonight.

After hearing this news, many knights from Zhongzhou Provincial Court faintly frowned. In the eyes of these knights, the assassination attempt of a castellan of a small city in a lower province was trivial. This event should be investigated by the Youzhou Provincial Court, it was not within the limits of responsibility of Zhongzhou Provincial Court.

"The castellan of Jinwu City is Zhang Ping. He has a son, Zhang Tie..."

The chief justice knew what the others were thinking about. Therefore, he continued and shocked the others once again.

Yanghe Prefecture, the castellan of Jinwu City, these words were too distant and trivial for those knights of Zhongzhou Provincial Court. However, the name Zhang Tie had been a heavy boulder that the entire judicial system in Taixia Country had to shoulder. As time passed by, this boulder grew heavier and brought greater stress to the judicial system in Taixia Country.

The tragedy in Fuhai City that happened 4 years ago had become the No. 1 pending criminal case in Taixia Country. In the folks, it even became the first deceived case in Taixia Country. As the main character of this pending criminal case or unjust case, the name Zhang Tie was even more famous than the grand justice of the supreme court in Taixia Country, who ranked one of the top 9 chancellors in Xuanyuan Hill in the judicial system in Taixia Country. Many people in the local courts in many remote places might have not heard about the name of the grand justice of the

supreme court in Taixia Country; however, they were all very familiar with the name of Zhang Tie. The tragedy in Fuhai City and the name Zhang Tie both became the most eye-catching names in the local judicial systems across Taixia Country.

The provincial judicial systems across Taixia Country paid attention to the name Zhang Tie, not because of the fluctuated tragedy in Fuhai City, but because Zhang Tie was the former chief justice of Youzhou Provincial Court, a member of the judicial system in Taixia Country, the lion of Youzhou Province. When he served as the chief justice of the Youzhou Provincial Court, he inflicted a heavy loss on Heavens Reaching Church in a short period and won the admiration of the entire judicial system in Taixia Country. He even became the good model of the Supreme Court in Taixia Country...

Even though he was wanted by the judicial system, his article in the forum of the Mountain of Brightness shocked the entire human knights' world. The poem The Beloved Ones could almost be heard everywhere in Taixia Country until now. Additionally, the conspiracy behind the tragedy of Fuhai City that he exposed in his article shocked Xuanyuan Hill as it might be involved with demons and the remnants of Bloody Soul Temple which had already been eliminated. As a result, many moguls couldn't eat and sleep well.

Because of Zhang Tie, the entire judicial system in Taixia Country felt being roasted. Many people were swearing that the subordinate members of the Supreme Court of Taixia Country were all rubbish, who only knew how to frame good people instead of being able to catch the demons.

To be honest, after reading the article "The Inscriptions on the Gravestone of the Despicable", even many officers in the judicial system had confirmed that Zhang Tie was innocent. However, the laws of Taixia Country were unalterable. The evidence was complete. Before revoking those evidence, it was nothing than making a joke with the Laws of Taixia Country by revoking Zhang

Tie's order for arrest.

Zhang Tie's father was attacked and almost assassinated...

Many people had been thinking about the relevant things about this news.

"According to the intelligence from Youzhou Province, they've already confirmed that the assassinator was from Zhongzhou Province, within our territory. Additionally, the culprit on the back of the assassinator was the very one who caused the tragedy in Fuhai City and framed Zhang Tie..." After hearing this news, all the knights from Zhongzhou Provincial Court held their breaths.

"Lord, sorry for my doubt; but this intelligence is too important. Now that those assassinators have arranged the assassination in Jinwu City, they must have made an overall preparation. Now that they were going to assassinate an important figure in the territory of Huaiyuan Palace, they would definitely assign dauntless people over there, who would not leave any clue easily. I wonder how Youzhou Provincial Court gained the intelligence in such a short period!" The one in front of the team of knights from Zhongzhou Provincial Court asked.

"We don't need to care about how Youzhou Provincial Court gained this intelligence!" The chief justice of Zhongzhou Provincial Court turned around with a solemn look and snow-white eyebrows before adding, "If the intelligence is fake, Zhongzhou Provincial Court will definitely ask for an explanation from Huaiyuan Palace. The judicial system in Taixia Country could never be used privately. If the intelligence is real, the Zhongzhou Provincial Court should exert its full efforts to mop up and quell the evil forces in Zhongzhou Province for the safety of Taixia Country as a whole!"

All the knights from Zhongzhou Provincial Court exchanged a glance with each other as their hearts raced at once.

In a few minutes, the airboat suspended while there was a valley



covering over 100 square miles at their foot. In the valley, there were some castles and manors. It seemed that it was a remote place in Longxi Prefecture of Zhongzhou Province. Those owners of the castles and manors should be the local forces.

Such places could be found everywhere in Zhongzhou Province. Local tyrants or small sects always liked these places.

The day had just broken while a golden line appeared in the sky in the east. The thin mist in the valley was also gradually dissipating. The airboat hid behind a cloud, sharing the same color with the latter. Therefore, it could be barely noticed by others on the ground. From this height, it was absolutely a good place to enjoy the sunrise; pitifully, those on the airboat didn't feel like appreciating the sunrise at this moment.

"It's Pingsha Valley at our foot. Go down there and search over there inch by inch. Arrest all the people over there for further detention and investigation, regardless of gender or age. Kill them if any of them dares resist you, am I clear?" The chief justice of Zhongzhou Provincial Court sent an order.

"Clear!"

"Go!" The chief justice of Zhongzhou Provincial Court shook his hand as he added, "I will watch you from the airboat. If you met any powerful opponent, just release your battle qi smoke, I will solve him..."

"Yes, sir!"

Closely after that, all the knights flew off the airboat and charged at those castles and manors. The airboat flew around Pingsha Valley slowly while over 8000 criminal hunters of Bian Camp under the affiliation of the Zhongzhou Provincial Court started to jump off the airboat like sowing seeds. When they were dozens of meters away from the ground, they opened their rotachutes. The moment they landed, they had rushed towards Pingsha Valley and surrounded it...

At this moment, the first sunlight had cast down onto the ground...

On the ground, with the rising battle qi totems and roars of fighters of Bian Camp, Pingsha Valley was in chaos...

# Chapter 1045: An Earthshaking Case

---

The fighters of Bi'an Camp being affiliated to the Zhongzhou Provincial Court directly jumped off the airboat. Some of them started their action from the center of Pingsha Valley; some surrounded Pingsha Valley from outside, causing Pingsha Valley to become chaotic at once...

The rising battle qi totems of the fighters of Bi'an Camp indicated that someone had started to resist arrest. The two parties had started a battle.

"We're Zhongzhou Provincial Court and investigating a case. Everybody, put your hands above heads and lie on the ground. Anyone who dares resist arrest will be killed..."

The moment a team of brave fighters of Bi'an Camp landed in the periphery of Pingsha Valley, they had gathered immediately before rushing into a small manor in front of them.

There was a bamboo grove outside the manor. Right in the bamboo grove, there were some fortresses and bartizans which were used to protect the manor. After hearing the battle calls of the fighters of Bi'an Camp, the strings of the crossbows in the fortresses and bartizans sounded immediately while a row of bolts was shot towards these fighters...

The fighters of Bi'an Camp had long prepared for the counterattack. Each one in front rows was holding a 1.7-m high heavy shield. The bolts hit the towers, causing clatters. Facing the bolts, the team of fighters rushed towards the fortresses and bartizans.

All the 30 fighters in the team had released their battle qi totems. They were at least LV 6 fighters while the team leader was a LV 10 strong fighter. The rising battle qi totems could warn the other teams. If these battle qi totems disappeared, it indicated that this team had been exterminated by powerful opponents.

When the bolts were triggered one after another, jarring whistles drifted from the fortresses and the bartizans at the same time. These whistles also served as early warnings. At the same time, urgent bell tones were drifted from a castle in the distance.

With the urgent bell tones, more battle qi totems appeared and more battle calls and roars could be heard in Pingsha Valley.

...

"Shoot..." The team leader shouted. Closely after that, two fighters of Bi'an Camp advanced by rolls with crossbows in hands with the cover of shields. The moment they stood up, they had seized the opportunity. They loosed their grips and hit two bowmen in one bartizan at once, spurting out blood respectively. One of the two bowmen even fell off the bartizan.

As fortresses and bartizans were covering each other, the moment the bartizan was unpinned, the team leader immediately rushed towards one fortress ahead of his team members.

The LV 10 fighter released his battle qi to destroy or hit away those bolts that were shot towards him and protected his full body by his battle qi. When he arrived at the fortress, he immediately sprung up over 10 m high. After rolling in the air as flexible as a snake, he grabbed one seam between bricks by one hand. Closely after that, he quivered all over and shrunk his body before rolling into the fortress through the embrasure on the fortress.

One bowman who was carrying a crossbow at the embrasure could not imagine that one person could enter the embrasure. After being slightly stunned, he had been stomped onto his chest by the team leader of Bi'an Camp. As a result, that bowman's chest bones were collapsed as he spurted out blood. Closely after that, he was kicked off against the wall inside the fortress and died at once.

Two bowmen in the fortress immediately dropped off their crossbows and rushed towards the LV 10 team leader. However, before they approached him, two battle qis had been released and

exploded their heads directly, spraying their blood and white brains over the walls.

"We're Zhongzhou Provincial Court and investigating a case. Anyone who dares resist arrest will be killed..." The team leader shouted as he rushed downstairs. Hearing the sounds upstairs, two ragged-looking people immediately rushed upstairs. As a result, the 3 people encountered in the middle of the staircase. Hearing the cry of this team leader, the two people on duty immediately rushed towards him. One of them even released a virtual image of a black spider on his back which indicated that he was a LV 6 fighter.

Now that they dared launch a counterattack, the team leader had nothing more to say. Undoubtedly, the two people's heads were shattered into pieces at once.

When this team leader opened the gate of the fortress from inside, the other team members had just arrived at the foot of the fortress.

"Next target, break in the manor..." The Class 10 team leader rushed towards the manor, followed by the other team members.

At this moment, a majestic voice as loud as that of a huge bell or drum drifted from the sky and spread over Pingsha Valley in a split second, causing fine ripples in the pond.

This voice came from the chief justice of Zhongzhou Provincial Court. After the alarm bell in Pingsha Valley rang, the chief justice uttered as it was unnecessary for him to hide himself anymore.

"I'm Meng Haishan, the chief justice of Zhongzhou Provincial Court. We're Zhongzhou Provincial Court and investigating a case. Put your hands above heads and lie on the ground. Anyone who dares resist arrest will be killed..."

After hearing this voice, all the fighters of Bi'an Camp became spirited as they continued to push resolutely forward.

As the courtyard wall of this manor was only 3 m higher, of course, it could not resist the team members of Bi'an Camp who were surging forward like fierce lions. The moment some team members in the front collided against the wall with their heavy shields, the part of the wall had been collapsed. All the team members rushed in at once.

The voice and the urgent alarms caused the courtyard to become chaotic. Even so, someone was still rushing towards this team of Bi'an Camp with weapons; however, they were killed in a split second.

Only in a few minutes, the team had broken through the outer courtyard and entered the inner courtyard...

There was a pool in the inner courtyard. When the team members passed by the pool...

With a crash, a weird black shadow jumped out of the pool. Closely after that, he waved his hand and shot out a lot of fine needles towards the team members.

The fighters of Bi'an Camp wore light metal armors and protective facial masks. Most of the fine needles couldn't break through their armors; however, some of them shot into three fighters' bodies through the seams between pieces of armors, causing them to fall onto the ground with a muffled sound...

At the same time, before the person who jumped out of the water finished his second round of strike, two powerful bolts had penetrated through his body, causing him to fall into the water once again. As a result, his blood changed the color of the pool.

The moment the facial masks of the three fighters who were falling on the ground were unveiled, the three fighters' faces had completely turned black while bleeding through their eyes, ears, nostrils and mouth. They had died.

"Watch out, there're hidden forces in the manor. Their weapons

are highly toxic..." The team leader roared, "Shields ahead, press forward in protective formation, kill those sons of bitches..."

...

Almost at the same time, all the teams of Bi'an Camp on the ground had broken through the bartizans and fortresses in the periphery and started to suffer from a casualty. However, hidden forces were covering Pingsha Valley. It was absolutely a killers' nestle. Black shadows might jump out of every place like water, underground, trees, parterres, grasses and rockeries and attack the subordinate elites of Zhongzhou Provincial Court at the risk of their lives at any time. As a result, the subordinate elites of Zhongzhou Provincial Court started to bleed and sacrifice...

Everybody started to believe in the intelligence given by Youzhou Province. There was indeed a big problem in Pingsha Valley. It was really shocking for Zhongzhou Province, one of the 9 immortal provinces in Taixia Country to have such a hidden evil force. What an earthshaking case...

As long as the judicial system of Taixia Country investigated cases, even the top seven sects dared not resist them and hurt any one of them. Because it was equal to revolt. However, in this remote Pingsha Valley, after the Zhongzhou Provincial Court expressed their identity, the people here were driven mad and dared attack their subordinate elites at the risk of their lives.

It was more like deepening into a hostile country instead of being in Zhongzhou Province.

The Pingsha Valley was filled with battle calls and blood...

...

Outside a castle in Pingsha Valley, three teams of fighters of Bi'an Camp encountered a 30-m higher fortress being installed with steam city-defense equipment which covered over 200 square meters.

The gate of this fortress had been closed from inside, which could not even be moved by a LV 10 fighter's battle qi. The entire fortress had no entrance but some observation windows that were set for steam city-defense facilities. Some fighters of Bi'an Camp had been shot down by the bolts.

After realizing that they could not break through this fortress in a short period, a team leader gritted as he made a hand gesture to the other team members. Closely after that, he took out a metal cylinder and pulled its fuse towards the sky, shooting a red smoke into the sky, which then blew up and turned especially attractive...

In less than 10 seconds, a shrill shriek drifted from the sky, "Lie down..."

After receiving this order, the 3 teams of fighters of Bi'an Camp hurriedly lay down and rolled away from this fortress.

At this moment, a powerful battle qi wave drifted from the sky. The battle qi strike of the heavenly knight dived downwards the fortress in the shape of a whale.

With a bang, the fortress which blocked the way of the 3 teams of fighters of Bi'an Camp was instantly broken apart like a walnut being hit by an iron hammer. The reinforced concrete flew in all directions with broken bricks, machinery parts and bloody limbs. As a result, the 30 m higher fortress became only a few meters higher...

...

The knights from Zhongzhou Provincial Court became the decisive force of the Court in Pingsha Valley. Although the hidden forces like assassins and killers in Pingsha Valley killed a lot of fighters of Bi'an Camp, they were finally mopped up by the knight-level powerhouses together with those firm fortresses...



# Chapter 1046: A Secret Underground Tunnel

---

It took the subordinate elite forces of Zhongzhou Provincial Court less than 1 hour to sweep Pingsha Valley; especially with the coordination of knight-level powerhouses of the Zhongzhou Provincial Court. The entire Pingsha Valley had been fully under control of Zhongzhou Provincial Court before the sun rose completely.

Since the beginning, although Pingsha Valley was filled with battle calls and battle qi totems, Meng Haishan the chief justice of Zhongzhou Provincial Court didn't see any battle qi smoke of knights at all. It implied that there was no knight-level powerhouse in the valley.

Under the early sunlight, the airboat declined to a height above the most attractive castle in Pingsha Valley.

A few hours ago, this castle was still tranquil; however, at this moment, its one wall had been broken while the ground and the top of the walls were covered with blood stains. Besides, there was a stinky smell in the air.

When Meng Haishan got off the airboat, some subordinate knights were waiting for him respectfully on one side. These powerhouses from Zhongzhou Provincial Court didn't look good.

It was too quiet in the castle as if the bloody battle had not happened just now. Across the castle, besides silent fighters of Bi'an Camp, they could not even hear the cries of women, kids and captives.

Meng Haishan looked a bit gloomy. Of course, he knew that they didn't arrest any captive alive. After knowing their own identities, all the people here chose to struggle at the cost of their lives.

It was in Zhongzhou Province, one of the 9 immortal provinces in

Taixia Country. Zhongzhou Province had been in peace for hundreds of years, when did such a force develop here?

"How's the situation?" Meng Haishan asked in a muffled voice.

"We've controlled the entire Pingsha Valley; but..." A knight said.

"But what?"

"But we've lost a lot of fighters of Bi'an Camp!"

"How many people have we lost?"

"457 people in total!" The knight replied in a low voice.

The figure almost accounted for 1/10 of the total population of Bi'an Camp in Zhongzhou Province. It was as miserable as a battle between two armies. The Zhongzhou Provincial Court had not met this situation for hundreds of years. It was in Zhongzhou Province, instead of those subcontinents and barren land being far away from Taixia Country. The casualty facing the Zhongzhou Provincial Court could shock the entire country.

After hearing this figure, Meng Haishan's face turned gloomy at once, "Is there anyone injured?"

"Nope, it's completely a killers' nestle. Those killers' blades, hidden weapons and bolts are highly toxic. The moment their weapons touched us, we would die immediately!"

"Show me there!"

Some knights of Zhongzhou Provincial Court then led Meng Haishan to an open land on the other side of the castle. Some rows of dead fighters of Bi'an Camp were tidily placed on the open land while the surrounding fighters looked sad.

These fighters lying on the ground were not heavily wounded; however, their faces had turned completely black. Many of them were bleeding from their eyes, ears, nostrils and mouth, making them very terrifying.

After squatting down and checking some corpses, Meng Haishan

stood up and asked in a cold tone, "Where're the people in the castle?"

"They're all dead. As they all resisted us with their full efforts, we have to kill them all!"

The corpses of the native people in the castle were also pulled out and placed tidily on the other side. However, the population of these corpses was less than that of the dead fighters of Bi'an Camp.

"Just these?" After looking at those people's corpses, Meng Haishan frowned.

"Some corpses could not be collected at all. Because they all held a toxic in their mouth. After failing their counterattack, they all broke their toxics and turned into a puddle of stinky blood!"

Such puddles of blood could be seen everywhere in the castle.

"Have you got anyone alive?"

"Some farmers were caught easily in the farmsteads and manors outside the castle; however, they didn't know anything. They only knew that Pingsha Valley was the industry of Wen family and they were hired by Wen family. Wen family is a local tyrant in Longxi Prefecture. Previously, they only had a bit influence in the local place. About 2 decades ago, Wen family met an accident by airship; as a result, only the master of Wen family survived. 1 decade ago, Wen Haoyun the master of Wen family promoted to a black iron knight. From then on, Wen family established Pingsha Sect in Pingsha Valley. As the head of Pingsha Sect, Wen Haoyun enrolled disciples and slowly expanded his undertaking. Besides Pingsha Sect, Wen family has two business groups, one is responsible for trading agricultural products; the other was responsible for logistics. Those farmers only knew that Wen family has frequent exchanges with Pingsha Sect!"

"Agricultural products, logistics?" Meng Haishan's eyes flickered. The two business groups of Wen family could provide them with

the best cover; especially that business group in logistics, which could easily cover the movements of all the personnel and materials between Wen family and Pingsha Valley. Additionally, the air accident that Wen family met might have other reasons. 'Notice all the judicial agencies across Zhongzhou Province, investigate the affiliated business groups, agencies and personnel of Wen family and Pingsha Sect right away. If any of them dares resist, kill them at once..."

"Yes, sir..."

"Have you caught Wen Haoyun?"

"Those alive farmers could not have a chance to touch Wen Haoyun; therefore, they don't know the whereabouts of Wen Haoyun. According to those farmers, when Wen Haoyun was not in Pingsha Valley, all the affairs in Pingsha Valley and Wen family would be managed by a steward surnamed Qi. This steward always lives in this castle. However, when we occupied this castle, we didn't find him. We're searching for the two people..."

"Wen family and Pingsha Sect might be involved with those rebels of Heavens Reaching Church. Report what happened here to the Cheji General's Mansion in Zhongzhou Province right away; request Cheji General's Mansion to assist our investigation and prepare for possible dangers!"

In late years, the Heavens Reaching Church in Taixia Country didn't stir up any trouble, which felt a bit weird. However, everybody knew that the Heavens Reaching Church would definitely arouse a big trouble if they wanted. Especially in prosperous and populated places like Zhongzhou Province, if the Heavens Reaching Church really made a big trouble, the outcome would be unimaginable. Therefore, after confirming that the background of Pingsha Sect might be involved with the Heavens Reaching Church, Meng Haishan the chief justice of the Zhongzhou Provincial Court would notice the Cheji General in Zhongzhou Province immediately.

Pingsha Valley had been suppressed and under the control of the Zhongzhou Provincial Court except for a couple of figures. Even though a couple of people had escaped, a black iron knight could not cause any trouble in Taixia Country. However, Meng Haishan still felt restless and amazed unconsciously.

The restless and amazed feelings originated from his mysterious consciousness as an earth knight and his judgment after serving the judicial system for dozens of years.

Although Bi'an Camp suffered a great loss, this raid was smooth overall. There were no big fluctuations. They didn't even meet a knight-level opponent. Therefore, Meng Haishan felt restless.

'Although Wen family and Pingsha Sect dared fight the judicial agency of Taixia Country, their force was too weak. Actually, without the participation of Bi'an Camp, a knight-level powerhouse in Zhongzhou Provincial Court could sweep the entire Pingsha Valley at zero cost. But what made Wen family and Pingsha Sect so decisive and dauntless to fight the judicial agency in Taixia Country?'

'Even though the personnel in Wen family and Pingsha Sect are really b\*stards of Heavens Reaching Church, such a force in this remote place of Zhongzhou Province is too trivial. This is not the usual means of those rebels of Heavens Reaching Church.'

As Meng Haishan was frowning and thinking about it, a fighter of Bi'an Camp ran towards him.

"Lord, we found a secret tunnel leading to the underground space in the basement of the castle..."

"A secret tunnel leading to the underground space?" Meng Haishan shrunk his pupils as he said, "Go, let's take a look over there..."

Of course, there were powerhouses being proficient in searching in the Bi'an Camp. After entering the basement of the castle, they

started to knock here and there and soon found a secret tunnel in the basement of the castle...

The chief justice of Zhongzhou Provincial Court and some knight-level powerhouses soon came to the entrance of the secret tunnel inside the castle. At the sight of the entrance, they were all shocked.

Generally, the entrances of secret tunnels should be very narrow which could only allow 2 people to pass shoulder by shoulder. However, the entrance of this secret tunnel in front of them was like a huge, grim, bloody mouth. The tunnel was so spacious that it could almost allow two cars to pass side by side.

The basement leading to the secret tunnel was a large training field, which contained various training tools. On the table of the training field, there were some corpses which were for an autopsy. Being male, female, old or young, those corpses looked grim and painful and had started to smell bad.

After throwing a glance at it, the powerhouses from Zhongzhou Provincial Court had known that this place was used for training killers and assassins.

Everything here looked terrifying and grim.

The dark and grim secret tunnel was not used to escape away from Pingsha Valley; instead, it led directly to the deep underground space. Nobody knew what it was used for.

"Zhao Long, you stay outside, the others follow me in..."

After having one knight to stay outside in case of an emergency, the chief justice of Zhongzhou Provincial Court rushed into the secret tunnel, followed by the other knights...

# Chapter 1047: An Earthshaking Change

---

After entering the grim secret underground tunnel less than 2000 m, they had entered a bubble-shaped underground space...

Anyone who entered this underground space for the first time might be scared by what they saw. Everything inside here was so terrifying that commoners could not imagine it at all.

It was a bloody pool; precisely, a bloody, stinky sea, which covered over 10 square miles.

This bloody pool was surrounded by senior crystals above Class V and some huge gold bricks. Like the banks of the bloody pool, these crystals and gold bricks were carved with runes on their surfaces. As crystals gathered the energy from everywhere, those bizarre runes flickered looming red light. At first sight, those runes looked like bloody eyes, which were gazing at the bloody sea while an invisible energy covered the entire bloody sea like a huge net...

Although there was no wind, the bloody waves moved and lapped against the banks being composed of crystals and gold ceaselessly.

Over 100,000 terrifying, semi-transparent flesh balls were floating in the bloody waves. Looking down from a height, those floating bloody balls would look like roes. Being close to each other, they covered the entire bloody sea.

In those floating semi-transparent flesh balls, there were humans who shrunk their bodies by hugging their own legs like fetuses in female wombs.

However, those inside the flesh balls were all as large as adults.

In the center of the bloody sea, there was a bloody 9-storey crystal tower being covered with exotic runes. A furious sound was reverberating above the tower, "Why, why the forces of Zhongzhou Provincial Court would raid Pingsha Valley at this critical moment? You destroyed my efforts. Why? Only in a few

days, the fighters in the bloody pool will become fully mature and will sweep Longxi Prefecture and topple over the entire Zhongzhou Province. Why? Why now? Who leaked the news?..." Being full of killing qi and unpleasant feeling, this sound was almost like a roar.

The reply came from another person. Compared to the first voice which sounded furious and unwilling, the second voice was full of panic; it was even trembling, "Master...per...perhaps there's some problem with the killers that we assigned to Youzhou Province to assassinate the castellan of Jinwu City. Yesterday, our informer passed the message that they've done that..."

"Impossible. Our assassins would commit suicide immediately soon after they finished their task whether it succeeded or not. Their body and spirit will disappear at once. Even if the moles of B department in Youzhou Province could be controlled. Nobody could trace us from them..." The first one still roared.

At the same time, they heard heavy earthquakes and loud sounds from the secret tunnels above the bloody sea.

Hearing that, Steward Qi with a long grim face kneeling on the top of the crystal tower quivered all over due to fear as he said, "Ma...master...Meng...Meng Haishan, the chief justice of Zhongzhou Provincial Court...arrives. The gate above the secret tunnel could not prevent an earth knight for a long time...please ma...make a decision at once..."

The one being called master by Steward Qi was Wen Haoyun. Wen Haoyun looked younger than 30 years old. With a narrow and long face, his cheeks collapsed inside; in a brilliant black silk robe, his eyes looked brutal and sharp.

Although being furious apparently, Wen Haoyun felt flurried inside too. He also heard the sound above him. Watching the trembling body of Steward Qi kneeling on the top of the tower, Wen Haoyun recovered his composure. After taking a deep breath,



he narrowed his eyes and told Steward Qi, "You're right. We have to make a quick decision. Although the fighters in the bloody sea have not been fully mature and would have some side effects after being awakened in advance, they're already available. Although it's not the right moment to activate them, it's much better than allowing those guys of the Zhongzhou Provincial Court to strangle the efforts of the archbishop here..."

"Master...do you want to wake...wake up these fighters?"

"Yes, but before doing this, you need to do one more thing for me..."

"Ahh, go ahead..." Steward Qi raised his head.

"Over these years, you've spent too many efforts for the great undertaking of the archbishop. At this moment, wish you could forgive me..." After saying that, Wen Haoyun shot out a battle qi from his finger and blew up the head of Steward Qi. After that, the headless corpse of Steward Qi fell into the bloody sea and melted in a split second.

After doing that, the earthquakes and sounds were closer to him. Wen Haoyun immediately sent a message by his remote-sensing crystal finger ring. After receiving the reply, the finger ring disappeared at once.

Closely after that, he took off all of his clothes. Those clothes disappeared at once too. He then threw a final glance at the bizarre crystal ball on the top of the tower which almost turned fully red before breaking his finger by teeth, dropping his fresh blood onto the crystal ball. When his fresh blood spread in the crystal ball, the bloody sea slowly boiled. He then smashed the crystal ball. Closely after that, a disguising mask appeared in his hand. After putting on the disguising mask, Wen Haoyun jumped into the bloody sea at once...

The moment his body entered the bloody sea, many sounds "puff" could be heard in the bloody sea. Those figures tore apart those

flesh balls and stood up. They looked around the bloody sea with distant looks. Only after a few seconds, their distant looks had disappeared; instead, bloody and brutal looks appeared on their faces...

So many bloody figures jumped onto the bloody sea like frogs that had just been hatched. After standing on the ground in the bloody foot for the first time and adapting to the environment for a few seconds, those bloody, naked fighters had started to run faster and faster while uttering strange roars. Some of them even ran on the walls of the mountain cave which were vertical to the ground by both hand and foot. Like fierce beasts, they rushed towards the other tunnel...

When running, all of them released LV 9 fighters' battle qi totems.

This underground space was connected to 3 tunnels, each of which led to a place in Pingsha Valley or its surroundings. As the proverb went, the wily hare had three holes. Now that this plan was so important, there should not only be one tunnel that led to this bloody sea.

More and more fighters were hatched out of the bloody sea. In each second, many people would break out of the flesh balls and landed from all directions. Only after adapting to the environment for a few seconds, the army of bloody fighters would run towards the other two tunnels.

As these bloody fighters were running faster and forcefully, the entire underground space was filled with thunder-like footsteps.

Nobody had noticed that Wen Haoyun was one of those bloody fighters.

At this moment, the safest method for Wen Haoyun to leave Pingsha Valley was to disguise himself as one of the bloody fighters. Even if there was a heavenly knight, he could not identify Wen Haoyun from over 100,000 bloody fighters. As long as he

didn't display his battle strength above LV 9, he would become safe among the bloody fighters. Additionally, he could command the other bloody fighters to move.

...

After Meng Haishan broke one more alloy gate which was harder than that of bank vault by barbarous force, the galloping footsteps and the roars of those wild beasts became very clear for some knights with acute senses.

Hearing these sounds, all the knights changed their faces at once, including Meng Haishan.

As knights, they could identify that those sounds were running footsteps; additionally, those footsteps grew louder, causing greater earthquakes. The frequency, strength and the distance between two feet of each people reminded the knights of the most elite troops in top four armies in Taixia Country.

How could there be so many elite fighters in the underground space?

"Ahh, what is below us? Is there a corps?" A knight asked with a terrified look.

"Tell Bi'an Camp on the earth's surface to prepare for the coming battle. Notice all the cities in Longxi Prefecture to be in the emergency state..." Meng Haishan roared as he released his battle qi tornado immediately. The virtual image of his cultivation method was blue surging waves.

...

2 minutes later, with a roar "Open", the last obstacle was broken, exposing everything in the underground space to them.

The bloody sea made all of them widely open their eyes.

"Bloody Sea..." Meng Haishan almost screamed even though he was always calm.

Many bloody fighters were still walking out of the bloody sea; however, over 2/3 of the flesh balls in the bloody sea had been empty. At the sight of these knights, hundreds of bloody fighters immediately charged at them without any fear...

"Kill them all..."

The chief justice of Zhongzhou Provincial Court roared.

At the same time, numerous naked bloody fighters had rushed out of the mountain caves and ran towards the surrounding regions after crossing Pingsha Valley like water that spilled out of a water vat.

...

Almost at the same time, a man with a light golden face in Xuanyuan Hill rubbed a remote-sensing crystal finger ring while a gloomy look flashed across his eyes. He threw a glance at the east direction of Xuanyuan Hill where the Zhongzhou Province was located through the window.

"Lord, minister of civil and administrative affairs is waiting for you..." An officer in a purple robe appeared outside the gate and reported to him respectfully.

After the gloomy look disappeared in this man's eyes, the man turned around in a normal look.

"Please show me the way..." The man replied kindly.

"Lord, please follow me..."

# Chapter 1048: Flames of War in the Immortal Province (I)

---

Huian City, 80 km away in the south of Pingsha Valley...

Huian City was a Class D LV 3 city in Taixia Country.

The area of this city within the city wall only covered less than 30 square miles. There were large tracts of farmsteads outside the city. Taixia Country had been in peace for a long time. As one of the nine immortal provinces in Taixia Country, Zhongzhou Province had not broken out any war for hundreds of years. Therefore, Huian City maintained its original look. Although being matched with steam city-defense facilities, the city wall was only about 10 m in height.

From a certain degree, Huian City was an ancient city. Native residents were very proud of their own city. As Zhongzhou Province had many Class A cities, Huian City, as a small city which maintained its original look looked special and thought-provoking.

As the granary of Zhongzhou Province, Longxi Prefecture was famous for Huian rice and wheat. Additionally, Huian City was close to Huihe River, the water quality of which was suitable to brew liquor; therefore, Huian City was also famous for some brands of liquor in Longxi Prefecture. Huian City's Double-well Liquor was sold to other provinces and could even be seen in Xuanyuan Hill.

Huian City was famous for brewing liquor. Grains and liquor produced in Huian City were sold across Taixia Country. Over hundreds of years, local residents lived better and better due to diligence and intelligence. People in Huian City and its surroundings were wealthy and safe. Even the buildings inside the farmsteads nearby Huian City were tasteful and exquisite under the governance of the immortal province. Many barbarians who came to Huian City from subcontinents and saw the broad

farmlands, garden-like farmsteads and the tidy buildings with rich Hua style in the farmsteads would exclaim that this was a paradise on the earth.

In an early morning of August, the sun had just risen. The boundless plain outside Huian City was covered with golden ears of wheat, which were very eyeable...

The wheat outside Huian City had grown mature. As it was a good weather, a lot of farmers had started their steam machines and prepared to reap ears of wheat. Due to the holy war, the prices of grains were rising steadily; especially this year. It was a bumper year. At the sight of the heavy ears of wheat in the fields, all the farmers outside Huian City revealed big smiles as they felt pretty pleasant inside...

The city gates in Zhongzhou Province would not close all the year round; the soldiers at the city gates would be on duty by shifts.

Even though native old men in Huian City didn't remember when the city gate of Huian City was closed last time. Last time, it might be closed during the 2nd holy war. From then on, nothing else could enable Huian City to close its city gate.

However, it was an exception today.

In the morning, a series of tidy and urgent footsteps drifted from the Zhengde Avenue being connected to the north gate of Huian City. In the astonishment of those who were accessing to the north city gate, a team of over 1,000 fully armored soldiers of Huian City rushed over here under the leadership of an officer. Those with sharp eyes even noticed some criminal hunters and officers in Huian Municipal Court among those soldiers.

"At the order of the castellan, close up all the city gates of Huian City right now; close up all the city gates of Huian City right now; Class I war preparedness; start all the steam city-defense equipment on the city walls right now..."

Before arriving at the city gate, the officer had started to roar.

Hearing the roars and watching the flurried movements of these soldiers, the north gate of Huian City became bustling at once. They didn't know what happened at all. Additionally, 2/3 of a fleet of vehicles was still in the city. After hearing that the city gate was going to be closed, the fleet sped up to leave the city.

"What's wrong with you? Haven't you heard me? Close the gate right away!" The officer was driven mad and rushed towards the driver of one vehicle which was still leaving the city orderly followed by some soldiers and two criminal hunters from Huian Municipal Court when he found that the pneumatic device remained still.

Watching the officer walking over here with a furious look, the squad of guards at the city gate remained silent. The team leader of these guards looked a bit embarrassed. A person who looked like a steward moved a few steps forward with a big smile as he explained, "Officer, this is the fleet of Double-well brewery. They are going to discharge cargo in the airship base outside the city. The rest of the fleet will leave the city gate in only 2 minutes. As these people at the city gate are all familiar with us, I invited them to spare 2 more minutes for us. Please forgive us. We only need 2 minutes..."

As Huian City had been in peace for so long, when the guards received the emergency order of closing the city gate, they were perplexed because they didn't have the sense of urgency at all. Additionally, as they were familiar with people from Double-well Brewery, which was well-known in Huian City, they intended to postpone 2 minutes to close the city gate so that the fleet of Double-well Brewery could leave the city gate.

With a sound of "chuang...", the officer pushed the steward away and pulled out his long sword at once. In a split second, he moved his sword towards the neck of the leader of the garrison team at the city gate, causing everybody at present to change their face...

The sharp blade cut open the skin of the team leader's neck, causing blood drops to roll down. The team leader's face turned pale at once as his feet turned soft too. Just now, he thought that his head was going to be chopped off.

"If the city gate is not closed in half a minute, I will chop off your head!" The officer said mercilessly.

The moment this officer moved, the two criminal hunters who followed this officer here had run towards the cabins of two trucks; after showing their identity plates to the drivers, they directly dragged the drivers away from the seats. Closely after that, they reversed the two trucks at the same time, leaving space for the pneumatic device of the city gate although colliding with the vehicles behind them heavily.

The moment the two trucks crashed, many terrines of Double-well liquor broke apart, filling the air with the aroma of Double-well Liquor.

"What are you doing? These liquor will be transported to Zhongzhou City, the father of the mayor of Zhongzhou City is going to celebrate his 120th birthday. The old man favors our Double-well Liquor most; he ordered our liquor for the banquet. Do you assume the responsibility if you delay the delivery time? You're just a soldier from outside, how could you be so presumptuous? Even the mayor of Huian City would give some face for our Double-well Brewery..." The steward looked extremely bad after being pushed away by the officer as he started to assume the mayor's authority as his own by raising his voice...

As a Class A city, Zhongzhou City was the provincial city of Zhongzhou Province. The mayor of Zhongzhou Province's official rank was as same as that of the prefectural governor of Longxi Prefecture and closer to that of the provincial governor of Zhongzhou Province. Given social positions, the mayor of Zhongzhou City was even higher than that of the prefectural governor of Longxi Prefecture and was easier to be promoted.



"F\*ck off!" The officer directly kicked onto the steward's belly, sending him to fly away and fall onto the ground outside the city gate. As a result, the steward almost died.

The officer didn't use his full strength. Otherwise, he could easily kick a commoner to death. However, even so, the steward didn't pick himself up for quite a while.

When the steward picked himself up, the pneumatic device of the north city gate had been triggered and the city gate had been closed.

Only after jumping and swearing the officer a few seconds outside the city gate, the steward had heard the exclamations from the tower over the city gate. The steward turned around and saw a black, dense smoke rushing into the sky from a town a few miles away from Huian City.

'Fire?'

The moment this whim occurred to the steward, he caught sight of another black smoke in a farmstead in another direction...

'What's happening?'

At the sight of the two dense black smoke in two places, someone among the crowd being blocked outside of the city hurriedly climbed onto the trucks and watched the smoking places in the distance.

"Ahh, why are so many people escaping away from Fuan Town? What's happening..." A guy on the top of a truck exclaimed...

The city gate of Huian City was closed urgently; dense smokes rushed into the sky from farmsteads and towns outside the city; someone escaped out of there... After integrating with these messages, the steward's face turned pale at once, 'There must be a big event...'

Although the steward assumed the mayor's authority as his own just now, he was not stupid. At the sight of the closed city gate

behind him, he understood what happened at once. Closely after that, he started to scream and forcefully hammered the thick metal city gate, "Ahh, open the city gate, let me in..."

It was already a bit chaotic outside the city gate...

At the same time, all the soldiers on the city gate had changed their faces, including that officer and two criminal hunters who followed him in from Huian Municipal Court.

On the city gate, they could see clearly what was happening inside Fuan Town by telescopes.

At the sight of the dense smoke and fire in the center of Fuan Town, many farmers who were doing farming work in fields put down their tools and prepared to put out the fire. However, before those people arrived there, more and more residents cried and rushed into the wheat fields from all places in Fuan Town...

Only after 2 minutes, those who ran less than 1,000 m out of Fuan Town firstly had been caught up by some bloody figures and torn apart in the wheat fields...

## Chapter 1049: Flames of War in the Immortal Province (II)

---

Those residents were exerting their full strength to escape, leaving billowing wheat fields behind them. A 30-year-old tough man pushed forward a woman who was carrying a baby when he heard the miserable shrieks were approaching him from behind. At the same time, he roared, "Take Xiaocheng away, hurry..." while holding tightly his walking saber on one side of his waist. Closely after that, he turned around and charged at a bloody figure.

Meanwhile, a virtual image of a black spider appeared behind this tough man, which indicated that he was a LV 6 fighter.

Given the uniform of the man, those who were familiar with the regulations in Taixia Country would know that this man should be a bowman being subordinate to the local constable of the town. Bowmen were used to protect the safety of the local place. According to the demand, they would assist the constable to govern the local place. Bowmen were not officials, they just ranked exiled Class VI. In Zhongzhou Province, a constable would have 3-5 bowmen. Each bowman would have some assistants. Besides the constable, all the judicial agencies even local garrisons in Taixia Country could assign and command these local bowmen.

This bowman's surname was Liu. This morning, after having some breakfast at home like usual, he was preparing to go to work. However, before he left home, he had heard the increasingly louder cries and shrieks from the streets. He went outside and saw many naked bloody people rushing into the town and killing anyone they saw.

His house neighbored a martial arts school. The master of the martial arts school was surnamed Xiang, who was a Class 8 fighter. He used to teach his disciples how to fight. When this bowman

rushed out of his house, Master Xiang also rushed out of the martial arts school with some disciples. However, they met a naked bloody figure at once. In only a few seconds, Master Xiang's and his disciples' heads had been blown up by that naked bloody figure.

Soon after the bloody figure rushed into the martial arts school, shrill shrieks drifted from the martial arts school. The bowman could identify that the shrieks came from Master Xiang's family members. Oozing sweat all over, this bowman hurriedly returned to his home and started to escape away with his wife and kid.

When he escaped, this bowman had some questions inside, 'Isn't Zhongzhou Province an immortal province in Taixia Country? It's always peaceful. Even holy war could not affect this place. How could it become so chaotic all of a sudden? Where do the bloody figures come from? How could they behave like mutated fierce beasts?' However, this bowman didn't have time to figure them out. He only thought about escaping out of here with his wife and his kid.

Thousands of bloody figures covered Fuan Town like a bloody flood in the blink of an eye. Soon after this tough man and his family members entered the farmlands outside the town, those bloody figures had caught up with them.

...

When this bowman turned around and charged at one bloody figure, he saw more and more bloody figures rushing out of the town. Only after a short while, these bloody figures had found clothes in the town and put them on. Although being not tidy, they were not naked anymore; additionally, some of them even held weapons that they found inside the town.

"Go die..." The bowman slashed towards a bloody figure with his full strength...

The bloody figure flickered his red eye light when he dodged

away easily by leaning to one side. At the same time, another bloody figure flashed out and punched through the tough man's chest at once, drawing his heart out...

This tough man spurted out a mouth of blood over the surrounding yellow wheat...

What a sharp difference in battle strength! One LV 6, the other LV 9. In face-to-face close combat, the result could be identified in a split second; not to mention that the LV 6 fighter had two opponents...

The bowman fell down; however, before he loosed his grip, his saber had been grabbed away by that bloody figure.

Before falling down, the bowman threw a glance at the direction where his wife was escaping to. He found that the emaciated frame was still tumbling in the wheat field but in another direction. However, his son was not at her side. He knew that his wife must have hidden his son somewhere or let his son lie somewhere in the field. A kid could easily hide himself; however, she changed one direction and continued to escape so as to induce away those bloody figures...

Parents would make the same choice in this situation.

The bloody figures had been chasing after his wife. Before he lost his consciousness, the bowman had the last doubt in his mind, 'Has the flames of war reached Zhongzhou Province?'

...

On the top of the north city gate of Huian City, those people watched those bloody figures killing those people who were escaping in the field with pale faces. Big fires could be seen everywhere in Fuan Town while more and more bloody figures poured out of Fuan Town. Crossing the fields outside the city, they were rushing towards Huian City like a bloody tide.

Those bloody figures moved too fast; additionally, all the battle-

qi totems of these bloody figures indicated that they were LV 9 fighters.

At first sight, over 20,000 bloody figures were rushing towards Huian City, which was very terrifying.

At the same time, the airships in the airship base in the northwest outside the city flew off like a flock of flurried birds in the reeds. All the airships were sending distress signals by releasing colorful smokes into the sky...

Some airships dove downwards the moment they flew off...

Needless to say, these bloody figures must have rushed into the airship base outside the city.

"Are these things...humans...or demons?" A young soldier who had not experienced any battle stammered at the sight of this scene.

Like that dead bowman, all the soldiers and officers standing on the top of the city gate had one question inside, 'How could so many people like fierce beasts appear in Zhongzhou Province, one of the nine immortal provinces in Taixia Country?'

"Listen, it's time for us to contribute to our country at the cost of our lives. As long as we're alive, we will never allow these fierce beasts to break into Huian City. Brothers in Huian City, think about your family members. We only need to stand here a short while before the arrival of knight-level powerhouses..." The officer who kicked the steward of the Double-well Brewery out of the city gate raised high his sword and exclaimed.

After a short while, the steam city-defense equipment on the city gate of Huian City wuthered, shooting bolts outside the city...

When those bloody figures entered the effective distance of the city-defense weapons at the city gate of Huian City, they immediately scattered like having been trained. At the same time, they accelerated towards the city gate dauntlessly while dodging

away from the strikes of the steam city-defense weapons.

Bloody figures were hit one after another by the ceaseless strikes of the city-defense weapons of Huian City, spurting out blood and falling down with shrill shrieks and roars; especially those being hit by the over 2-m long huge bolts would be broken into two halves at once...

However, those bloody figures moved too fast. Although they constantly fell onto the fields facing the strikes of the city-defense equipment of Huian City, it only took the rest of them 1 minute to arrive at the foot of the city wall. In such a short period, the city-defense weapons on the north city wall of Huian City made very limited achievements facing the loose formation of those bloody figures, their super fast speed and flexible movements...

After arriving at the foot of the north city wall of Huian City, those bloody figures immediately jumped over 10 m high and landed on the city wall before making a massacre over there...

Those common garrisons of Huian City were just LV 4 warriors, how could they defeat these LV 9 bloody figures.

The city wall of Huian City could block commoners and common soldiers; however, they were ineffective to those bloody figures at all.

As more and more bloody figures jumped onto the city wall, the attacking frequency of the city-defense weapons on the city wall decreased too, causing more bloody figures to jump onto the city wall...

The entire city wall of Huian City was filled with battle calls while the jarring alerts had long been ringing across Huian City...

As it happened too fast, there was even no omen. Therefore, when the shrilling alerts rang in Huian City, most of the people in the city were still confused about what happened. They didn't care about it at all...

...

The officer who raised high his sword and exclaimed was also a LV 9 fighter. After killing 3 bloody figures, he was also covered by more bloody figures on the city wall...

...

There was no knight among the 20,000-odd garrison soldiers. The garrison general in Huian City was just a LV 13 battle general. There were some strong fighters, battle masters and great battle masters below the garrison general. These people were all exerting their utmost efforts to fight those bloody figures on the city wall. However, as more and more bloody figures jumped onto the city walls, all of these officers were surrounded...

Even ants could bite an elephant to death. Those LV 9 bloody figures were wolves instead of ants.

Except for knights, even battle spirit-level powerhouses who had formed protective battle qis would not resist over 1,000 dauntless LV 9 fighters' ceaseless strikes, not to mention over 10,000 LV 9 fighters. Even knight's protective battle qi might be broken after reaching the critical moment facing constant strikes of so many LV 9 bloody figures, not to mention battle spirit-level protective battle qi. After their protective battle qis were broken, how long would they stand?

The garrison general was waving his huge sword while over 50 bloody figures had fallen down on his side with incomplete limbs. In the end, a bloody figure seized the opportunity to stab his saber into this LV 13 garrison general's back. When this garrison general became a bit still, five more sabers and swords were stabbed into his body at the same time...

The garrison general widely opened his furious eyes as he roared and swept across the 5 bloody figures in front of him with his huge sword, splitting them into 10 halves.



After killing 5 more bloody figures, the garrison general of Huian City immediately fell down onto the ground...

A bloody figure picked his sword and peel off his armor before putting it on its own body...

After the city wall of Huian City only resisted the contingent of bloody figures less than 10 minutes, more and more bloody figures grabbed the sabers and swords from the garrison soldiers on the city wall and peeled off the clothes and armors of those dead soldiers and officers before jumping off the city wall and sweeping across Huian City like a bloody wave...

The entire Huian City was filled with screams and cries...

...

In the mayor's mansion of Huian City...

"What...what...how could it happen in Huian City, Zhongzhou Province, an immortal province in Taixia Country..." After hearing that the north city wall of Huian City was broken through by bloody figures and the cries and screams of commoners across Huian City, the mayor directly threw himself onto the chair.

"Lord, hurry up, you'd better leave now..." The steward of the mayor's mansion persuaded the mayor with a pale face, "Those who have airships in the city have already boarded their own airships, our airship is ready too..."

However, the mayor seemed to have not heard the words of the steward; instead, he just watched the chief justice of Huian City in uniform with an absent-minded look and asked, "Has...has Lord Meng long known about the event today...whether these people are the rebels of Heavens Reaching Church..."

The chief justice of Huian City didn't look as good as the mayor. After hearing the mayor 's words, he just replied in a low voice, "The Huian Municipal Court has just received the intelligence from Zhongzhou Provincial Court. They told us to close the city gate

right away. As for the concrete...reasons, and where does...these bloody figures come from? Whether they're humans or demons, I have no idea..." After saying that, the chief justice of Huian Municipal Court looked determined as he cupped his hands towards the mayor, "As people's lives and properties were destroyed wantonly in Huian City, this humble officer has to investigate it and kill enemies instead of dragging out an ignoble existence. I have to leave, mayor, see you..."

After saying that, the chief justice of Huian City left the mayor's mansion decisively with two criminal hunters...

"Lord..." The steward persuaded anxiously once again. Huian City was just a small city; therefore, the cries and roars soon approached the mayor's mansion.

"Let my wife and daughter board the airship!" Watching the chief justice of Huian City leaving, the mayor of Huian City revealed a bitter smile as he waved his hand and said, "In this situation, if I escaped away instead of fulfilling my responsibility for the time being, I have to be killed in the end; additionally, my family members would be involved with my death penalty. In the earlier two holy wars, few mayors had escaped away from their cities in Taixia Country, I don't want to be the shameless one..."

"Lord..." The steward dropped off his tears.

"You too. Remember to look after my wife and daughter in the future..." The mayor waved his hand as he picked off his walking sword from the wall and said, "I will stay here..."

...

2 minutes later, a mini airship flew off the mayor's mansion. All the guards and soldiers inside the mayor's mansion were mobilized as they were ready to protect the mayor's mansion together with the mayor...

In the lobby of the mayor's mansion, the mayor just sat on the

main seat. He put one hand onto his sword handle as he touched the golden official seal of the mayor of Huian City by the other hand...

The official seal of mayor in Taixia Country was not only a symbol of authority but also an alchemist equipment. At the critical moment, it would have a special function. Such a small official seal was the beacon tower of Huian City.

The mayor of Huian City had not imagined that he could use the other function of this official seal. He might be the first one who used that function among the nine immortal provinces in Taixia Country...

...

Only after about 7 minutes later, the battle calls and screams of guards of the mayor's mansion had sounded. After another 2 minutes, with a loud sound "bang", the gate of the mayor's mansion was broken while a bloody figure broke in...

...

At this moment, a bloody light beam shot into the sky from the mayor's mansion like a signal. After reaching about 70 miles high, it turned into two burning words——Huian City, which lasted for a long time and could be seen clearly within 700 miles...

Meanwhile, the official seals of all the mayors in Zhongzhou Province started to rock and turn scarlet; even so, they could still vaguely see the two words "Huian City" on their own seals.

Half an hour later, when two knights of Zhongzhou Provincial Court hurriedly arrived at Huian City, they found that the entire city had turned into a bloody and dead city. All the streets, alleys, houses, hotels, schools and stores had been covered with blood and corpses. After rushing into the city like killers and fierce beasts, over 30,000 LV 9 bloody figures soon turned this small city into hell...

The greater part of Huian City was burning in fierce flames, including corpses and the famous liquors...

After seeing this, the two knights widely opened their eyes due to fury; however, the contingent of bloody figures had long escaped to all directions...

When those bloody figures ran out of Pingsha Valley, they were naked; however, at this moment, they had long put on clothes, armors and helmets and held weapons...

On the same day, four other cities around Pingsha Valley encountered the similar catastrophe. As a result, dozens of towns and villages turned into ruins; over 500,000 people were killed or wounded. Longxi Prefecture in Zhongzhou Province was in an emergency situation...

The flames of war rose in the immortal province plunged so many people into misery and suffering in one day and shocked the entire Taixia Country...

# Chapter 1050: Guests from Neighboring Provinces

---

On August 18, Xuantian City, at the foot of Yangui Mountain Range, Fire Dragon Bounty Territory...

From yesterday, the number of airships accessing to Xuantian City had increased abruptly. This early morning, with the arrival of airboats, the entire Xuantian City became boisterous. Being covered with airships and airboats, the sky outside Xuantian City was as boisterous as a marketing place.

It was very difficult for commoners in Xuantian City to take a look at an airboat; however, this morning, they had seen 4-5 airboats in total. It was said that one of them belonged to the provincial governor of Youzhou Province. It was definitely a major event for the provincial governor of Youzhou Province to come to Xuantian Cheng. However, the biggest event in Xuantian City today was that Cui Li, the Fire Dragon Hermit and the owner of Fire Dragon Bounty Territory was going to hold the opening ceremony of his Iron-Dragon Sect.

Xuantian City had not been so boisterous before. That day, all the residents in Xuantian City felt proud as they were living in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory for the first time. It seemed that all of them enjoyed the glory of being native residents. As a result, the entire city became spirited today.

All the major clans in Youzhou Province, Tongzhou Province and Yanzhou Province within Northeast Military Region which were qualified to receive the golden invitation cards had converged in Xuantian City on that day.

As Fire-Dragon Bounty Territory neighbored the three provinces, according to the etiquette of Taixia Country, all the major clans in the three provinces had received Zhang Tie's golden invitation cards.

Of course, If Zhang Tie was already a shadow knight, he was qualified to deliver his golden invitation cards across the Northeast Military Region. If he advanced to a heavenly knight, his invitation cards could reach across Taixia Country.

On that day, Zhang Tie's Iron-Dragon Golden Invitation Cards absolutely implied the arrivers' statuses. All those major clans in the three provinces who could receive Zhang Tie's golden invitation cards had clan knights. As for the other clans, even if they were rich, they had no clan knight and they were not qualified to receive Zhang Tie's golden invitation cards.

How could commoners receive the golden invitation cards of an earth knight? Zhang Tie's golden invitation card was almost as important as that of a provincial governor, which would be popular wherever it was.

Actually, many clans which had not received the golden invitation cards had arrived in the three provinces these days. After knowing that Iron-Dragon Sect was going to hold an opening ceremony, the major figures in these clans had arrived at Xuantian City with their clan disciples on the early morning of that day and were patiently waiting for the opportunities and asking for intelligence.

Now that Fire Dragon Hermit was going to establish a sect, he would definitely enroll apprentices on the day. The news that an earth knight was going to enroll his apprentices was very attractive to the clans which had no knight. Additionally, everybody had known that Fire Dragon Hermit had a great battle strength as he was cultivating the precise marquis-level classic "Fire Dragon Sutra". With his great battle strength, Fire Dragon Hermit had killed more than one demon knight and knight of Three-eye Association in the Earth-elements Realm. Due to his remarkable military exploits, Fire Dragon Hermit was rewarded with Fire Dragon Bounty Territory.

As for those clans which had no knights, if they could find such a

reliance and enable their clan disciples to have a chance to touch the marquis-level cultivation classic, these clans would almost like to pay any price for that.

Yesterday, the gate of the manor of the official mansion in Xuantian City had been hung with a new plaque. The bottom of the plaque was made of gold while the words on it were made of gold which looked very overbearing——Xuantian Courtyard of Iron-Dragon Sect. The plaque was 2.3 m in length and 0.67 m in width.

Since this plague was hung outside, it indicated that Iron-Dragon Sect had officially rooted in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory. Before the site of Iron-Dragon Sect was officially completed, this Xuantian Courtyard of Iron-Dragon Sect would become the temporary window and stronghold of the sect.

On the early morning of August 18, the street outside Xuantian Courtyard of Iron-Dragon Sect had been overcrowded like rabbits in a warren. As for commoners in Xuantian City, even if they could not enter Xuantian Courtyard, they might feel worthwhile to take a look at those big figures and airboats which they might not have a chance to ride for the rest of their lives.

Especially for those people who had kids, they had to join in the fun. If Fire Dragon Hermit enrolled his disciples on the day the Iron-Dragon Sect held its opening ceremony, they might help their kids seize an opportunity for a shortcut towards wealth and reputation. Such plots always existed in novels and stories. When a master passed by somewhere, he suddenly found a brat who looked special; as he valued the high talent, he intended to enroll the brat as his apprentice. Similarly, if their kids were valued by Fire Dragon Hermit when he passed by them, they would make a mint. Nobody could ensure those common clans would have no knights.

So many families had kids, not to mention those juveniles. Those young people who were ambitious about learning battle skills in the 10 cities of Fire Dragon Bounty Territory had come to Xuantian

City by batches many days ago. They were raising heads, waiting for the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect and seeking for an opportunity to join in Iron-Dragon Sect.

As too many people were gathering outside Xuantian Courtyard of Iron-Dragon Sect, all the landlords and despotic gentries in Xuantian City became spirited at once as they mobilized their subordinate people to maintain the order outside the Xuantian Courtyard of Iron-Dragon Sect on their own initiative.

At this moment, Xuantian City was as boisterous as the grand occasion that major clans competed for the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province 4 years ago.

Almost all the major clans and clans with knights which were invited to attend the opening ceremony arrived here by airboats or airships. Those airboats or airships directly landed at the airship base in Xuantian Courtyard of Iron-Dragon Sect. Some people outside the Xuantian Courtyard would scream after they identified the backgrounds of the airships or airboats, causing the surrounding people to exclaim...

After 8 am, another dark red airboat longer than 200 m arrived and slowly landed in the Xuantian Courtyard of Iron-Dragon Sect. At the sight of that airboat and the special clan slogan on it, someone in the courtyard immediately shouted the background of this airboat.

"Ahh, it's the airboat of Zhu family, the family of the provincial governor of Yanzhou Province. Zhu family also assigned people to attend the opening ceremony in Xuantian City..."

The scream aroused many people's exclamations.

...

In the courtyard, when the airboat landed, the hatch door opened; a well-dressed old man then got off the airboat followed by over 10 disciples of the Zhu family while raising their heads.



"Zhu Xudong, the elder of Zhu Clan of Jinghong Palace in Yanzhou...arrives with Zhu disciples..." A receptionist from Wang Clan of Yushun Palace reported the name and background of the arrivers loudly. Hearing that, everybody in the courtyard would almost know that the representatives of the clan of the provincial governor of Yanzhou Province had arrived.

The moment Zhu representatives arrived, disciples of Wang Clan who was responsible for the reception immediately led them to the main venue of the opening ceremony politely and considerately.

It was the most welcome opportunity for the disciples of Wang Clan of Yushun Palace in Ning'an City to meet the influential figures of major clans in the three provinces. After receiving this task, Wang Clan had put this task into the first place of the entire clan. Many elites of Wang Clan had been called back. Those disciples of Wang Clan in Xuantian Courtyard today included male and female servants, stewards and many young disciples of Wang Clan. All of them were specially selected. They had assigned people for each detail. As they had to satisfy Fire Dragon Hermit and glorify Wang Clan, Wang Clan had regarded this reception task as an honor.

The main venue of the opening ceremony was in an open land, which was a former training field in Xuantian Courtyard. Through careful renovation, this place had already become the most brilliant place in Iron-Dragon Sect for the time being.

The arrivers were led to their own seats by the receptionists of Wang Clan.

On this venue, the locations of clans being invited were strictly arranged according to power and reputation.

As Zhu clan's team walked towards their own seats, they kept hailing people in the surroundings who stood up one batch after another.

Those arrivers were all led by clan elders or knights. According to

the etiquette, they had to come; however, the elders and knights who came here didn't look as relaxed as that when they attended similar opening ceremonies before. Even if they looked relaxed, they didn't mean it faithfully. Most of the people at present looked a bit worried. As they hailed each other, they were whispering about what happened in Zhongzhou Province and exchanging their news.

As the official opening ceremony had not started yet, Fire Dragon Hermit was not here. Therefore, the atmosphere at present was a bit casual for the time being.

The opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect was more like a meeting among the major clans from Youzhou Province, Tongzhou Province and Yanzhou Province within the territory of Northeast Military Region in the special period.

These days, what happened in Zhongzhou Province had been spread over Taixia Country; perhaps, those commoners outside Xuantian Courtyard were too far away from what happened in Zhongzhou Province. Even though they had heard some details, they didn't have deep feelings about it. Many commoners just treated the event in Zhongzhou Province as a rebellion. However, what happened in Zhongzhou Province was a matter of life or death for these major clans with knights which had deeply rooted in Taixia Country.

The mansion of Zhu Clan was close to Huaiyuan Palace and the mansion of Qian Clan, the clan of the provincial governor of Tongzhou Province. As the provincial governors' clans which had earth knights and ruled the provinces, of course, these clans' representatives were in the front.

Elder Muyu arrived here on behalf of Huaiyuan Palace; Elder Qian Haichao arrived here on behalf of Qian Clan. When Zhu elder led their team here, Elder Muyu and Elder Qian Haichao were whispering to each other while being surrounded by the knights and elders of the other major clans from the three provinces.

Everybody in this circle looked a bit solemn...

Only after a few days, the entire Zhongzhou Province had become increasingly chaotic...

# Chapter 1051: The Background of Bloody Sea

---

"Elder Zhu..." Elder Muyu and Elder Qian stopped talking and greeted Elder Zhu when they saw elder Zhu and the youngsters of Zhu Clan walking towards them.

"I've not imagined that Elder Muyu and Elder Qian have arrived ahead of me!" Elder Zhu revealed a faint smile as he waved his hand, letting the youngsters of Zhu Clan take seats over there. He then walked towards this circle.

The lowest level and rank in the circle was a knight and elder from the three provinces. Although each of them was followed by many clan disciples, those clan disciples were not qualified to join the fun in this circle.

"I was told that Huaiyuan Palace provided the intelligence about the demon's nestle in Pingsha Valley." Elder Zhu put it straight the moment he came over here.

After hearing this news, all the surrounding knights became shocked. All of them watched Elder Muyu with unbelievable looks, including Elder Qian. Although they were caring about what happened in Zhongzhou Province these couple days, they had not imagined that the intelligence in Pingsha Valley of Zhongzhou Province was passed from Huaiyuan Palace, Youzhou Province.

However, Elder Muyu was not too amazed. Because this news should be exposed to the public sooner or later. Even though Elder Zhu didn't ask him about that, he would also disseminate this news at a proper moment today because this news was closely related to the interests of Huaiyuan Palace. Now that Elder Zhu asked him about that at this moment, it implied that Zhu Clan had long guessed that Huaiyuan Palace would release this news on its own initiative; additionally, if Zhu elder asked Elder Muyu about it, it could indirectly raise Zhu Clan's position in Northeast Military Region.

Yanzhou Province was not only one of the 36 upper provinces in Taixia Country, but also the most prosperous place in Northeast Military Region. Additionally, it was the core province the Northeast Military Region and the station of the Northeast Military Region Headquarters. As Yanzhou had a higher position than other provinces, of course, the provincial governor of Yanzhou Province was closer to the commander of Northeast Military Region and it was reasonable for Zhu Clan to know this news earlier than the other clans.

The clan elders were all very shrewd. In this occasion, they would not utter without consideration. Although this occasion seemed casual, the moment the influential figures of major clans gathered here, it would become an invisible arena full of competitions. Seriously, it was like a diplomatic reception among countries on other continents and subcontinents. Actually, even luxurious diplomatic receptions on many subcontinents couldn't gather so many major clans.

Elder Muyu nodded and admitted Elder Zhu's words directly, "The intelligence in Pingsha Valley of Zhongzhou Province was indeed revealed to Supreme Court in Xuanyuan Hill by Huaiyuan Palace!"

"Huaiyuan Palace is in Youzhou Province; how could it get hang of the secrets in Zhongzhou Province?" Elder Qian asked, which resonated with the other knights and clan elders.

They were all shocked by Huaiyuan Palace's overall strength. How could Huaiyuan Palace's tentacles reach Zhongzhou Province, which was far away from Youzhou Province? It was unimaginable!

"All of you must have known that the castellan of Jinwu City was almost assassinated one day before the event in Zhongzhou Province!" Elder Muyu looked around as he knew immediately what they were thinking about, "Zhang Ping, the castellan of Jinwu City is the father of Elder Mushen of Huaiyuan Palace. When the assassinator launched a raid, Zhang Ping was saved by a

hero who was passing Jinwu City and survived that assassination. Later on, Jinwu City carried out a large-scale search and caught one accomplice with the help of the hero. Through interrogation with torture, Huaiyuan Palace got the background of the assassinator. The culprit of that assassination was the very force that framed Elder Mushen in Fuhai City 4 years ago. They might have colluded with demons; additionally, they have a base in Pingsha Valley in Zhongzhou Province. After receiving this intelligence, Huaiyuan Palace reported it to the Supreme Court at once. With the arrangement of the Supreme Court, the Zhongzhou Provincial Court assigned a lot of powerhouses to raid Pingsha Valley in the same evening, arousing the chaotic situation in Zhongzhou Province..."

Elder Muyu's words were not completely true; however, the fake part would not be known by anyone else except for Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang. Even Huaiyuan Palace believed that it was the truth, not to mention others.

After hearing Elder Muyu's words, everyone became suddenly enlightened. None of them could imagine that the culprit of this tragedy in Zhongzhou Province could be involved with the tragedy in Fuhai City 4 years ago. The details made people faintly scared.

"Thankfully, the key intelligence provided by Huaiyuan Palace enabled Zhongzhou Provincial Court to launch a raid and destroy the layout of the culprit in Zhongzhou Province timely; otherwise, when the opponent prepared to launch an attack, the corps of over 100,000 LV 9 bloody fighters might cause much greater trouble in Zhongzhou Province!" Elder Zhu also nodded with a solemn look as he continued, "The knight-level powerhouses from Zhongzhou Provincial Court killed over 40,000 LV 9 bloody figures underground Pingsha Valley and in its surroundings; although the Bi'an Camp of Zhongzhou Provincial Court suffered a loss of over 4500 people, it was fortunate that the knight-level powerhouses of Zhongzhou Provincial Court could kill 1/3 of the corps of bloody

figures in the nestle of bloody figures in Pingsha Valley. Besides, Zhongzhou Provincial Court found an arsenal under Pingsha Valley which had not been used yet. The weapons inside could easily arm all the bloody figures to the teeth..."

Of course, it was a great meritorious deed to inflict a great loss to the enemies in their nestle. If hundreds of thousands of LV 9 fierce murderers suddenly appeared in any province; even if these people could not break in a Class A city, the surroundings outside the Class A city would be scared too much. Many villages would deteriorate into slaughterhouses everyday; the provinces would also be destroyed rapidly...

That was what Zhongzhou Province was suffering now. All the LV 9 bloody figures had separated. Additionally, many bloody figures had run out of Longxi Prefecture and were committing murder and arson everywhere, causing great chaos. Like a virus in a human body, it's growing more and more destructive in Zhongzhou Province. Zhongzhou Province and two neighboring provinces had assigned all of their local corps. However, it was impossible for them to suppress the chaos in Zhongzhou Province in a few days.

Lately, the Supreme Court had offered a reward, many bounty hunters in provinces and prefectures of Taixia Country had poured into Zhongzhou Province...

"Elder Zhu, I was told that the corps of those bloody figures came from a bizarre place beneath Pingsha Valley. Is it called Bloody Sea?" A knight of a clan in Yanzhou Province asked a question which all the others at present were concerned about, "I'm really curious about the Bloody Sea."

Not every knight in Taixia Country had heard about Bloody Sea. As the secret methods of Bloody Soul Temple were involved with the interests of the top 7 sects in Taixia Country, very few people knew about Bloody Sea.

However, now that the tragedy had happened, the secret method could never be concealed anymore; therefore, Zhu Elder started to introduce it to the public after being silent for a few seconds.

"Bloody Sea is the No. 1 secret method of Bloody Soul Temple. According to the legend, the Blood Sea of Bloody Soul Temple could enable knights who were dying or suffering fatal wounds to gain new lives only by squeezing one blood drop into Bloody Sea. After gaining the new lives, they would have the battle strength of a black iron knight the moment they woke up. Additionally, their soul and spiritual energy would never die. As long as the Bloody Sea was established, it almost indicated that the knights of Bloody Soul Temple became eternal. As Bloody Sea violated the universal laws too much, Bloody Soul Temple failed to build it even in 100 years. Additionally, the intelligence was exposed; therefore Bloody Soul Temple was exterminated together with the building method of Bloody Sea by the top seven sects in Taixia Country!"

"Ahh, do you mean that the Bloody Sea has been built by someone?"

"The Bloody Sea beneath Pingsha Valley was a simplified or incomplete version as this Bloody Sea could only produce LV 9 fighters instead of knights. Now that Bloody Soul Temple couldn't make it in 100 years, not to mention others. However, this simplified Bloody Sea was special. It might have combined with the parent puppet worms of demons. Through autopsy, they found the trace of combining with demon's puppet worms in the brains of those bloody figures according to the message from Zhongzhou Province. That's the most terrifying point..."

Hearing this intelligence, all the others became silent.

Zhu Elder watched Elder Muyu with a solemn look as he said, "According to the remaining information of Bloody Soul Temple, Bloody Demon Imitation Method and Bloody Sea both originated from Bloody Soul Temple and were closely related with each other. The one who could build Bloody Sea must have mastered the



Bloody Demon Imitation Method in advance!"

"Elder Mushen, through this event, we know that Elder Mushen was evidently wronged. The one who framed Elder Mushen and mastered Bloody Demon Imitation Method must be on the side of the Heavens Reaching Church which colluded with demons. Previously, we were not sure whether this man indeed existed; however, this time, the Bloody Sea beneath Pingsha Valley could definitely prove that that culprit indeed exists; additionally, he is a member of Heavens Reaching Church. As Elder Mushen inflicted a great loss to the Heavens Reaching Church in Youzhou Province, he incurred the hatred of Heavens Reaching Church; therefore, the remnants of Heavens Reaching Church framed Elder Mushen's family a couple of times. We wonder what the Supreme Court would explain it to Elder Mushen and Huaiyuan Palace?"

# Chapter 1052: A Chance of Reversal

---

"Supreme Court didn't give me an explanation until I left Huaiyuan Palace today; neither did they contact Huaiyuan Palace!" Elder Muyu answered Zhu Elder calmly.

"Before coming to Xuantian City, our master told us that if Supreme Court didn't revoke the arrest order of Elder Mushen and declare Elder Mushen's innocence these days, our master would write a letter to Supreme Court for revoking it in the identity of the provincial governor of Yanzhou Province!" Zhu Elder said out of rage.

After the informed clans in Taixia Country got the intelligence about the event in Zhongzhou Province, they all sensed that the tragedy in Fuhai City might be reversed. It was just a matter of time to withdraw the arrest order of Elder Mushen from Huaiyuan Palace.

Over the past 4 years, Elder Mushen had won one-sided sympathy in the folks. Many people felt that Elder Mushen was a remarkable, affectionate man, who had made meritorious deeds in fighting demons in both Waii Subcontinent and Taixia Country. How could such a person be driven mad and do such a terrifying thing in Fuhai city only after being refused for a proposal of marriage?

Public opinions caused a great stress to the Supreme Court; however, before gaining any latest evidence, the Supreme Court stuck to its original judgment. After the event in Zhongzhou Province broke out, if the Supreme Court still stuck to the earlier evidence and judgment, it was nothing different than jumping into a firey pit themselves. How could the Supreme Court bear the furious public opinions across the country?

If the conspiracy was not discovered timely, Zhongzhou Provincial Court would suffer much greater loss. Seriously, the

Supreme Court of Taixia Country and the Zhongzhou Provincial Court didn't fulfill their responsibilities for inspection; therefore, Heavens Reaching Church and Wen family could have a chance to build the simplified Bloody Sea in the territory of Zhongzhou Province and arouse a great trouble.

The culprit on the back of Heavens Reaching Church had revenged Zhang family a couple of times. After their conspiracy was exposed, the culprit's trace was revealed; a province had been chaotic. The one who mastered the Bloody Demon Imitation Method had revealed his trace. If the Supreme Court still wanted to arrest Elder Mushen, many people would doubt that the Supreme Court was on the same side with Heavens Reaching Church; otherwise, how the Supreme Court could not discover the conspiracy of Heavens Reaching Church and arrest the culprit on the back of Heavens Reaching Church? Why the one who discovered the conspiracy of Heavens Reaching Church was still being wanted by Supreme Court...

Facing such a great stress and strict condemnation, even the top three chancellors in Taixia Country could not sleep well.

"Elder Mushen's case is most wronged in Taixia Country. If Elder Mushen's case was not reversed, who would dare to fight Heavens Reaching Church in the future? If the Supreme Court didn't reverse Elder Mushen's case, as a member of Northeast Military Region, our Qian Clan would also write a letter to the Supreme Court to ask for fairness for Elder Mushen!" The Qian Elder also clarified his position at present.

After two clans with provincial governors determined to support Elder Mushen at present, all the other knights and elders in the circle hurriedly echoed.

Elder Muyu cupped his hands and bowed towards them around him as if he was moved by them pretty much, "Thanks for your righteousness, Huaiyuan Palace will bear it in mind for sure!"

"After attending the opening ceremony of Fire Dragon Hermit, Zhu Clan will assign clan disciples and knight-level powerhouses to Zhongzhou Province. We will make our efforts for the safety of Zhongzhou Province; meanwhile, we could gain the first-hand news. I wonder about your plans..." Zhu Elder opened his mouth again.

As Zhu Clan was most powerful in the crowd, the others faintly treated Zhu Elder as the most prestigious one in this circle. Even Elder Muyu and Elder Qian didn't mean to steal the show.

"Huaiyuan Palace also has this plan..."

"To tell the truth, as the leader of Qian Clan's team, considering the fierce flames of war in the holy war, I think it's not bad for the younger generation to practice themselves on the battlefields..." Although Qian Clan also had a provincial governor, it had just moved to Tongzhou a bit more than 2 decades ago. Besides an earth knight-level provincial governor, the entire Qian Clan only had 3 knight-level elders, which could not even match that of Huaiyuan Palace. After the master of Lu Clan in Spiritualsea Prefecture of Youzhou Province promoted to an earth knight, even Lu Clan had more knights than Qian Clan. Therefore, in this situation, the Qian Elder had to be low-key.

"We also have this plan. It's a long trip from here to Zhongzhou Province. I'm afraid that Zhu Clan needs to go there by airboat. If so, we might have to bother Zhu Elder and take a ride of your airboat..." Another knight on one side said.

Elder Zhu watched those who agreed with him with a faint smile. Zhu Clan's reputation and power definitely ranked first in the Northeast Military Region. Although Commander Cheng Honglie was powerful, his base was actually in Yaozhou Province instead of Northeast Military Region.

...

At this moment, a loud report drifted from the receptionist

outside the venue, "Guo Hongyi, the master of Guo Clan of Threespring Prefecture...is coming..."

Closely after the report, a woman in scarlet longuette had entered the venue being accompanied by some guards.

There was more than one female knight in the venue; however, Guo Hongyi was the only female knight-level master of a clan across Northeast Military Region. Additionally, Guo Hongyi didn't take any clan disciple but some guards. Being especially eye-catching, her qi field could immediately defeat the other clans' knights and elders.

After arriving at the venue, Guo Hongyi raised her head and threw a glance at those knights and elders who were gathering together and nodded towards them. After that, she came to the seats of Guo Clan under the guidance of Wang Clan's disciples.

"Lu Dingzhi, the master of Lu Clan of Spiritualmaple Prefecture in Youzhou Province...is coming..."

After the report, personable Lu Dingzhi entered the venue with two clan elders and Lu disciples...

After Lu Dingzhi lost the competition for the provincial governor of Youzhou Province 4 years ago, he had been cultivating at home. Later on, although it was said that he had promoted to an earth knight, Lu Dingzhi didn't show up. Honestly, it was Lu Dingzhi's first time to show up in the public after the competition for the provincial governor of Youzhou Province.

As Lu Dingzhi had promoted to an earth knight, all the black iron knights and elders at present nodded towards him on their own initiative out of etiquette and regulations.

Lu Dingzhi didn't hold any office; therefore, he could come here; if not, it was improper for an official of Taixia Country and an earth knight to attend the opening ceremony of another earth knight.

In the later short period, all the influential figures from the major clans of the three neighboring provinces arrived consecutively. All the clans which competed for the provincial governor of Youzhou Province 4 years ago had assigned their representatives here, including Gu Dashou, the master of Gu Clan. How boisterous it was in the Xuantian Courtyard of Iron-Dragon Sect!

What was a bit unimaginable was that the representatives of Li Clan, which was closest to Xuantian City arrived a bit later. As all those at present were shrewd, only after thinking about it a second, they had understood it right away. Li Clan's representatives arrived a bit later purposefully. Li Clan also had knights; additionally, Li Clan's Miyun Prefecture neighbored Fire Dragon Bounty Territory. Actually, Xuantian Cheng was divided from Miyun Prefecture. Among the major clans' representatives at present, maybe Li Clan's representatives had most complex moods. As a power suddenly appeared on Li Clan's side, Li Clan might not have thought through how to make contact with this new power. If Li Clan's representatives arrived too early, others might think that Li Clan was trying to flatter Fire Dragon Hermit; if they didn't come, Li Clan would offend Fire Dragon Hermit; therefore, Li Clan's representatives arrived a bit late purposefully. Whatever, it was not impolite as long as they arrived before the opening ceremony.

After more and more people arrived, they started to gather in groups as they exchanged intelligence and news in low voices. Those talkative disciples chatted here and there in the venue. Only after a little while, the intelligence about the event in Zhongzhou Province which was talked by Zhang Clan, Zhu Clan and Qian Clan had spread over the other clans' elders and masters, including the secret method of Bloody Sea and that the case of Elder Mushen of Huaiyuan Palace was going to be reversed soon. These intelligence were indeed what they were concerned about.

After Li Clan of Miyun Prefecture arrived, masters and elders of

some clans and small and medium-sized sects in Yanzhou Province and Tongzhou Province such as Longwind Sect, Huge Saber Sect, Immortal Fist Position Sect arrived too. By then, almost all the influential clans and sects in Youzhou Province, Yanzhou Province and Tongzhou Province had arrived. It was just a bit late than 9 am, about 20 minutes away from the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect.

Immortal Fist Position Sect had already been founded for over 100 years in Yanzhou Province. The team of Immortal Fist Position Sect here was led by Nangong Sheng, Strong Cloud Hermit, the master of this sect, which shocked all the guests at present.

Nangong Sheng, Strong Cloud Hermit founded Immortal Fist Position Sect in Yanzhou Province 100 years ago. After so many years' development, the sect had been very famous across the Northeast Military Region. As Strong Cloud Hermit promoted to an earth knight 20 years ago, the Immortal Fist Position Sect became the only major sect with an earth knight within Northeast Military Region. Benefited from this, Immortal Fist Position Sect became more popular and always thought that they could rank first among so many sects in Northeast Military Region; at the same time, all the other sects in Yanzhou Province felt suppressed in front of Immortal Fist Position Sect.

Nangong Sheng, Strong Cloud Hermit came here with the only two knight-level elders of Immortal Fist Position Sect and some core disciples. Such a team was a bit over "luxurious"...

Watching the solemn looks of all the team members of Nangong Sheng, many guests thought, 'Is there a good show today?'

# Chapter 1053: An Uninvited Guest

---

"Nangong Sheng, Strong Cloud Hermit, also the master of Immortal Fist Position Sect is well known in Yanzhou Province. A Wang disciple told me that an elder of Immortal Fist Position Sect said something before getting off the airship..."

"What did he say?"

"The elder said that even Immortal Fist Position Sect and Strong Cloud Hermit did not have an airboat, how could Fire Dragon Hermit have the qualification to own an airboat? When Strong Cloud Hermit heard it, he just replied with a cold muffled voice. Additionally, through my observation, I found that the master and two knight-level elders of Immortal Fist Position Sect looked not good, Hermit, you need to pay attention to them..."

"Which secret method does Strong Cloud Hermit cultivate? Is he very powerful?"

"Strong Cloud Hermit founded Immortal Fist Position Sect in Yanzhou Province 100 years ago. He promoted to an earth knight 30 years ago. It's said that Strong Cloud Hermit cultivates Strong Cloud Sutra, a viscount-level secret method and Thunder-like Immortal Fist Position..."

Zhang Tie was sitting in an old-fashioned wooden armchair in a brilliant robe made of boa silk in a room away from the venue in Xuantian Courtyard. At the same time, he touched his bald head and listened to the report about the information in the venue from Wang Chongde, the master of Wang Clan.

...

It was said that "Xia Ping" had disappeared after receiving the reward of millions of gold coins from Jinwu Business Group.

After Xia Ping disappeared, Zhang Tie returned to Xuantian City silently and prepared for the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon



Sect. At the same time, he paid close attention to the situation in Zhongzhou Province.

Previously, Zhang Tie thought that Pingsha Valley was just a nestle of a killers' organization. He didn't know that there was a time bomb under the ground of Pingsha Valley. The culprit and those b\*stards of Heavens Reaching Church were overconfident. They thought that their killers would not leak any intelligence even if they failed the task; however, they could never imagine that their killers could meet a freak who had almost reached the supreme realm of Soul Forbidden Method, a secret method of Bloody Soul Temple.

'It seems that the God really favors me. The secret method of Bloody Soul Temple that I cultivate could expose the Bloody Sea of Bloody Soul Temple in Zhongzhou Province. Even I've not imagined about the series of chain reactions.'

'However, there's one point that I could confirm, namely, the Supreme Court of Taixia Country might soon revoke the order for arresting me according to the intelligence that my elder brother got from Xuanyuan Hill lately. It also means that the identity of Zhang Tie might return to Youzhou Province aboveboard only in a few days.'

Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could hear this good news so fast.

Previously, Zhang Tie made great efforts to prepare the identity of Fire Dragon Hermit for reuniting with his family members in Youzhou Province. However, he had not imagined that soon after he returned to Youzhou Province, the series of events had brought a chance to reverse his case.

After what happened lately, Zhang Tie felt that the secular world was like a pot of assorted porridge, which contained many ingredients. Everyone was trying their best to add something in this pot so that the assorted porridge could become more similar to

the flavor that they favored. However, the fact was that nobody could figure out the flavor of the assorted porridge as many people added ingredients to the pot. Nobody could have the assorted porridge to taste absolutely as same as that they wanted.

Only knights were qualified to add ingredients into this pot.

'I cannot acquire the flavor of the assorted porridge; if not, I will not be wronged and have to escape.'

'Neither could the culprit and those b\*stards of Heavens Reaching Church. If not, they would not have exposed the secrets in Pingsha Valley after assigning some killers to assassinate my dad.'

'Even Emperor Xuanyuan couldn't do it; if not, he would never f\*cking disappear for so many years.'

'Even Elzida the great prophet couldn't do it...'

'Heavens Fortune Sect couldn't do it either...'

'Even weirdos and freaks like me couldn't do it, not to mention Strong Cloud Hermit, the master of the damn Immortal Fist Position Sect.'

'It took him 7 decades to promote to an earth knight by cultivating a viscount-level secret method. He has just promoted to an earth knight for about 30 years, at most the 6 changes realm viscount-level earth knight. I'm afraid that he has not even joined the large-scale battle between human knights and demon knights in the Earth-elements Realm. He's just a bit better than a passer-by in front of me. How dare he cause me trouble? Does he really treat himself as something?'

'Is he here to enliven the atmosphere for the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect? I swear to God, I've not employed such a performer!'

Zhang Tie yawned. After receiving 10 batches of candidates of local representatives of the 10 cities in Fire Dragon Bounty

Territory, he felt a bit bored even though each batch of people cost him only a couple of minutes.

"That's fine, don't care about that. The elder of Immortal Fist Position Sect purposefully said that so that the Wang disciple could report it to me!" Zhang Tie waved his hand like chasing off a fly, "Is there any relation between Immortal Fist Position Sect and Taiyi Fantasy Sect?"

After hearing this question, Wang Chongde, the master of Wang Clan threw an amazed and awe-stricken glance at Zhang Tie. Although Zhang Tie always looked indifferent, his question cut to the heart of the matter. Actually, Wang Chongde had considered about this question for a long while. He had even carefully negotiated it with some elders of Wang Clan. However, he had not imagined that the Fire Dragon Hermit could cut to the core so fast.

"Immortal Fist Position Sect is closely related to Taiyi Fantasy Sect. When Nangong Sheng, the Strong Cloud Hermit promoted to an earth knight and held a chakra rotating ceremony in the territory of Immortal Fist Position Sect, the elders of Taiyi Fantasy Sect even traveled a great distance to congratulate him with a lavish gift. From then on, Immortal Fist Position Sect had laid its foundation in Youzhou Province and Northeast Military Region. It's said that one son of Nangong Sheng is a disciple of Taiyi Fantasy Sect..."

'I see, he's assuming the authority of Taiyi Fantasy Sect as his own so as to show off the prestige of Immortal Fist Position Sect.'

Zhang Tie understood it right away, 'Nangong Sheng might have already known that Taiyi Fantasy Sect lost the bet the moment my airboat arrived at Fire Dragon Bounty Territory. Perhaps, Taiyi Fantasy Sect have contacted him and told him to do something; additionally, my Fire Dragon Bounty Territory is in the territory of Northeast Military Region and I'm going to open a sect here; therefore, Strong Cloud Hermit arrived with most of his elites with bad looks.

'Hoho, interesting!'

"Have all the guests on the name-list arrived?"

"Yes, Immortal Fist Position Sect's representatives were the last one to arrive!" The master of Wang Clan replied respectfully.

After hearing it, Zhang Tie stood up from his armchair as he said, "Let's go. I will meet the heroes and powerhouses in the three provinces of Northeast Military Region in the venue!"

"Ahh..." The master of Wang Clan became faintly startled as he suggested, "But the lucky time has not arrived. It's still 20 minutes left!"

"Never mind. Honestly, the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect is to actually invite some people to have a dinner and know each other like how a store opens. By the way, we will see who's on which side and whether there're good business partners. Now that all of them have arrived, I don't have to stay here, let's go..." Zhang Tie said as he exited the room.

The master of Wang Clan trotted after Zhang Tie as he asked, "What...what about those gifts?"

"Push them out now so as to enliven the atmosphere. When a store opened, the boss would always carry out a promotion such as drawing lots for a prize or hitting gold eggs for a prize. Now that Iron-Dragon Sect is going to open, we have to be more boisterous than a new store. We need to warm up the atmosphere, hahaha..."

After hearing these words, Wang Chongde became silent. Because only Fire Dragon Hermit could do that. After knowing what were those gifts, Wang Chongde was too shocked to utter any word for quite a while. What was more, those gifts were used to enliven the atmosphere in the venue. He had not ever heard anyone who could be so luxurious in an opening ceremony across Taixia Country, not to mention within Northeast Military Territory.

...

In the venue, Zhang Yang was faintly frowning and listening to a disciple of Immortal Fist Position Sect speaking loudly and proudly in the far.

Zhang Yang's seat was next to those of Huaiyuan Palace. He came here with his two sons, Zhang Chengxu and Zhang Chengze, who were a bit younger than Zhang Chengan. However, it was time for them to broaden their horizon. According to the agreement between him and Zhang Tie, Zhang Yang brought the two boys here.

In the venue, there were many kids at the age of Zhang Chengxu and Zhang Chengze. All the clans' representatives were clear in mind that it was a rare opportunity for them to gain the guidance of an earth knight, even the major clans within Northeast Military Territory.

The seats of Immortal Fist Position Sect were beside those of Huaiyuan Palace, which were the most eye-catching ones in the venue. This indicated that Iron-Dragon Sect paid special tribute to Immortal Fist Position Sect.

However, Strong Cloud Hermit's team members didn't pay respect to Iron-Dragon Sect at all. Some disciples of Iron-Dragon Sect were talking about something with those disciples of the surrounding clans. Hearing their talks, Zhang Yang frowned.

However, the master and the two elders of Immortal Fist Position Sect fully ignored their disciples' words as if they had not heard that.

"Isn't there any good place for Iron-Dragon Sect to hold an opening ceremony? How could they choose the formal official mansion of Xuantian City? That's too simple and crude..."

"Yea, of course, the so-called opening ceremony of a sect should be held in a magnificent palace. I remember that the Immortal Fist

Palace where the opening ceremony of Immortal Fist Position Sect was held was really magnificent..."

"I was told that the servants here were even borrowed from other clans. That's too hilarious!"

"Haven't you found that Fire Dragon Hermit only invited the heroes in the three provinces within Northeast Military Territory? There's not even a knight outside Northeast Military Territory. It seems that Fire Dragon Hermit has been used to live alone. How could he have no friends and relatives to help him in such an important situation? None of the knights from other provinces came here to congratulate him..."

"3 decades ago, when my master promoted to an earth knight and held his chakra rotating ceremony, all the elders of Taiyi Fantasy Sect had arrived..."

"Yes, it's said that Fire Dragon Hermit has just promoted to an earth knight a couple of years ago..."

Not only Zhang Yang had heard the talks of the disciples of Immortal Fist Position Sect, but even those knight-level powerhouses in the venue had also heard that. Hearing the talks, the disciples of Wang Clan didn't look good while those guests further confirmed their speculation, namely Immortal Fist Position Sect's representatives came with evil intent. They might want to stir up trouble here. Many people at present had thought that it should be related with Taiyi Fantasy Sect...

When the other guests were concerned about that, a louder and longer report sounded from all directions...

"Fire Dragon Hermit...is coming..."

...

# Chapter 1054: The Appearance of the Host

---

After hearing this louder and longer report, everybody at present was shocked. Because the lucky time had not arrived, many people were still whispering to each other in a group of two or three. Many guests were not in their own seats, which looked a bit impolite...

However, the moment they heard this report, all the guests had responded to it. The younger ones rapidly ran to the front of their clans' seats. As for those dignified knights and elders, after being faintly dumbfounded, they whispered to each other a few more words before walking to seats of their own clans and sects too.

Even those disciples of Immortal Fist Position Sect who were talking free in the venue just now had closed their mouths. No matter what, these small figures below knight level were not qualified to speak in front of an earth knight. If they were still speaking ill of Fire Dragon Hermit when he was at present, it was equal to posing a challenge to Fire Dragon Hermit and profane the dignity of an earth knight. They dared never be such presumptuous.

After exchanging a glance with each other, the master and two elders of Immortal Fist Position Sect remained silent.

In the venue, Nangong Sheng the master of Immortal Fist Position Sect and Lu Dingzhi the master of Lu Clan were the only two earth knights. Being different than Lu Dingzhi who was like a personable uncle, Nangong Sheng had a square, faintly black face with slim eyes and snow-white long beard in a towering crown which was made of violet gold being inlaid with alchemist's gemstones. Additionally, he wore a grand robe which was embroidered with sun, moons, stars, flowers, birds, fish and insects and a pair of 3-level boat-shaped shoes with tiger head which was made of golden silk. Two beautiful female twins were standing behind him, one was holding a sword by two hands, the

other was holding a long vase by two hands. However, the two female twins both looked like tender yet enchanting boys. They looked like kids on the sides of the legendary immortals. Given that grand ostentation, it was absolutely an immortal hermit and one of the masters of the top seven sects in Taixia Country.

All the others turned around to see Zhang Tie; however, Nangong Sheng just slightly inclined his face to see Zhang Tie. He just touched his snow-white long beard and looked at Zhang Tie in a restrained and arrogant way.

When Nangong Sheng touched his long beard, the finger ring on that hand became especially eye-catching. A nanobead was clearly inlaid in it. The finger ring was a rare space-teleportation item.

Within the expectation of everybody at present, Zhang Tie strode out alone.

The moment Zhang Tie appeared, his height, sturdy figure and that symbolic bald head had won the applaud of many guests inside—What a tough man!

Compared to Nangong Sheng, the master of Immortal Fist Position Sect, Zhang Tie didn't wear anything surplus.

Zhang Tie directly came to the center of the main stage of the venue. At first, he cupped his hands towards all the guests at present with a solemn look silently. At the sight of this, all the knights, elders and masters at present cupped their hands towards Zhang Tie too. Nangong Sheng and two elders of Immortal Fist Position Sect also cupped their hands towards Zhang Tie in a casual way; instead of making trouble at once.

When cupping his hands towards them, Zhang Tie had noticed all the people at the present. He had almost seen 1/3 of those at present when he competed for the provincial governor of Youzhou Province for Zhang Taixuan. As for those whom he had not met before, he could guess their identities according to the seats of the clans and sects.



Of course, Zhang Tie had noticed the bad looks of the team of Immortal Fist Position Sect.

At the sight of the immortal look of Nagong Sheng, the master of Immortal Fist Position Sect, Zhang Tie burst out into laughter inside at once, 'F\*ck, are you acting in an opera or telling a story? This dad has seen so many earth knights in Earth-elements Realm; however, none of them are as extravagant as you. Even shadow knights could not match you. If you dress like this in Earth-elements Realm, they would think that you're a heavenly knight, f\*ck!'

After touching his bald head, Zhang Tie burst out into laughter as he said, "Now that this Cui has arrived, although it's still 20 minutes away from the official appearance time, I think it's unnecessary for me to waste your time here. Therefore, I just came out to talk with you for a while. After all, it's the first time for me to open a sect just like a bride entering the palanquin. If I offend you due to lack of consideration, please forgive me."

"Fire Dragon Hermit, you're too modest!"

The moment Zhang Tie uttered, all the others started to reply with a smile. The atmosphere was very relaxing.

The moment they heard Zhang Tie's words, most of them at present had felt that Fire Dragon Hermit was generous and kind-hearted. Such a kind of person could easily win people's favor. However, it was just their feeling about Zhang Tie according to his prologue. As the old saying went, nobody could promote to a knight without hardships. Even those people who could promote to black iron knights were uneasy, not to mention an earth knight.

Zhang Tie continued, "It's my great honor that you could attend the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect. I'm very happy. Therefore, I should be polite to you. However, it's too boring only by speaking politely. This Cui doesn't like boring things. Whatever, the opening ceremonies don't have a fixed pattern

across Taixia Country besides having a dinner and knowing each other. Therefore, I want to make the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect festive like how those stores would do when they opened by holding a promotion or stuff for a good fortune. I also brought you an activity to please you after you traveled so long to Xuantian City. Isn't it good enough if we could solve things happily?"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, many knights at present exchanged glances with each other, except for Elder Muyu and Lu Dingzhi who looked at Zhang Tie seriously. Given their looks, all the female knights at present were interested in Zhang Tie; especially Guo Hongyi, the master of Guo Clan had fallen in love with Zhang Tie the moment he strode out with a great qi field.

Actually, women were like men in many aspects. Different men would like different types of women; similarly, different women would also like different types of men. Some liked gentlemen; some liked cynical ones; some liked shy ones; some like immortal ones; however, Guo Hongyi liked masculine ones. Pitifully, few men were masculine in Guo Hongyi's eyes. Compared to this woman, many men felt that they were like women, not to mention masculinity.

Soon after Zhang Tie finished his words, an elder of Immortal Fist Position Sect had sneered, "Fire Dragon Hermit, you're really funny. Do you mean that we can enjoy a discount or draw lots for a prize here like what those pedlars did in the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect..."

Although the words of the Immortal Fist Position Sect sounded like an inquiry, it was more like an irony.

After hearing the words of the elder of Immortal Fist Position Sect, the venue became quiet at once. Everybody at present confirmed that Immortal Fist Position Sect's representatives arrived with evil intent. Now that they dared find trouble at the beginning, they were definitely here to ruin the opening

ceremony.

When the elder of Immortal Fist Position Sect opened his mouth, Nangong Sheng was still touching his long beard as if he had not heard it. Therefore, everybody at present understood that the master and the elders of Immortal Fist Position Sect had long reached an agreement.

In Taixia Country, it almost became a tradition that someone would find trouble in the opening ceremonies of fighting clubs in towns or sects in some mountains. If someone disliked you, they would find you trouble. The opening ceremony and washing hands in the golden basin would become the best place for them to do that. In Taixia Country, there were examples that the opening ceremonies of some sects founded by knights were ruined by someone. However, it was Fire Dragon Hermit's first time to come to Northeast Military Region in the bounty territory rewarded by the central government; additionally, he had no animosity with local major clans; therefore, nobody at present could imagine that someone dared find him trouble here at the beginning.

Everybody was waiting for Fire Dragon Hermit's response. It was the best moment for them to understand Fire Dragon Hermit's temperament just like that unyielding grasses would be identified in heavy wind and real gold could be identified in raging fire.

Many people felt thrilled inside.

"That bro in the seat of Immortal Fist Position Sect, may I know your name?" Zhang Tie still asked with a big smile as if he had not noticed the irony in the elder's tone.

"I'm Mo Qi, an elder of Immortal Fist Position Sect!"

The elder of Immortal Fist Position Sect answered with a faint sneer. He didn't even stand up.

"Hahaha..." Zhang Tie burst out into laughter as he pointed at Elder Mo Qi of Immortal Fist Position Sect and said, "Elder Mo Qi,

how could you be so smart with such a tiny head? You're really the worm in my maw. How could you hit my mind so easily only by moving your tiny mouth a few times? Not bad. This Cui is really preparing to hold a game by hitting golden eggs in the opening ceremony..."

"Tiny head", "Tiny mouth", hearing the two phrases, most of the knights twitched their facial muscles and tried their best to not burst out into laughter. Some female knights couldn't stand giggling; however, they hurriedly stopped...

Elder Mo Qi looked a bit thin. He was indeed smaller than Cui Li in terms of figure. No matter what, the phrases "Tiny head" and "Tiny mouth" sounded weird and made people simmer with laughter...

Elder Mo Qi didn't know that he was seeking stigma by quarreling with Zhang Tie who had practiced it with so many people from all walks of life in different groceries. He was not even in Zhang Tie's league...

# Chapter 1055: Shocking Golden Eggs

---

After hearing the words "tiny head", "tiny mouth" and "worm in my maw", Elder Mo Qi of Immortal Fist Position Sect felt that Zhang Tie was standing in front of him, bowing his body and touching his head by hand genially.

Although Zhang Tie's words sounded like "praise", Elder Mo Qi of Immortal Fist Position Sect blushed in a split second; especially the "painful" looks of the surrounding people made Elder Mo Qi feel like being a clown in the venue...

"Fire Dragon Hermit, you..." Elder Mo Qi stood up as he watched Zhang Tie with a blush. He wanted to lose his temper; however, he found that he had no reason or excuse to do that. Therefore, he almost had "internal injuries". Whatever, Elder Mo Qi was evidently "smaller" than Fire Dragon Hermit on both figures and knight ranks.

"What, do you want to say something, Elder Mo Qi?" Zhang Tie watched Elder Mo Qi with a smile.

Elder Mo Qi threw a glance at Nangong Sheng on his side.

"Sit down!" Nangong Sheng moved his facial muscles while uttering a hoarse voice, "After traveling a long way here, we're guests. We will see what game is Fire Dragon Hermit going to play with us. As those at present are all elders and masters of clans and sects; all of us have rich experiences. I think that Fire Dragon Hermit is definitely not joking with us. It's not late if Fire Dragon Hermit really dares make a joke with the heroes in the three provinces of Northeast Military Region!"

Nangong Sheng would like to see how Zhang Tie would lose his face. In his opinion, all the influential figures at present had rich experiences; although there was not a fixed pattern for the opening ceremony of sects in Taixia Country, it had better be solemn. However, Zhang Tie was going to play a game such as hitting

golden eggs for a prize like how those pedlars would always do, wasn't it a joke? Nangong Sheng just wanted to watch Zhang Tie make a fool of himself. When the others felt unhappy about the game, Nangong Sheng would seize the opportunity to make difficulties for Zhang Tie. By then, fewer people would like to stand on Zhang Tie's side.

Of course, Zhang Tie knew what Nangong Sheng was thinking about. Hearing Nangong Sheng's words, Zhang Tie revealed a faint smile. Instead of looking at the mincing Nangong Sheng, he asked Elder Mo Qi with an amazed look, "Elder Mo Qi, who's that well-dressed actor..."

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, all the others almost burst out into laughter. With eccentric looks, they felt that Fire Dragon Hermit was really talkative. His words made Nangong Sheng unable to lose his temper...

'Well-dressed actor?' After hearing that comment, Nangong Sheng's face turned blue at once. Feeling suffocated, his hand on the long beard became stiff. Before Elder Mo Qi opened his mouth, Nangong Sheng had replied Zhang Tie, "I'm Nangong Sheng, the master of Immortal Fist Position Sect in Yanzhou Province!"

"Ha, it's Master Nangong of Immortal Fist Position Sect. Sorry, sorry. Now that Master Nangong wants to take a look at the game, I will show it to you!" After saying that, Zhang Tie clapped his hands twice. After receiving Zhang Tie's order, the servants of Wang Clan immediately pushed rows of four-wheeled carts into the venue, 4 people for 1 cart.

The servants of Wang Clan were very careful. The round items had been fixed on the carts. Each item was higher than 1 m while being covered with a red silk cloth.

Watching these items being pushed into the venue of the opening ceremony, all those at present were dumbfounded as they exchanged glances with each other. At the same time, they

whispered, 'Does Fire Dragon Hermit really want us to hit golden eggs like what those pedlars would always do? This...this...is too hilarious...'

All those at present were prestigious. Those knight-level elders were thinking, 'Am I going to join the fun on the stage if Fire Dragon Hermit really wants to play such a naive trick?'

Nangong Sheng revealed a faint sneer as he swore inside, 'Naive! I've heard that Fire Dragon Hermit was born in a small family, which had no deep background; it was at most a rural well-off family. He's rustic and gained "Fire Dragon Sutra" by accident. Look at what he shows us, what a child's play...'

"Elder Muyu, what do you think Fire Dragon Hermit is going to do?"

Zhu Elder asked Elder Muyu in a secret way. Lately, Zhu Clan and Zhang Clan was going to unite by marriage; Zhu Dabiao the grandson of the provincial governor of Yanzhou Province was going to marry the granddaughter of Elder Muray of Huaiyuan Palace; additionally, Zhang Yang, the representative of Zhang Clan in Jinwu City would also marry a female junior of Zhu Elder. Because of this relationship, the elders of the two clans were closer to each other and the provincial governor of Yanzhou Province was going to write a letter to Xuanyuan Hill to ask for reversing Zhang Tie's case after the event broke out in Zhongzhou Province.

It was normal for major clans to unite by marriage in Taixia Country. Even though they were not for pure interests, such marriages could serve as a lubricant for the relationship between two major clans. As they were of the same family, it would be much more convenient for them to communicate with each other on many occasions. It was just a beginning. As for major clans which had hundreds of thousands of people even over 1 million people, if they confirmed to deepen the relationship between two parties, over 10 pairs even over 100 pairs of juniors from the two clans might get married. Through marriage between two clans, the

relationship between two clans might be deepened; additionally, the genes of two clans were valued by the clan elders, which after being combined could make their posterity more excellent.

"I find Fire Dragon Hermit is not rude. I want to see what game is he going to play. As we're old enough and don't want to move; but we can let our juniors to warm up on the stage..."

"Hoho, I agree with you, Elder Muyu..."

At this moment, many knights and elders were communicating with each other in a secret way; however, apparently, they didn't move their mouths at all; instead, they just watched Zhang Tie very elegantly; meanwhile, they were guessing what was inside the "golden eggs".

There were 18 carts in total. After all of them were pushed inside, they formed a circle in the center of the venue. After putting them in the right places, the servants of Wang Clan left. Each cart was only accompanied by one servant who was ready to unveil the silk cloth by pulling the rope on it. Zhang Tie stood in the center of the venue as he said, "This Cui has just come back from the Earth-elements Realm. I've got nothing good but some specialties in Earth-elements Realm. I'd like to share it with you for fun. Given its limited quantity, I could not take care of every single one of you at present. Here are 18 golden eggs. All the clans and sects could have a chance to draw lots for a prize. There's a number on each golden egg. Therefore, you could only hit the golden egg with the specific number that you will draw. Try your best to hit them. Even if you don't want to hit them for the time being, you could bring them back home for a decoration like a fengshui. As we're all neighbors, you will gradually know the temperament of this Cui. I dare not say that I'm a gentleman; however, I've not done anything that harmed others to benefit myself or went against reason and nature..."

After saying that, Zhang Tie waved his hand, telling the servants of Wang Clan to pull off the red silk cloths on those balls in



different sizes, unveiling the golden eggs, which left everyone at present dumbfounded...

18 "golden eggs" were all colorful secret pearls in different sizes. These secret pearls radiated brilliant lights which were similar to that of gold and jade. Under the morning sunlight, they looked pretty brilliant being similar to the effect of the reflection of cat's eye gems. The 18 secret pearls were in different colors. The moment the silk cloths were unveiled, they had given out brilliant lights, which included red, orange, yellow, green, cyan, blue and purple lights. As a result, it became colorful within 100 square meters which froze the curious or contemptuous looks of the people at present...

Being buried in the Earth-elements Realm hundreds of millions of years, these secret pearls could barely be exposed under sunlight. However, under sunlight, each secret bead was as resplendent as beautiful gemstones...

With a sound of "Huala", Zhu Elder stood up at once as he watched those "Golden Eggs" with widely opened eyes. With an unbelievable look, his voice began to quiver, "These...these are...secret pearls in Earth-elements Realm which might contain silver secret items..."

"Hoho, Zhu Elder is really knowledgeable, these are indeed secret pearls that this Cui brought from Earth-elements Realm. I will gift some of them to you today so as to bring good lucks for the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect. Thanks for coming here..." Zhang Tie said with a calm look.

'What? Secret pearls?' The moment Zhang Tie finished his words, all the other knights, elders and masters of clans and sects had sprung up, causing a sound "Huala". They just wanted to see how secret pearls looked like.

At least half of knights in Taixia Country, especially black iron knights had never seen secret pearls. As for the rest knights, even

though they had seen secret pearls, they might have not seen so many secret pearls at the same time.

However, everybody was clear what secret pearls meant. They all knew that there might be a precious silver secret item in a secret pearl...

Those at present had not even heard that anyone could provide so many secret pearls at the same time.

# Chapter 1056: A Conflict

---

Facing the chance that they might get silver secrets, even those elders from clans with provincial governors became restless as they all stood up.

Even Lu Dingzhi, the master of Lu Clan who had always been calm became thrilled and stood up at once.

As Lu Dingzhi served as coins producing supervisor in Goldenrock Subcontinent previously, he didn't have a chance to practice in the Earth-elements Realm. Although he had seen secret pearls sometimes on special occasions, he didn't have one yet. 4 years ago, Lu Dingzhi lost the competition for the provincial governor of Youzhou Province; although he had promoted to an earth knight, he still felt his battle strength was not great enough. He was thinking about looking for a silver secret item in Earth-elements Realm lately. It was really out of his imagination that he could have a chance to gain silver secret item now.

The moment the red silver cloths were unveiled, the female knights at present immediately fixed their eyes onto the 18 secret pearls. Most of the women had no resistance to beautiful and resplendent gemstones. Of course, female knights didn't lack jewelry; however, the 18 secret pearls were as attractive as irresistible gems to those female knights.

Watching people's thirsty looks and the slightly chaotic seats, Zhang Tie revealed a big smile as he said, "These items are just used to spice up the atmosphere, if you want to take a closer look at them or touch them, help yourselves. As for those who could take them away, it depends on your luck..."

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, the elders of clans with provincial governors in the front of the auditorium including Lu Dingzhi and Elder Muyu immediately strode towards those secret pearls with flickering eyes. They started to touch, knock and

comment those secret pearls one after another.

At the sight of this, all the other knights, elders and masters of clans and sects rushed over there at the same time.

Some of them moved so fast that they even knocked down their chairs, causing chaos.

Even elders and knights had rushed over there, not to mention those juniors of clans and sects.

As for these disciples, they were too far away from silver secret items. Many people were destined to dream about it for their whole lives. Now that they could have a chance to touch them, of course, they didn't want to miss it.

However, when those young disciples rushed over there, the 18 secret items had long been surrounded by the elders and knights of clans and sects. Therefore, the young disciples could only stand in the periphery and watched the resplendent secret pearls with admiring looks.

In a split second, there were only two groups of people who were still seated in the auditorium. One of them was the team of Immortal Fist Position Sect.

The representatives of Immortal Fist Position Sect could never imagine that the so-called golden eggs that Zhang Tie presented were the precious secret pearls in the Earth-elements Realm. Damn it! It was too terrifying! Even in the opening ceremonies of the top seven sects in Taixia Country, nobody had seen so many secret pearls. The so-called local tyrants were nothing but sh\*t in front of Zhang Tie's game.

The disciples of Immortal Fist Position Sect who said the opening ceremony was too simple and crude blushed at once. Nangong Sheng and two elders on his side became restless too. They also wanted to take a closer look at those secret pearls; however, they felt it was improper. Sitting there, they felt being too special;

therefore, they all felt embarrassed.

The other group of people who didn't move was Zhang Yang and his two sons. Finding that their dad didn't move, Zhang Tie's two nephews didn't move either; they just watched those hot secret pearls with flickering eyes.

Zhang Yang didn't move because he was shocked by Zhang Tie's game. Among so many people, only Zhang Yang knew that Fire Dragon Hermit was Zhang Tie, his younger brother.

As Zhang Tie had been escaping for 4 years, Zhang Yang thought that Zhang Tie must be living a poor life; however, at the sight of the 18 secret pearls, Zhang Yang realized that Zhang Tie might live much better than he could imagine in the past 4 years.

Zhang Yang gazed at Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie also blinked his eyes to his elder brother.

"Dad, can we take a closer look at those secret pearls?" Until Zhang Chengxu, the second son of Zhang Yang opened his mouth did Zhang Yang make a response, "Erm, fine, fine, we will take a look over there. So many secret pearls almost scared your dad..."

Zhang Yang whispered to his two sons in order to cover his inactive behavior.

Of course, even though Zhang Yang was the boss of Jinwu Business Group, he might not be able to force his way in. However, Zhang Yang was not anxious about it because he knew that Zhang Tie could definitely bring more secret pearls than these if he or his sons needed them in the future. With such a rich brother, he didn't need to worry about that at all...

Zhang Yang was even firmly convinced that Zhang Tie would find a chance to gift one secret pearl to Huaiyuan Palace in later programs. However, Zhang Yang didn't know how Zhang Tie would do that in front of so many knight-level powerhouses without exposing the loophole.

Zhang Tie looked at those guys of Immortal Fist Position Sect with a smile. He ignored them; instead, he just turned around and walked to the center of the crowd. As for Zhang Tie, those guys of Immortal Fist Position Sect were just seasonings, who were trivial roles. He didn't need to care about them at all. Whatever, those guys couldn't make big trouble.

Watching Zhang Tie throwing a glance at them before leaving with a smile, Nangong Sheng looked more furious as he felt being belittled. He had not been treated like this for over 100 years since he promoted to a knight and founded the Immortal Fist Position Sect.

When Zhang Tie came here, those juniors of clans and sects watched Zhang Tie with awestruck and admiring looks. They hurriedly gave a way to Zhang Tie.

As for these disciples of clans and sects, they had known the opinions of their own elders before coming here. This time, these elders were actually seeking opportunities to have their disciples be enrolled by Fire Dragon Hermit. Previously, Fire Dragon Hermit was just a strange and dignified name; however, since Zhang Tie appeared; especially after he presented so many secret pearls generously, all the juniors at present felt that it was pretty fortunate for them to learn from such an earth knight.

When Zhang Tie came to the center of the crowd, some knights and elders were speculating which one of them had a silver secret item.

Any complete secret pearl might contain a silver secret, which might be a weapon or an extremely precious nanobead or space-teleportation equipment.

...

"I feel this secret pearl probably contains a silver secret item..." Zhu Elder told the others, "Look, this secret pearl faces the south; its attribute is fire; additionally, this pearl looks as yellow as soil,

which is rightly consistent with the south. I feel this secret pearl probably contains a silver secret item..."

"Ahh, Zhu Elder, you're proficient in Learning of Secret Items ?" One knight asked with an admiring look.

"No, no, this old man is not proficient in that at all. I just learned a bit from a powerhouse of Five-elements Mentality Sect, just a bit, just a bit!" Zhu Elder replied modestly; however, given his restrained look, he was very satisfied with it. The "Learning of Secret Items" occupied a high position among knights. Those who were proficient in the "Learning of Secret Items" were all something. When one said a knight was proficient in the "Learning of Secret Items", it was like praising a soldier that he could be a general and a woman who could remain young and beautiful forever.

After hearing the others' praise, Zhu Elder pointed at Lu Dingzhi who was seriously gazing at a secret pearl which was as scarlet as an agate while being covered with sparkling grains, "Look at younger brother Lu, he's really proficient in the "Learning of Secret Items"; does younger brother Lu think that secret pearl contains something?"

Lu Dingzhi turned around with a smile, "When I served as the coins producing supervisor in Goldenrock Subcontinent, I used to touch various stones. I learned how to identify secret pearls according to their energy from the Financial Ministry of Xuanyuan Hill. Because this secret pearl contains pretty high energy, it might contain a space-teleportation equipment such as nanobead..."

When Zhang Tie approached them, he heard the words of Zhu Elder and Lu Dingzhi. When he heard Zhu Elder's words, Zhang Tie laughed inside, 'It seems that Zhu Elder has not mastered the essence of the "Learning of Secret Items" of the Five-elements Mentality Sect. The secret pearl that he selects contains nothing. It just has a good look. After hearing Lu Dingzhi's words, Zhang Tie spoke highly of Lu Dingzhi inside, because the secret pearl selected

by Lu Dingzhi was picked from the top region of the Weapons Mountain. The secret pearls in that region of Weapons Mountain probably contain a space-teleportation equipment. That was why Mountain Lifting Hermit and the other two earth knights directly sought for space-teleportation equipment on the top of Weapons Mountain in the hieron ruins.'

'The Learning of Secret Items from the Financial Ministry of Xuanyuan Hill is really something; no wonder they serve the imperial households; however...it's just so-so...'

"Ahh, Fire Dragon Hermit..." Watching Zhang Tie coming here, all the knights and elders greeted Zhang Tie with big smiles, which was much more enthusiastic than that at the beginning.

"Fire Dragon Hermit, your generosity in the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect must become a much-told tale in Northeast Military Region. It's our great honor to attend this opening ceremony..." Qian Elder touched his beard as he said with a big smile. All the surrounding knights nodded.

If Zhang Tie really brought here some eggs made of pure gold, even if they could really carry the golden eggs away, the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect would also become a joke. However, as these golden eggs were actually secret pearls, it became a much-told tale. That explained the difference between a joke and a much-told tale.

It was a joke for the poor to chase after girls in a romantic way; however, it was a much-told tale for the rich to chase after girls in a romantic way. Whether it was a joke or a much-told tale, it had nothing to do with one's mentality; it just depended on one's overall strength. Zhang Tie had long thought it through when he was in Blackhot City. Therefore, Zhang Tie prepared such a game. The style of this game was not important; what counted was what were the golden eggs.

For instance, a shy boy used lichee and other fruits to make a



pattern of a bolt penetrating through a heart on the ground so as to affirm his loyalty to a girl and a playboy used diamonds to make the same pattern on the ground so as to affirm his loyalty to a girl; although it was the same pattern, which could confirm that the result was the same...

In others' eyes, the first one was a joke while the second one was a much-told tale. The difference between a joke and a much-told tale was similar to that between lichee and diamonds. Pitifully, many shy boys didn't understand it.

"Hahaha, glad that you're happy. As we're all neighbors and this Cui has just come to the Fire Dragon Bounty Territory like moving to a new home, I have to invite my neighbors, relatives and friends for a dinner out of etiquette..." Zhang Tie replied generously.

Zhang Tie's words won him too much praise, 'What a generous man!'

"Hermit? Did you get all these secret pearls from Earth-elements Realm?" Elder Muyu asked respectfully.

Zhang Tie sighed with emotion inside, 'Look at the difference between knights on different levels? How could Elder Muyu know that it's Zhang Tie who talked with him?'

"These secret pearls came from the Weapons Mountain in a heiron's ruins in the Earth-elements Realm. I gained them when I made an exploration over there!"

"Ahh, it was said that Fire Dragon Hermit indeed entered a hieron's ruins when you made an exploration in the Earth-elements Realm; it was said that the process was very dangerous. I wonder whether it's the same exploration!" Another knight from Tongzhou Province asked him.

"Yes, an earth demon knight and a human knight who surrendered to demons attacked us at the crucial moment. As a result, all of us had almost been killed!"

"Ahh, what about the two earth knights?"

Zhang Tie replied with a smile frankly, "Hehheh, I killed them both..."

After hearing Zhang Tie's reply, many people around him became shocked; however, many people were not sure whether Zhang Tie was telling the truth or not...

"I wonder about the process of hitting golden eggs. Whether each one of us has a chance to participate in it?" The master of Huge Saber Sect asked. As a new sect, Huge Saber Sect had a weak foundation. The master of Huge Saber Sect had just promoted to a black iron knight a couple of years ago. Therefore, such sects with weak foundations paid special attention to how to gain these secret pearls in case of missing the opportunity.

"Of course, each one of you has a chance to participate in it. One golden invitation card means an opportunity. All the clans and sects that have received the golden invitation cards could have a try. After a short while, you should draw number twice; the first number determines the order for you to draw lots; the second number determines which secret pearl will you have. Each clan and sect will have a chance; this Cui makes no exception..."

When they were thinking about Zhang Tie's method, Nangong Sheng's icy sound drifted from outside suddenly.

"I was told that Fire Dragon Hermit has an excellent battle strength. You even killed an earth-level shadow demon in the Earth-elements Realm. I really admire you. In the grand ceremony, I feel like learning from you here. Will you receive my request..."

After hearing these words, those who were circling around the secret pearls became silent at once. They had sensed that Immortal Fist Position Sect arrived with an evil intent; however, they could not imagine that Nangong Sheng was here to ruin the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect...

When he arrived, Nangong Sheng had some worries; after saying these words, he must have been ready for a fight.

Facing such a challenge, the other party could only have two choices: first, to admit that he couldn't match the challenger on battle skills; second, to accept the challenge. To a certain extent, it was the regulation for opening a sect in Taixia Country. If one wanted to open a sect, he should be ready to accept the challenge from the those on the same level. If not, such a sect would not be widely accepted.

Zhang Tie and the master of Immortal Fist Position Sect were both earth knights. Although it looked fair, many guests at present faintly frowned. All of them knew that Fire Dragon Hermit had just promoted to an earth knight for a couple of years. It was said that Fire Dragon Hermit killed the earth-level shadow demon in the Earth-elements Realm by accident. The shadow demon wanted to undermine Fire Dragon Hermit in the shape of a severely injured woman. However, it was undermined by Fire Dragon Hermit. Therefore, Fire Dragon Hermit was rewarded with Fire Dragon Bounty Territory. By contrast, Nangong Sheng had promoted to an earth knight for over 3 decades. Evidently, Nangong Sheng wanted to make Fire Dragon Hermit embarrassed.

'Shameless!' Many knights swore inside.

However, all those at present knew that Immortal Fist Position Sect was related to Taiyi Fantasy Sect. Therefore, they just waited for Zhang Tie's response silently.

Even Elder Muyu became silent at this moment. Actually, Huaiyuan Palace also had a good relationship with Taiyi Fantasy Sect. Lan Yunxi was in Taiyi Fantasy Sect. Zhang Taixuan had already predicted this emergency before Huaiyuan Palace's representatives set off. He told Elder Muyu to not interfere with the conflict between Fire Dragon Hermit and Taiyi Fantasy Sect.

As for the conflict between Fire Dragon Hermit and Taiyi Fantasy

Sect, it was said that Fire Dragon Hermit made a bet with Feng Yexiao, the grand elder of Taiyi Fantasy Sect and won an airboat from the latter. After losing their face, of course, Taiyi Fantasy Sect had to do something for the reputation of Taiyi Fantasy Sect.

Zhang Tie turned around. All the others behind him gave a way to him so that Zhang Tie could directly see the representatives of Immortal Fist Position Sect...

"Do you want to have a fight with me here?" Zhang Tie asked Nangong Sheng while pointing at his own nose.

"Yes!" Nangong Sheng said while gritting his teeth. If he didn't launch an attack at this moment, it would be late when the other guests began to "hit golden eggs". By then, all those who gained the benefits would stand on Zhang Tie's side. As a result, nobody would support him. Therefore, Nangong Sheng made a decision to undermine Zhang Tie's power and prestige right away before the others hit the golden eggs.

Nangong Sheng also knew that Zhang Tie cultivated a marquis-level secret method "Fire Dragon Sutra". However, given that Zhang Tie had only practiced it for a couple of years and had just promoted to an earth knight, he didn't think that it would do any help to Zhang Tie. In his opinion, after practicing a viscount-level secret method for over 30 years, he would never be beaten by a junior who had just promoted to an earth knight.

'It's hard to find a chance to ruin an opening ceremony of a sect. After missing this opportunity, I would barely find another one.'

'Additionally, Taiyi Fantasy Sect has promised me a reward for it...'

Watching Nangong Sheng's expression "I will beat you for sure", Zhang Tie revealed a smile...

...

# Chapter 1057: Comparing Notes in the Valley

---

"How?"

After hearing Zhang Tie's simple reply, the atmosphere became intense abruptly.

After finding that Fire Dragon Hermit and Strong Cloud Hermit were going to fight here, those people surrounding the secret pearls dispersed at once. As the fight between two earth knights might cover several miles, fighters below knight level had better stay far away from the effective range of the fight; otherwise, they might be hurt.

When they dispersed, they were very excited inside because commoners might not easily see how two earth knights fought.

At this moment, Nangong Sheng had stood up and walked into the venue from his seat, followed by two knight elders of Immortal Fist Position Sect on his sides. It looked pretty dignified.

After a shrewd eye light flashed, Nangong Sheng revealed a smile, "Fire Dragon Hermit, I was told that there was a battle skill called "Big Sun Fire Dragon Palm" in "Fire Dragon Sutra". I cultivate "Thunder-like Immortal Fist"; dare you to compare notes with me?"

Although Nangong Sheng's words sounded fair, all the other knights and elders at present frowned as they swore inside that Nangong Sheng was too cunning and vicious. Because they all knew that the most powerful battle skill in "Fire Dragon Sutra" was spear skill instead of fist skill. Although Nangong Sheng cultivated sword skills, he excelled at his fist position. Immortal Fist Position Sect was also famous for the fist. Why didn't he compare weapons with Fire Dragon Hermit instead of fist skills? Apparently, he was undermining Fire Dragon Hermit. Additionally, Nangong Sheng

intended to prod Fire Dragon Hermit into action with his words. How shameless he was! If Fire Dragon Hermit refused him, it was equal to admitting that he dared not, which would make him more prestigious.

Of course, Zhang Tie clearly knew what Nangong Sheng was thinking about. However, after hearing that Nangong Sheng was going to fight him with fist skills, Zhang Tie sneered inside, 'Didn't this old guy know that I excel at Iron-Blood Fist? I have been cultivating Iron-Blood Fist since I was in Blackhot City. During a couple of years in the hieron ruins, I promoted to an earth knight; besides reaching a new height in all the battle skills of Fire Dragon Sutra, I have pushed Iron-Blood Fist to a wholly new height through comparing battle skills of Fire Dragon Sutra with Iron-Blood Fist. Do you want to fight me with fist skills? I'm also looking for a training partner.'

Zhang Tie was not afraid of the "Thunder-like Immortal Fist" at all. After reaching a realm, the competition between fist skills and secret methods was more like the competition between comprehensions about fist positions; in the final analysis, the competition between humans. However, Zhang Tie had entered this realm when he promoted to a knight. therefore, he didn't care about the "thunder-like immortal fist" of Nangong Sheng. If his "thunder-like immortal fist" was really better than Zhang Tie's Iron-Blood Fist, Zhang Tie wouldn't feel disappointed; instead, he would feel happy. Because he would have a chance to make progress and gnosis. Actually, it was very difficult for him to find such an opponent.

"Master Nangong, you're really good at making a choice. The spear skill of "Fire Dragon Sutra" ranks top 10 in Taixia Country, why not Master Nangong compare notes with Fire Dragon Hermit on weapons..."

Before Zhang Tie replied, a cold, ironical and contemptuous voice had drifted from the guests. It was Guo Hongyi in a hot red skirt

who was taking up the cudgels for Zhang Tie.

Raising her beautiful face, Guo Hongyi was watching Nangong Sheng with a cold look. She was not afraid of the prestige of Immortal Fist Position Sect and Nangong Sheng who was an earth knight. Among those silent men, Guo Hongyi was pretty outstanding and heroic. As a result, those men felt embarrassed.

"Mind your own business; our fight would be too destructive; additionally, Fire Dragon Hermit and I are just comparing notes; instead of fighting to death. No need to be that serious!" Nangong Sheng slightly shrunk his pupils when he caught sight of Guo Hongyi. However, he hid his real moods and looked righteous, "It's in the holy war, what do you mean by instigating two earth knights to fight at the cost of their lives here, Miss Guo? Even your master and the master of Guo Clan of South Mountain Palace might not agree with you!"

After hearing his words, Guo Hongyi instantly became furious like a cracker being lit. She then replied in an extremely icy tone, "Don't use my master and Guo Clan of South Mountain Palace to suppress me. I gained everything with my own efforts. What do you mean by saying that? Do you think that I dare not fight you just because you're an earth knight?"

Nangong Sheng raised his head and watched the sky with crossed arms silently as if he despised to fight her. This drove Guo Hongyi more furious. She almost wanted to beat him right away.

"Hahahaha...now that Master Nangong wants to compare notes with me, go ahead, as it's in the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect, it's improper to use weapons!" Zhang Tie burst out into laughter at the critical moment as he told Guo Hongyi, "Young sister Guo, thanks for your good intention, I was also looking for someone to compare notes lately. Now that Master Nangong cultivates "Thunder-like Immortal Fist", I will compare notes with Master Nangong on fist skills!"

'Previously, I called you elder sister; now I call you younger sister. Haha, we're even.' Zhang Tie recalled when he met Guo Hongyi in Youzhou City for the first time when he spoke. 'According to Nangong Sheng, Guo Hongyi's master and clan sounds great. Guo Clan of South Mountain Palace might be like Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace. Therefore, Nangong Sheng was a bit scared about her. There're so many surnames in Taixia Country, there's a top family on the back of each major surname. As Zhang Tie has just been in Taixia Country for a few years, he only knew something about Zhang Clan in Taixia Country; he knew that Tianlu Palace, Guanying Palace and Bairen Palace were the top branches in Zhang Clan across Taixia Country.

"Good, Fire Dragon Hermit is really a hero. This master will learn from your fist. However, it's not convenient for us to compare notes here. We'd better choose another place!" Nangong Sheng praised Zhang Tie.

"It's simple, how about finding some place outside the city?"

After saying that, Zhang Tie told his elder brother in a secret way, "Don't worry". Closely after that, he released some tracing feathers onto those secret pearls in case that someone stole them away. After that, he flew off over 100 m high above Xuantian Courtyard of Iron-Dragon Sect and waved his hand towards Nangong Sheng. After exchanging a glance with the two elders on his side, Nangong Sheng directly flew off with the two elders at the same time.

Zhang Tie flew ahead of the 3 people towards the outside of Xuantian City.

After exchanging a glance with each other, all the knights and elders in the venue flew off after Zhang Tie and Nangong Sheng. If they didn't join this fun, it would be too pitiful. The fight between two earth knights would definitely enlighten black iron knights; additionally, this fight was full of suspense. It was a very rare opportunity for Fire Dragon Hermit to compare notes with Strong



Cloud Hermit on fist skills. Even Guo Hongyi had stomped her feet to the ground and followed them away.

The juniors below knight level could only raise their heads and watch those knights flying away with admiring looks, 'This is knight's world. They could come and go whenever they want. That's too handsome.'

"It's time for us to take a good look at these secret pearls..." Someone suddenly said which reminded everybody else. Closely after that, they hurriedly rushed to the side of those secret pearls and started to touch them with flickering eyes. They almost drooled.

As for those people who joined the fun outside Xuantian Courtyard, watching so many knights flying off Xuantian Courtyard towards the outside of Xuantian City, they all became perplexed as they only felt that knights were really marvelous.

...

A few minutes later, those knights flying out of Xuantian Courtyard entered a barren, unpopulated valley which covered dozens of square miles in Yangui Mountain Range outside Xuantian City.

There seemed to be a quarry in the valley previously; however, the quarry might have already been deserted for dozens of years as there were only some standing rotten woods in the quarry. The mountain rocks which had been expedited were covered with moss.

"Here!" Zhang Tie landed on a boulder which was over 10 m in height in the valley.

"Fine, it's not bad!" Nangong Sheng also landed on the same boulder, being over 30 m away from Zhang Tie.

All the other knights, including the two elders of Immortal Fist Position Sect, had stopped over 500 m away in the air. At the same

time, many people had released their protective battle qis.

"How?"

"How about close combat? If not, we might not see a result in a few days. As it's younger brother Cui's opening ceremony, we'd better not waste time!" Nangong Sheng narrowed his eyes as he replied with a pun.

"Well, close combat then. The one who escapes out of the valley and admits that he's beaten will be the loser, how about that?"

"Haha, younger brother Cui is too forthright!"

"Please..."

"Please..."

The two people made a starting gesture at the same time. In a split second, the fierce battle intentions of the two earth knights boiled in the valley.

Nangong Sheng's starting gesture was punching against the sky by one hand and the ground by the other hand at the same time while faintly lowering his body, which looked pretty domineering. At the same time, his battle qi tornado rushed into the sky while his battle intention grew increasingly stronger. Additionally, as his battle qi tornado rushed into the sky, the sunny sky was gradually covered with black clouds. At the sight of this scene, all the surrounding knights, including Lu Dingzhi and some elders of clans with provincial governors changed their faces at the same time...

# Chapter 1058: Thunder-like Booms

---

"When the fist starts, the clouds move!" Elder Muyu exclaimed out of amazement.

Nobody could imagine that Nangong Sheng had entered such a supreme realm in his thunder-like immortal fist. He could even have a contact with the universe.

It was definitely the peak level of this battle skill.

Only earth knights who had formed their earth chakra could reach the supreme realm of integrating with the universe of their battle skill. Black iron knights could only long for this realm yet couldn't realize it at all. Actually, very few earth knights could reach this supreme realm. At least Zhang Tie had not seen any earth knight displaying such a great ability before Nangong Sheng.

"Our master of the sect has cultivated Thunder-like Immortal Fist for 100 years. After promoting to an earth knight, he practiced it for over 10 more years with his full efforts. He's already entered the supreme realm of Thunder-like Immortal Fist and could integrate with the universe. Speaking of fist skills, only our master could reach the supreme realm of integrating with the universe within Northeast Military Region..." Elder Mo Qi said pleasantly after throwing a glance at the surrounding onlookers...

Watching the dense black clouds caused by Nangong Sheng's battle qi tornado above the valley, all the knights in the surrounding changed their faces; even Zhang Tie looked unprecedentedly solemn.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that Nangong Sheng could be so powerful, 'It seems that Nangong Sheng had prepared well for this fight.'

At this moment, Zhang Tie realized that he was overconfident. In this world, not everybody in the role of "clown" and "bad guys" had

to set off you. In many cases, because these kind of people were always heartless and as persistent as wolves, they could always make their full efforts to reach their targets. They treated everybody viciously, including themselves. They had a strong mind and could bear loneliness and pains that the others couldn't bear. Therefore, this kind of people could always gain the achievements that many "positive roles" and "good person" couldn't. They always had special talents.

In cultivation, one's achievements had nothing to do with morality; it was only related to sweats and efforts.

However, even though he was shocked, Zhang Tie immediately lit his battle intent like a wildfire. At this moment, facing Nangong Sheng, Zhang Tie instantly felt being as oppressive as facing Glaze when in Blackhot City. This long-lost feeling of oppression enabled Zhang Tie's blood veins to go berserk. He felt his battle qi was going to boil up.

It was pretty lucky for a person to meet such a powerful opponent.

"Good, when the fist starts, the clouds move; the God really favors me..." Zhang Tie laughed while a thick battle qi tornado rushed into the sky, "Master Nangong is the first earth knight that I met who could reach the realm of integrating his battle skill with the universe. If I was beaten by your fist position, I would declare that the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect became ineffective. You can just treat it as a cheerful party in Xuantian City. If this Cui could beat you on fist skills, I would reopen my Iron-Dragon Sect!"

It was Zhang Tie's first time to call Nangong Sheng master because he really respected Nangong Sheng and the realm that Nangong Sheng entered.

After hearing Zhang Tie's reply, all the onlookers became visibly moved. Nobody could imagine that Fire Dragon Hermit could be so generous facing such a powerful enemy. As a result, they felt that

Fire Dragon Hermit was even more heroic than themselves.

Fire Dragon Hermit was a real man!

Zhang Tie's reply made all the onlookers' blood boiled.

Nangong Sheng quivered his eyebrows as he was also shocked by Zhang Tie's masculinity and felt moved inside. Although he came here to ruin the opening ceremony, he also held Zhang Tie in high respect after hearing the latter's reply, "Fine, if you win, from today on, my Immortal Fist Position Sect will stay far away from your Iron-Dragon Sect!"

"Fine, that's what man should do!" Zhang Tie burst out into laughter as he made a strange starting gesture.

Zhang Tie put his two fists against each other before his chest. The others didn't know what this starting gesture meant. Only Zhang Tie knew that it was called introspection gesture.

Nangong Sheng had reached the supreme realm of integrating his fist skill with the universe. However, Zhang Tie had not reached that realm yet. Conversely, he could only retrospect himself by his fist, 'What does the extreme strength mean? What does the movement in accordance with universal laws mean? What does life mean? What does death mean? What does success mean? What does failure mean? What is the spirit of a fist?'

...

Zhang Tie made a starting gesture with a solemn look. Meanwhile, he closed his eyes.

At the sight of Zhang Tie's starting gesture, Nangong Sheng's eyes shined too.

In the next 2 minutes, the air in the valley seemed to be frozen. Neither Zhang Tie nor Nangong Sheng moved. However, their battle qi tornadoes were wrestling and roaring, which shocked the entire Xuantian City in the distance...

The black clouds above the valley grew thicker. All of a sudden, a drop of rain fell off from thousands of meters high...

When the drop of rain reached a few meters above Zhang Tie's head, it suddenly froze like being caught by a hand. At the same time, Zhang Tie opened his sparkling eyes...

Meanwhile, Nangong Sheng also moved. He strode towards Zhang Tie; Zhang Tie also strode towards him. Although they were dozens of meters away from each other, they soon approached each other in one step. Closely after that, their punches collided with each other face-to-face...

With a boom, tens of thunder-like booms sounded over the valley while the 10-m high boulder under their feet vanished in a split second while thousands of spalls shot in all directions. Many neighboring boulders directly became powders. At the same time, a strong shock wave swept over several square miles. Even a 10-cm thick small tree which grew up in a riprap hundred of meters away was broken and sent flying dozens of meters away like having been split by a huge ax.

The fast flying spalls were even more destructive than the ammunition fired by powerful steam centrifugal cannons. Many spalls directly hit the protective battle qis of those onlooking knights over 500 m away, causing sound "Tsi"; additionally, the protective battle qis of the onlooking knights rocked. Feeling those powerful spalls, those onlooking knights changed their faces once again. Needless to say, most of the onlooking knights hurriedly moved 200 m away; only a few knights stayed within the range of 500 m...

The wind and cloud in the valley grew intense abruptly, causing ceaseless thunders...

...

At the same time, an extremely brilliant airboat passed through the airspace of Yanzhou Province towards Xuantian City. Bai

Suxian in an imperial robe as beautiful as a fairy was standing at the prow of the airboat. Not only that, she was losing her temper to an old man by stomping her feet to the ground and putting her hands on both sides of her waist.

"If I'm late and couldn't catch up with Brother Cui's opening ceremony, it's all your fault; it's all your fault; go back to your Lord Guangnan's Mansion..."

The old man revealed a bitter smile as he explained to Bai Suxian in a humble way, "Miss, we have to pass through the airspace of Yongzhou Province and Mozhou Province; but we don't know that the Class A cities in these provinces are under martial law. Even their airspace has been blocked and airboats should be checked. Even if we could pass through the checks smoothly with the brand of Lord Guangnan's Mansion, we have to waste some time on the way..."

"Whatever, it's your fault..."

"Yes, it's all this old slave's fault!" The old man revealed a benign smile. However, in a split second, he looked icy and aggressive, "If anyone who dared speak ill of Miss and made Miss unhappy, this old slave would make him unhappy for the rest of his life. As this old slave watched Miss grow up, I would never make you feel bad..."

Soon after he finished his words, the old man who called himself this old slave suddenly felt something. He looked through the left porthole in the prow. Right over dozens of miles away, a same purple airboat caught up with them and flew towards Xuantian City shoulder to shoulder.

"Yi? Tianlu Palace's airboat..."

The old man immediately recognized the background of the airboat through the bow-shaped clan's emblem on the airboat.

Hearing Tianlu Palace's airboat, Bai Suxian immediately recalled

something. Like being stepped onto her tail, she sprung up at once as she gritted her teeth and said, "Fly ahead of it, don't let the foxtrel of Tianlu Palace arrive before us. The elders of Tianlu Palace have too many evil ideas. Do they think that I don't know that..."

...

The fight between two earth knights on fist skills made the onlookers dazzled.

Zhang Tie and Nangong Sheng punched each other as fast as lightning bolts and as slow as two giants lifting mountains, which was really earthshaking.

However, the speed of earth knight's movements was relative. After entering the realm of fists, in commoners' eyes, their fast movements were like slow motions. However, when they really slowed down their speed, others would feel that they were moving super fast. If not the constant shock waves and thunder-like booms in the valley, almost nobody could observe that the two people were colliding with each other...

Among the onlookers, perhaps less than 10 people could see clearly how Zhang Tie fought Nangong Sheng.

These knights who could see clearly how the two knights fought were very amazed.

Nangong Sheng's cultivation base on his fist skill had entered the supreme realm of integrating with the universe; what was more shocking was that Fire Dragon Hermit whose fist skill was not outstanding could also enter a fantastic realm of his fist skill. In about half an hour, Fire Dragon Hermit and Nangong Sheng almost drew. If not having a sharp eyesight and a powerful knight's consciousness, they could almost not find the trivial difference between Fire Dragon Hermit and Nangong Sheng in fist skills...



# Chapter 1059: The Unrivaled Punch

---

In a split second, numerous shadowy fists punched towards Zhang Tie in an overwhelming manner. With thunder-like booms, Nangong Sheng's fists integrated with the universe with a greater strength. With a surging battle qi, Nangong Sheng's fists became as irresistible as rolling thunders. However, Zhang Tie didn't fear about that at all. He punched against Nangong Sheng's fists face-to-face in the booming shock waves and blocked the greater part of Nangong Sheng's strike. But the trivial difference between the cultivation bases of the two fist skills was enlarged at this moment...

Scholars or fighters, there was always the best one. Even two earth knights only had a trivial difference at the beginning, the result would be remarkable.

In the blink of an eye, Nangong Sheng's fists had turned as overwhelming as a flood that spurted out small breaches of a dam at a fast speed. After destroying the dam, they poured onto Zhang Tie's body once again.

The bit of fist intent that leaked out of Zhang Tie's blockade immediately turned into a big river from a trickle and hit Zhang Tie's protective battle qi hundreds of times...

The last ten more fists of Nangong Sheng broke Zhang Tie's protective battle qi once again, hitting him onto the valley like a falling meteor. As a result, it caused a big pit deeper than 10 m. The rocks within 50 m were broken into fine powders...

They had been fighting over 4 hours.

3 hours ago, namely after they fought 1 hour, the bit of advantage of Nangong Sheng's fist position finally became magnified as his thunder-like immortal fist broke through Zhang Tie's defense for the first time and hit Zhang Tie onto the ground, causing a huge pit.

It was already the 11th time for Zhang Tie to be hit down from the sky by Nangong Sheng.

This time, after Zhang Tie's protective battle qi was broken, the thunder-like immortal fists closely hit onto his body, causing him to fall down with blood streams...

After a few hours' battle, this valley had already been severely destroyed. If you looked at it seriously, you would find traces which were like being hit by meteors on the ground and the cliffs on both sides of the valley, which were left by Zhang Tie.

'Is it over?'

At the sight of this scene, all the onlookers in the sky became confused.

During the past 4 hours, Nangong Sheng had shown the supreme realm of his thunder-like immortal fist once again, it was many people's first time to see how one's battle skill integrated with the universe. The moment Nangong Sheng threw punches, the heavy wind and rain would go berserk around the valley along with rolling thunders. The echoes of the thunders in the valley could resonate with his fists, making his fists more powerful in a split second.

What was more shocking was that Fire Dragon Hermit also reached a high realm in his fist skill. If not Nangong Sheng had entered the supreme realm of integrating his fist skill with the universe, the winner of this battle must be Fire Dragon Hermit; instead of Nangong Sheng. Fire Dragon Hermit was definitely a master in fist position.

What was more impressive was that Fire Dragon Hermit's protective battle qi. Average earth knights' protective battle qis might have been broken by Nangong Sheng's constantly thunder-like immortal fists in close combat in 2 hours; however, Fire Dragon Hermit's protective battle qi could almost bear 2 more times' longer than the others.

Even though Fire Dragon Hermit's protective battle qi was powerful, he was always defensive. The difference between their realms in their fist skills determined that Fire Dragon Hermit was in a disadvantageous position. Therefore, his protective battle qi could only face Nangong Sheng's strikes negatively. Even though it was only a trivial difference, through numerous times' collisions like this would lead to the final result.

'What a pity!'

Elder Muyu and Zhu Elder threw a glance at each other before feeling a bit pitiful inside.

"Fire Dragon Hermit is a bit younger and vigorous. If he didn't agree with Nangong Sheng that they would only compare notes on fist skills, Nangong Sheng would never defeat him. Fire Dragon Hermit could reach this realm in his fist skill, not to mention his realm in spear skill..." Zhu Elder told Elder Muyu in secret means.

"Perhaps, Fire Dragon Hermit could have a brighter future through this frustration. It doesn't matter whether he will open his Iron-Dragon Sect or not; because it's just a matter of reputation; neither will it influence Fire Dragon Hermit to enroll his apprentices. Fire Dragon Hermit lost this battle in a glorious manner. No matter what, Fire Dragon Hermit is the owner of Fire Dragon Bounty Territory; Nangong Sheng might fear that Fire Dragon Hermit would seek for a revenge one day..."

"The realm of integrating one's battle skill with the universe is already magical. It's said that after promoting to a heavenly knight, the realm of integrating one's battle skill with the universe would further promote to a preliminary power of territory. By then, it would be overwhelming. Zhao Yuan, the alchemist demon, who ranks first on the wanted list of the Supreme Court of Taixia Country used his power of territory of his earth furnace to kill many knight-level powerhouses like the deputy master of Taiyi Fantasy Sect and the young master of Heavens Holding Pavilion in Mojiang City, Songzhou Province. That's too vicious..."

"This time, we've really underestimated Nangong Sheng. None of the earth knights are average. I wonder whether Nangong Sheng could make a further progress in the future..."

"Hoho, Elder Muyu, you're thinking too much. It took Nangong Sheng over 70 years to promote to an earth knight. According to his speed of cultivation, it would take him at least 200 more years to promote to a heavenly knight. As the holy war is going to break out in a large scale in Taixia Country, nobody would know about the situation 200 years later. Even earth knights have to consider whether they could survive this holy war or not..."

"You're right, Zhu Elder..."

After throwing a glance at each other, the two elders didn't speak any more; instead, they moved their eyes onto Zhang Tie who had fallen into the valley once again...

Zhang Tie was lying at the bottom of the huge pit silently, facing up. The rainwater was filling the huge pit from all directions, soaking the greater part of the body of Fire Dragon Hermit.

Just now, both Elder Muyu and Elder Zhu had clearly seen that Zhang Tie was severely injured by Nangong Sheng; however, it was not a fatal blow. If Zhang Tie was a black iron knight, he might have already been killed; however, an earth knight wouldn't be so fragile...

Suspending in the air, Nangong Sheng watched Zhang Tie, who had almost been fully soaked by rainwater in the huge pit. He didn't keep attacking Zhang Tie. Because they were comparing notes; instead of fighting to death. They only needed to see who was the winner. If Nangong Sheng really wanted to kill Zhang Tie, those onlookers might stop him. Actually, if Zhang Tie tore up the agreement between them, it was not uncertain whom to kill. Only Zhang Tie knew how difficult was this battle to him.

Nangong Sheng could clearly feel that Zhang Tie didn't use his full efforts. Because Zhang Tie had not released the earth-level

virtual image of "Fire Dragon Sutra" until now.

Zhang Tie could fight Strong Cloud Hermit so long just with his fist, not to mention his spear skill of "Fire Dragon Sutra". Spear skill and fist skill were of the same origin. Spear was actually the extension of arms. Spear was as same as the fist on putting forth their strength and explosive pattern. In many cases, spear skill and fist skill were similar to each other. Many famous powerhouses in spear skill and fist skill practiced spear skill and fist skill at the same time. Those who were good at spear skill would definitely excel at fist skill; similarly, those who were good at fist skill would definitely be proficient in spear skill. Even the disciples of Immortal Fist Position Sect would always tremble their spears to sense how to put forth their strength. Nangong Sheng was also good at spear skill; however, he didn't pay special attention to it; instead, he just focused on cultivating his fist skill. Given Zhang Tie's performance, Nangong Sheng realized that Zhang Tie was definitely a powerhouse in both spear skill and fist skill...

In others' eyes, the winner of this battle was Nangong Sheng; however, Nangong Sheng didn't look as relaxed and proud as what a real winner should look; instead, he looked pretty solemn as he was deeply shocked by Zhang Tie's proficiency in fist skill and feared about Zhang Tie's valiance and braveness in battle. Watching the huge pits and collapsed cliffs in the valley, if it were Nangong Sheng himself, he might have long released his virtual image. However, Zhang Tie still didn't exert his full efforts in this situation; instead, he just compared notes with Nangong Sheng on fist skills. It indicated that Zhang Tie's potential was absolutely greater than that of Nangong Sheng. What a terrifying opponent!

Actually, Nangong Sheng had already been regretful that he promised Taiyi Fantasy Sect to ruin the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect. After offending such a powerful enemy, nobody could feel relaxed. Additionally, even if Nangong Sheng won this battle by accident, there would be a lot of troubles waiting for him.

However, now that it had come to a start, Nangong Sheng could only stand it by gritting his teeth.

"Fire Dragon Hermit, do you admit that you've lost this battle?" Nangong Sheng watched the ground as he opened his mouth while his voice reverberated in the sky.

In the reverberating voice, two huge airboats flew over here almost at the same time...

...

Lying on the ground in the shape of the character "大", Zhang Tie was wet all over. Watching the dense black clouds, he just allowed the rainwater to fall onto his face and eyes...

Feeling the long-lost pain of being torn apart, Zhang Tie felt it was a bit fresh. Because of the heavy rain, the rainwater flew into the huge pit from all directions. Only after a short while, Zhang Tie had floated in the rainwater.

Due to his sturdy figure, Zhang Tie's wounds were not as severe as imagined by others. These wounds basically didn't weaken his battle strength at all. In pains and coldness, Zhang Tie's awareness and soul became unprecedentedly clear and tranquil. He was clearly recalling Nangong Sheng's fists and movements and each collision between them like still images as fast as lightning bolts at an increasingly higher speed...

The cloudy sky was filled with rolling thunders. Zhang Tie just watched the rolling black clouds and the faint lightning bolts in the black clouds and the sun in the distance without even blinking his eyes as if he had entered meditation...

'In the sky, the extreme strength is from the sun. The sun travels in the sky and breeds all the living beings. It gives out its light in the void for hundreds of millions of years. When the sky creates killing opportunities, it will alter the universe!'

'Above the ground, the extreme strength is from lightning bolts.

The moment the thunders sounded, the mountains would rock; all the living beings would be scared. Lightning bolts are irresistible. When the ground creates killing opportunities, dragons and snakes will fly off the ground!'

'What about the extreme strength of humans?'

Zhang Tie roared inside...

As a lightning bolt flashed by, Zhang Tie faintly saw some bizarre images...

A volcano erupted under his foot. At the same time, in the sky, a far-ancient beast as fierce as a huge dragon flew across the sky. It flapped its wings, causing heavy winds and black clouds within thousands of miles. A giant as high as 3,000 m roared as it stomped to the ground, causing the cracks on the ground; even rivers and lakes dried. Additionally, the magma spurted out of the ground like a flowing river...

The great catastrophe ruined all the living beings on the earth...

In such a dangerous situation, various human races were kneeling down and worshipping the God with sacrifices for the forgiveness of the fierce beast. On the other side of the land, numerous Hua brave men in simple animal hides were looking at the fierce beast flying across the sky with black pupils and swaying black hair barefoot facing the heavy wind and rain. In front of that fierce beast, these brave men became as trivial as ants. However, they still raised their heads and watched the deity-like fierce beast with fearless looks...

On the land behind these Hua brave men, there were numerous Hua tribes...

Among those brave men, an old man with a white beard cut open the skin of his belly with fingernails and peeled it off from his lower abdomen before covering it over the simple stony pot. Closely after that, he started to beat the drum by fists.

The drumbeats and the roars of Hua brave men shocked the entire ground.

"Fight..." The old man who was beating the drum pointed at the fierce beast by one finger who caused endless catastrophe to humans.

Those Hua brave men in simple animal hides roared. All the brave men tightly held their fists before rushing into the sky...

The brutal battle started...

Before many Hua brave men approached the fierce beast, they had been torn apart by the lightning bolts, storms and magma and turned into dust and blood foam. Even though it was the last moment, all the Hua brave men were still tightly holding their fists. They didn't lose their fists until death. In the same battle, Hua brave men constantly gave out bizarre lights while their battle qi smokes and tornadoes rushed into the sky one after another...

The battle in the frontline lasted for many years. However, in the tribes in the rear end, all the Hua young men were clenching their fists which were covered with the blood of the wild beast with firm and persistent eye lights in the ceremony of becoming fighters. They raised their fists above their heads. Closely after that, they clenched their fists and marched on towards the battlefield where their fathers and elder brothers had fought to death along the footsteps of their predecessors...

One day, the battlefield suddenly became dark while a flying Hua youngster gave out brilliant lights, in which, the entire world and the fierce beast became still at once. Closely after that, a fist broke the sky like a far-ancient long rainbow and a hot sun. In a split second, the sky collapsed and the ground cracked; the daytime became dark in the clear and boundless sky. The stars were looming in the sky while the ground under his foot rolled; the rivers and lakes dried up while the grasses and woods withered. Facing that fist, the fierce beast quivered due to fear and vanished



immediately...

It seemed that the fist came from far-ancient times. Besides killing that fierce beast, it even broke a barrier in Zhang Tie's awareness and body. In a split second, countless lightning bolts flashed across Zhang Tie's mind...

Right then, Zhang Tie heard the question of Nangong Sheng from the sky.

"Fire Dragon Hermit, do you admit that you've lost this battle?"

The voice was very close as if it was right at his ears; it also seemed to be far away in the skyline...

When Zhang Tie heard this voice, he saw two airboats flying towards here and the enchanting figure of Bai Suxian who was watching him from a suspending airboat...

...

'Fist position requests humans to create opportunities!'

'When one creates killing opportunities, the ground and the sky will be reversed!'

'When they are reversed, they will produce a great energy. It's similar to yin and yang, life and birth, victory or failure.'

'The spirit and soul of fist skill is to be dauntless!'

'The extreme strength of humans lies in the heart!'

Zhang Tie understood it at once while the battle qi rolled inside his body...

...

"Ahh, isn't my Brother Cui holding an opening ceremony in Xuantian City? What did you do to my Brother Cui?" Bai Suxian's sound arrived before her body.

Everybody at present, including Nangong Sheng, stared at Bai Suxian and the airboat behind her with a dumbfounded look.

Those sharp-eyed guys had noticed the symbol of Lord Guangnan in Taixia Country on the airboat.

Lord Guangnan's Mansion was a top major clan in Taixia Country.

When the others were speculating about the background of this airboat, Bai Suxian in an imperial robe had flown off the airboat hurriedly while her tender voice "Brother Cui" almost struck the knights and elders to death. As a result, those knights and elders just exchanged glances with each other...

Especially Nangong Sheng the master of Immortal Fist Position Sect, whose face immediately turned purple.

'It's Lord Guangnan's Mansion. In Taixia Country, a lord's mansion is even higher than a military region. A female knight in an imperial robe of princess flew off the lord mansion's airboat and called Cui Li "My Brother Cui". What did this mean? What's the relationship between the two of them? What's the relationship between Cui Li and Lord Guangnan's Mansion?'

However, before Nangong Sheng recovered his composure from these questions, another airboat flew over here from afar. The moment the hatch door of the second airboat opened, over 10 knights flew off the airboat.

"Hahaha, younger brother Cui Li, I know that you're going to hold the opening ceremony of your Iron-Dragon Sect, this elder brother came here to congratulate you. The strict checks wasted our Tianlu Palace a bit time on the way, hopefully younger brother Cui doesn't blame me for that!"

The voice of Zhang Anguo, the grand elder of Tianlu Palace drifted from the second airboat.

After hearing this voice, Nangong Sheng immediately felt thirsty while his neck became stiff. The two elders of Immortal Fist Position Sect looked especially bad as if they were going to cry.

After ruining Fire Dragon Hermit's opening ceremony, Immortal Fist Position Sect offended Lord Guangnan's Mansion and Tianlu Palace at the same time. The small Immortal Fist Position Sect only had three knights; however, it offended two major forces in Taixia Country at the same time; that's too far-stretched...

At this moment, to be honest, Nangong Sheng even wanted to lie down in the valley on behalf of Cui Li...

...

The moment Bai Suxian arrived here, she had caught sight of Cui Li who was lying at the bottom of the huge pit.

Bai Suxian didn't watch how Zhang Tie fought Nangong Sheng just now; she just watched Zhang Tie's battle qi tornado when the airboat was far away from here. She thought that Zhang Tie was fighting someone here. Therefore, she accelerated towards here. When Bai Suxian arrived here and saw Zhang Tie lying still in the huge pit, she thought that Zhang Tie had been killed. Therefore, with a wailful exclamation, she was going to dart towards the foot of the valley.

However, another figure appeared on Bai Suxian's side and pulled her back rapidly...

"What are you doing?" Bai Suxian was driven mad as she patted the chest of the old man who was holding her wrist by his palm.

The old man frankly accepted her palm and remained still as if Bai Suxian was brushing down dust for him. However, the old man watched Zhang Tie who was lying in the huge pit of the valley with flickering yet faintly fearful eyes as he said, "Miss, don't approach me, it's dangerous..."

"This is Brother Cui, I wonder whether my Brother Cui is dead or not, I have to take a look at him over there!" Bai Suxian wanted to get rid of the old man's hand; however, it didn't work at all. The old man directly pulled her away rapidly, "That man's qi..."

At this moment, Zhang Anguo the grand elder of Tianlu Palace also arrived. Closely after that, he felt something as he faintly changed his face too...

At this moment, all the earth knights at present had felt an earth-shaking qi as berserk as a far-ancient fierce beast rising from the bottom of the valley...

When this berserk qi rushed into the sky, the sky was instantly covered with heavy black clouds which looked like a rolling tide tens of thousands of meters high within hundreds of square miles. As a result, the entire Fire Dragon Bounty Territory was in dark within thousands of square miles, including Xuantian City. The heavy clouds looked terrifyingly dark red like blood. Lightning bolts sparkled in the clouds, followed by rolling thunders while people in Xuantian City thought that the doomsday was coming...

Those knights who had witnessed Nangong Sheng's supreme realm of integrating his fist skill with universe just now widely opened their mouths when they saw the changing weather which was much more terrifying than the scene of Nangong Sheng. They uttered, "Is...is...this also the supreme realm of integrating fist skill with universe..."

Even knights couldn't believe it, not to mention commoners.

As for Nangong Sheng, the scene of integrating his fist skill with universe only influenced the valley which covered dozens of square miles; however, as for Zhang Tie, the scene of integrating his fist skill with the universe was like a great universal catastrophe...

At the sight of this marvelous scene, Nangong Sheng's face turned pale as his body quivered all over...

All of a sudden, it became dark once again while the earth started to quiver. At the same time, a bloody lightning bolt as thick as a few meters suddenly broke the clouds and cast onto Zhang Tie's body.

The rainwater in the huge pit evaporated in a split second in the lightning bolt; however, Zhang Tie was safe and sound; instead, his body shone as it floated up in the lightning bolt in a weird way. Like a Thor, he made a simple fist mark in the lightning bolt by hands. The moment the fist mark came into being, numerous lightning bolts had charged at the ground from the clouds at the same time within hundreds of square miles.

"Since the beginning of the universe, who could punch through the sky? Who could defeat me with fists? The extreme strength lies in the heart. My heart is the truth. My killing intent would be resonated by the universe..." Zhang Tie looked up and sighed with emotion while numerous lightning bolts struck him once again as a response...

Facing the coercion of numerous lightning bolts, the surrounding knights had to evacuate 1 more mile away. Only Nangong Sheng was watching Zhang Tie rising in the lightning bolts as lonely as a little bird in the storm. Closely after that, Zhang Tie punched him from hundreds of meters away...

Before Zhang Tie's punch approached him, a bloody lightning bolt had turned into a ball-shaped lightning bolt and severely struck Nangong Sheng...

...

# Chapter 1060: I'm a Great Master

---

Nobody at present could imagine that Zhang Tie's fist would attract a bloody ball-shaped lightning bolt to strike Nangong Sheng, including Nangong Sheng himself.

When the ball-shaped lightning bolt struck Nangong Sheng, causing a boom, Zhang Tie's punch also arrived.

The lightning bolt and fist almost arrived at the same time. At the sight of this, Nangong Sheng raised his eyebrows while widely opening his eyes and roaring. He resisted the punch and the lightning bolt at the same time; however, before Zhang Tie punched for the second time, Nangong Sheng had been sent flying away and finally collided against the ground in the valley like a meteor, causing another huge pit in the messy valley...

Like how Nangong Sheng behaved before, Zhang Tie didn't continue to attack him; instead, he just suspended above the valley and waited for Nangong Sheng to pick himself up. Meanwhile, he raised his head and watched the thick clouds with an evidently shocking sense inside...

At this moment, Zhang Tie finally understood the so-called supreme realm of integrating one's battle skill with the universe. It was a very marvelous realm. At the same time, Zhang Tie reached a wholly new realm and had a new gnosis about his battle skills.

Of course, he made the greatest improvement in fist position.

Nangong Sheng's fist could cause a weather change like clouds movement by enabling his fist gestures to resonate with thunders so as to make his fist much more powerful.

However, Zhang Tie's fist could integrate with his mind. His fist could cause weather change in a larger area than that of Nangong Sheng. The moment Zhang Tie punched out, his mind would integrate with the universe, namely, having the clouds produce

lightning bolts to attack his enemy together with his punches.

Zhang Tie's fist realm was much higher than that of Nangong Sheng with a greater destruction.

However, Zhang Tie knew that it was not the supreme realm of fist position. Among those blurry images in his awareness, the brilliant giant's punch reached the supreme realm of fist position. It was the extreme of fist position. Facing that fist, space could be broken, time could be still, land could quake, stars could appear in the daytime, powerful enemies could be eliminated while vigorous grasses and woods could wither. It was more like the great law of an overbearing man, the heart of a brave man, the universe in hand and everything in one's body.

That punch shocked Zhang Tie's soul and made his heart race. Zhang Tie had determined to reach that realm one day.

Compared to the supreme realm, although Zhang Tie's fist position had already reached the realm of integrating with the universe. It was still like a "skill" and was far away from the great law. Even so, Zhang Tie also knew that his fist position could already shock the entire country. He believed that he might not find any opponent on the same level in Taixia Country.

The red ball-shaped lightning bolt was really powerful. Just now, with such a blow, Zhang Tie felt that Nangong Sheng's protective battle qi had been completely destroyed. If he was fighting an average black iron knight just now, he might have already severely hurt him even killed him.

What was more, the shocking image in his mind was like a beam of light in the dark, which enabled Zhang Tie to see clearly the orientation of his fist position and his great potential in progress.

Zhang Tie was still sighing with emotion inside about the great difference between his punch and that shocking punch in his memory; however, he didn't know that the scene that he sent Nangong Sheng flying away along with the strike of a red ball-

shaped lightning bolt had shocked so many onlookers. What a powerful punch! It was too unbelievable. They had not even heard about it.

"Impossible...impossible...this must be a coincidence; this must be a coincidence. Nobody could have a lightning bolt follow their mind..." Nangong Sheng shouted like a boilermaker escaping out of the exploded boiler room when he looked black all over with smoking hair in a pretty embarrassed way after recovering himself in a short period. Closely after that, he flew into the sky once again.

Like how Zhang Tie's previous condition, Nangong Sheng was not severely injured either. His battle strength still remained unchanged; however, he felt unwilling. What shocked him most was that he was struck by the lightning bolt caused by others' punch for the first time.

'A few hours ago, this man's fist skill could not match me. After hitting him onto the ground many times, I should have won the fight; how could this man's fist skill suddenly catch up with mine after such a short while?'

Nangong Sheng had faintly got the answer. Zhang Tie had a sudden insight. A fighter might not have a chance to have an insight of something in his whole life. Nangong Sheng really couldn't believe that his defeated opponent could have an insight under his eyes; additionally, his insight was unusual...

"Nothing is impossible. Honestly, I have to appreciate you, Master Nangong. Without comparing notes with you, I didn't know after how long could I make such a breakthrough at all. Master Nangong, you've really given me a big gift for the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect!" Zhang Tie watched Nangong Sheng with a calm look in the air. Until then, Zhang Tie still didn't hate Nangong Sheng; instead, Zhang Tie sympathized him——Nangong Sheng is very powerful; pitifully, he found the wrong opponent to display his masculinity.



"I don't believe that..." Nangong Sheng was almost driven mad. With this roar, he released his earth-knight level virtual image beside his battle qi tornado. It was a colorful bizarre bird with a long white tail. Since it appeared behind Nangong Sheng's body, this virtual image had been casting covetous eyes on Zhang Tie as if it was going to charge at Zhang Tie immediately. However, Nangong Sheng rushed towards Zhang Tie while roaring, "All punches in one point...", which was the trump card of Thunder-like Immortal Fist Position...

As a result, one punch turned into ten punches; ten punches turned into one hundred punches; one hundred punches turned into one thousand punches; one thousand punches turned into ten thousand punches. In the blink of an eye, the sky over the valley was covered with Nangong Sheng's punch intent. The punch intent finally turned into a punch and shot towards Zhang Tie with an extremely great power. It broke the air and caused a thunder-like quake in the valley.

This fist gesture was definitely the masterpiece of Nangong Sheng about his fist position.

Watching Nangong Sheng's trump card, Zhang Tie just shook his head inside, 'If Nangong Sheng used this trump card 1 hour ago, undoubtedly, I would be defeated. If I collided against Nangong Sheng's punch with my punch face-to-face at that time, I might even be severely injured; however, it was different now. After witnessing the unrivaled punch in mind, this gesture looks a bit average.'

Above all, after watching how the roc stretched its wings in the sky, he could also stretch his wings; by contrast, it would be boring for him to watch a small bird flapping its wings among twigs.

In a split second, Zhang Tie could even find the loopholes of Nangong Sheng's movement. He realized that Nangong Sheng had not mastered the essence of this gesture.

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter as he made an average forward punch which could even be imitated by commoners towards Nangong Sheng's aggressive punch.

At this moment, another red ball-shaped lightning bolt flew out of the clouds. In a split second, Zhang Tie's irresistible punch collided with Nangong Sheng's aggressive punch...

Watching the ball-shaped lightning bolt descending once again, Nangong Sheng felt pretty disappointed as the impossible guess came true.

In the growly loud thunders, Zhang Tie collided with Nangong Sheng's thunder-like immortal fist by the most average 10-step forward punch...

Although it was an average 10-step forward punch, it looked bizarre and classic. The 10-step forward punch was like an erupting volcano and the surging Yangtze River, which looked unimaginably powerful. Each movement of Zhang Tie was classic and changing just like a precious secret battle skill...

...

Watching such a fierce battle, many surrounding knights became completely dumbfounded in the distance.

"This...this...are you kidding me? Is Fire Dragon Hermit using the simplest 10-step forward punch?" An elder of a clan in Yanzhou Province uttered as he watched the fight with a dumbfounded look.

"You're right. It's indeed 10-step forward punch. However, it became a marvel in Fire Dragon Hermit's hand. Great wisdom looks stupid. This is the fist master's realm..." Lu Dingzhi watched the battle as he replied the elder. Even Lu Dingzhi himself didn't know how he felt inside. He just felt a bit disappointed, 'It's said that Fire Dragon Hermit has just promoted to an earth knight just like me; however, I might be more embarrassed than Nangong

Sheng facing Cui LI's punch...'

...

This time, Nangong Sheng stood less than 3 minutes facing Zhang Tie's punches. Before he was struck by that red ball-shaped lightning bolt, Nangong Sheng had uttered a miserable roar while the arm that collided with Zhang Tie's punch was fractured into many pieces. At the same time, he spurted out blood and was sent flying towards the ground in the valley once again...

"Master..." Watching the terrifying ball-shaped lightning bolt falling towards Nangong Sheng, the two elders of Immortal Fist Position Sect hurriedly roared as they darted towards the battlefield at the same time.

Nangong Sheng's protective battle qi had been broken once again. Additionally, he was severely injured and couldn't resist at all. If he was struck by that ball-shaped lightning bolt, he would die for sure...

Nangong Sheng found that he couldn't have time to form his protective battle qi and resist Zhang Tie as his battle qi was disordered; he could only watch the red ball-shaped lightning bolt approaching him. It was his first time to fear about death in his life...

However, before the ball-shaped lightning bolt approached him, a giant suddenly appeared in front of him and punched at the terrifying ball-shaped lightning bolt. Closely after that, the ball-shaped lightning bolt turned into a tender light and disappeared...

Watching the giant in front of him, Nangong Sheng had a complexed mood inside. Closely after that, he fell onto the ground, causing another huge pit. At the same time, he spurted out blood. With pain, shame and that complexed mood, he passed out at once...

The two elders of Immortal Fist Position Sect hurriedly flew over

here from afar...

...

# Chapter 1061: A Myriad of Stars Surround the Moon

---

Suspending in the air, Zhang Tie just watched how the two elders of Immortal Fist Position Sect flew towards Nangong Sheng, doing massage, setting fractures or pouring medicament into his mouth. Not until a few minutes later did Nangong Sheng flew back into the air with the two elders once again in a wobbly way...

"Master Nangong, will we continue?" Zhang Tie asked kindly.

Nangong Sheng looked pale and very embarrassed. This defeat was a strike on his body and spirit at the same time; additionally, he had to sustain the series of aftermaths, "I...I admit that I've lost it. I cannot match you on fist skills...From today on...my Immortal Fist Position Sect will stay far away from Iron-Dragon Sect..."

After finishing his words, Nangong Sheng swayed a couple of times in the sky like being collapsed as if he was going to fall off...

"Master Nangong, I have no animosity with you. You must be clear about the reason for the fight today. As one of the top seven major sects in Taixia Country, Taiyi Fantasy Sect is too narrow-minded!" Zhang Tie let out a sigh after winning the fight, "Bue I have to appreciate Master Nangong, without comparing notes with you, I would not have an insight and breakthrough. I remember that Immortal Fist Position Sect's territory is in Fengtang Prefecture, Yanzhou Province. From today on, Iron-Dragon Sect would never open branches in Fengtang Prefecture and those prefectures neighboring Fengtang Prefecture. Don't worry, Master Nangong!"

According to the agreement between Nangong Sheng and Zhang Tie, after Zhang Tie won this fight, if Iron-Dragon Sect really wanted to open branches in Fengtang Prefecture and the prefectures neighboring Fengtang Prefecture in Yanzhou Province, Immortal Fist Position Sect could only bear it. As a result,

Immortal Fist Position Sect would be severely weakened, even be forced to go bankrupt or move its base. Given the interests of Immortal Fist Position Sect and Nangong Sheng's reputation, Zhang Tie's promise was pretty righteous. Nobody would blame him anymore.

After hearing Zhang Tie's promise, the two elders of Immortal Fist Position Sect beside Nangong Sheng watched Zhang Tie with a complex eye light.

Watching the airboats of Lord Guangnan's Mansion and Tianlu Palace suspending in the distance, Nangong Sheng felt disappointed at once as he mumbled inside, 'What a figure! Strong Punch; sharp insight; close relationship with people from big forces; profound background; being open-minded and treat people kindly. What the hell am I thinking about? How could I fight such a person? How do I dream about driving such a person away from Northeast Military Region? I'm absolutely going beyond my depth.'

"Through this fight, I Nangong Sheng know that there're always people who are better than me. Fire Dragon Hermit's fist skill, battle skill and moral standing are really convincing!" Nangong Sheng cupped his hands towards Zhang Tie with a bashful look, "I really can't stay in the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect anymore, but on the other day, Immortal Fist Position Sect would definitely send a gift to you. Wish Iron-Dragon Sect be forever in accordance with the laws. This humble man will...leave..."

After saying that, Nangong Sheng immediately turned around and flew towards Yanzhou Province before receiving Zhang Tie's reply. The two elders of Immortal Fist Position Sect also cupped their hands towards Zhang Tie before following up Nangong Sheng.

Watching Nangong Sheng's lonely back, Zhang Tie didn't know what to say. He just let out a sigh inside, "This world really could not run according to one's will. Nangong Sheng has opened

Immortal Fist Position Sect for 100 years and enjoyed a great prestige in Immortal Fist Position Sect for a long time. Additionally, he had reached a supreme realm in his fist, he mistook that the world was running around him. He deserved this failure. If Nangong Sheng could learn from this failure, it might not be bad for him and the development of Immortal Fist Position Sect.

Watching Nangong Sheng's back, Zhang Tie reminded himself, 'I should never feel complacent in any time. All of a sudden, he sniffed a fragrance while a tender and fragrant body was thrown into his cradle as she said coquettishly, "Brother Cui, you scared this humble slave too much. I thought you were dead..."

Bai Suxian said as she patted her plump breasts under her imperial robe as if she was going to attract Zhang Tie's eyes back to her.

'What a spirit!' Zhang Tie swore inside.

Besides Bai Suxian, all the surrounding knights flew towards Zhang Tie too.

Those onlookers had already heard the conversation between Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian. As for knights, even though it was a long distance, they could still hear the contents of the talk as long as it was in the normal sound, Zhang Tie's promise to Immortal Fist Position Sect won many people's admiration. They all felt that Zhang Tie was generous and open-minded instead of being domineering and vicious. As Zhang Tie had power, relationship and was open-minded, he could definitely be a reliable friend.

Therefore, the others were more awe-stricken and intimate to Zhang Tie.

"Younger brother Cui Li, I've not imagined that you could reach such a supreme realm in fist skill. You really widen my horizon. Previously, this elder brother wanted to congratulate your Iron-Dragon Sect, I've not imagined that you could realize a sublimation

in your fist skill after such a fight. Younger brother Cui, your supreme realm of integrating with the universe was too terrifying. You're definitely a master in fist skill in Taixia Country. Two happy events came one after another..." Zhang Anguo the elder of Tianlu Palace said with a big smile as he flew towards here with the other knights of Tianlu Palace.

Those who followed Zhang Anguo here were all knights of Tianlu Palace whom Zhang Tie had met in Earth-elements Realm, including Zhang Shuzhen and Zhang Anshi who had a conflict with Zhang Tie. At this moment, the two people watched Zhang Tie with more complex and shocked looks. Only after a few years, the black iron knight who explored the hieron ruins with them had already promoted to an earth knight with such a terrifying battle strength. They found a sharp difference between them and Cui Li. As a result, they felt more complex.

In the knight's world, those with great battle strength would win respect. When they heard their elder call Cui Li "Younger brother", all the others of Tianlu Palace at present had realized that they were "juniors". Therefore, they didn't know what to say...

"Haha, it's Elder Brother Anguo, I've not imagined that my small opening ceremony in Northeast Military Region could arouse your attention, sorry, sorry..."

As Zhang Tie replied, he ran his spiritual energy to drive away the thick clouds over hundreds of square miles. After realizing that Bai Suxian was still leaning against him and the ambiguous and weird looks of the surrounding people, Zhang Tie coughed twice as he patted Bai Suxian's shoulder to remind her to retain a good public image.

Pouting her tiny mouth, Bai Suxian moved a bit away from Zhang Tie with an unpleasant look.

"Younger brother Cui Li, do you think that I'm not qualified to be your friend?" Zhang Anguo immediately looked solemn as if he



became angry as he continued, "If not, why not Younger brother send a golden invitation letter to us?"

"Hehheh, erm...that's a bit embarrassing. Because Tianlu Palace in Youzhou Province is too far away from here. I would feel embarrassed if elder brother traveled so long for such a trivial thing, therefore..." Zhang Tie patted his bald head as he continued, "It's all my fault, I will have a drink with elder brother and the old friends of Tianlu Palace today..."

Zhang Anguo recovered a big smile, "That's my younger brother..."

After looking around the surrounding knights, Zhang Tie waved his hand immediately, "It's over. Let's go back to Xuantian City. Whatever, we have to eat. After a few hours' fight, this Cui also feel a bit hungry. If I made you hungry in my opening ceremony, it would be a joke. Let's go back and enjoy the food and drinks first..."

All the others burst out into laughter. Many of them had been ready to flatter Zhang Tie. It seemed that the 3 people of Immortal Fist Position Sect had not been here before.

All the knights directly flew towards Xuantian City, including Bai Suxian and knights of Tianlu Palace, leaving their airboats alone.

After such a short while, the thick clouds like that of a doomsday had fully dispersed. The sunshine cast onto the ground once again. All the knights clicked their tongues in wonder.

"Master, this humble lady misses you so much..."

In flight, Zhang Tie heard Bai Suxian's sound which was transmitted to him in a secret way. Heart racing, he threw a glance at the sister who looked as adorable as a lily as he immediately caught Bai Suxian's hand and flew forward together with her. Bai Suxian also caught his hand tightly as she revealed a sweet smile to him...

When Zhang Tie caught Bai Suxian's hand, he could evidently feel that 3 pairs of eyes were gazing at their hands behind them. Zhang Tie looked back.

The first eye light came from the old guy who was following Bai Suxian closely. The old guy was also an earth knight; however, Zhang Tie couldn't see through his battle strength.

The second eye light came from Zhang Shuzhen, the female knight from Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace. When in the hieron ruins, Zhang Shuzhen had met Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian. However, the two people had not messed with each other yet at that time. Seeing Bai Suxian hooking up with Zhang Tie, Zhang Shuzhen's eyes were full of surprise. Finding Zhang Tie looking back, she hurriedly avoided from his eye light.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that the third eye light came from Guo Hongyi...

Finding Zhang Tie looking at her, Guo Hongyi's eye light became hurry-scurry at once. Closely after that, she moved her eyes away with an arrogant look. At the same time, she uttered a faintly cold harrumph through her nostrils...

Zhang Tie really didn't understand woman. After noticing Guo Hongyi's demeanor, Zhang Tie became amazed, 'Are you kidding me? This mature woman of Guo Clan from Threespring Prefecture likes the type of Cui Li...'

# Chapter 1062: Enrolling Apprentices

---

When these knights flew back to Xuantian City, they found it was still a bit chaotic in Xuantian City. Because the black clouds and lightning bolts within hundreds of square miles just now were too terrifying. So many people in Xuantian City felt very oppressive and scared at the sight of such a sheer terror. Therefore, the chaos was unavoidable...

After all, less than one of one million commoners might have not seen the supreme realm of integrating one's battle skill with the universe. Even if they had seen that, they might not believe that it was caused by Zhang Tie's fist position.

Not only commoners in Xuantian City, even the juniors of the major clans in Xuantian Courtyard wondered what happened.

However, seeing that their elders and masters and the knights had flown back, these people finally became relaxed.

The moment Zhang Tie landed, he had called Liu Xing who was maintaining order in Xuantian Courtyard.

"Pass my order, the abnormal climate just now was caused by an earth knight when he integrated his battle skill with the universe. If anyone who bewilders others with rebellious words, deal with him according to the law!"

'Caused by an earth knight when he integrated his battle skill with the universe?' Fire Lieutenant Liu Xing immediately stood at attention and chested out, "Yes, sir..."

Zhang Tie then glanced round Xuantian Courtyard before asking, "Where are the disciples of Immortal Fist Position Sect?"

"A few minutes ago, those disciples of Immortal Fist Position Sect had left in a flurried way silently..."

"Well, hurry up, pass my order!" Zhang Tie waved his hand. It was not strange that disciples of Immortal Fist Position Sect had

left. They might have already known the result of the fight between Cui Li and Nangong Sheng through the remote-sensing crystal. Now that the master and elders of Immortal Fist Position Sect had left, what were they here for? Ridicule? Of course, they'd better go.

...

When the knights came back, it became sunny once again. The order in Xuantian City and Xuantian Courtyard also recovered soon.

Of course, the result of the fight between Zhang Tie and Nangong Sheng the master of Immortal Fist Position Sect was also exposed to the public. After knowing this result; especially that the abnormal climate was aroused by Fire Dragon Hermit, the entire Xuantian City including Xuantian Courtyard boiled. More people being related to Zhang Tie such as those candidates of local representatives, the master and disciples of Wang Clan became excited. All of them became jubilant and looked more energetic than they were in the morning...

...

"Have you seen that the beautiful girl in an imperial robe on the side of Fire Dragon Hermit is the princess from Lord Guangnan's Mansion? Even Lord Guangnan's airboat has arrived in the sky outside the city. Look at that white one. It seems that Fire Dragon Hermit is going to be the son-in-law of Lord Guangnan. With Lord Guangnan as his reliance and background, it's really ridiculous that Nangong Sheng wanted to ruin Fire Dragon Hermit's opening ceremony..."

"Yup, it's said that even the grand elder and some knights of Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace have come to congratulate Fire Dragon Hermit without even receiving the golden invitation letter..."

"What? You don't know Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace...piss

off...brat..."

...

Only after a short while, the gossip had spread over the entire Xuantian Courtyard, even Xuantian City. As a knight, of course, Bai Suxian could hear all the discussions in Xuantian Courtyard. However, Bai Suxian was not angry about that; instead, she looked pretty happy. She almost followed Zhang Tie everywhere like his wife.

Because those knights had flown off to watch the fight in the air, although it was lunch time, none of the juniors of the clans and sects in Xuantian Courtyard dared move their chopsticks. Therefore, the moment Zhang Tie came back, he directly waved his hand to have people enjoy the meal first.

Even knights had to eat; especially on this occasion, it was improper for guests to attend the opening ceremony without eating food.

All the disciples of various clans and sects gathered in one courtyard; elders and masters of clans and sects would gather in another courtyard. Some female knights who didn't like such a boisterous scene such as Guo Hongyi were arranged to have food in a tranquil place.

If Nangong Sheng didn't come, the so-called opening ceremony just served as a venue for Zhang Tie to meet and chat with the other neighbors; after that, he would enroll his first apprentice in the public, which represented that Iron-Dragon Sect would have an official order in inheritance. To enroll apprentices was the most important link of the opening ceremony of a sect. After completing this link, the opening ceremony would almost come to an end.

Because of Nangong Sheng, Zhang Tie spent over 4 hours in fighting him. Therefore, the important ritual of enrolling apprentices in the opening ceremony could only start in the afternoon after all the guests were full.

Nobody complained about it at all. Zhang Tie's performance in the fight made his ritual of enrolling apprentices especially solemn in the afternoon.

At this moment, even idiots knew that it was a great progress for one to be the first apprentice of Fire Dragon Hermit.

Generally, the first apprentice of the master of one sect, especially an earth knight would probably promote to be a black iron knight in the future. The first apprentice of each sect was concerned about the reputation of their master and sect. Therefore, they would gain more instruction from their masters. As a result, they would have a greater role in their sect.

As the first apprentice of Fire Dragon Hermit, a master in fist skill with a deep background, as long as he was not too stupid or lazy, he would definitely promote to a black iron knight in the future.

A black iron knight who cultivated "Fire Dragon Sutra" would not be ignored by major clans like Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace.

However, Fire Dragon Hermit didn't reveal any information about enrolling his apprentices in advance, those elders and masters of those major clans at present felt anxious inside.

The most important purpose that elders and masters of major clans and sects took their junior disciples to the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect was to try their luck. The instruction of an earth knight could only be enjoyed by very few clan elites among top clans in Taixia Country.

However, each of the major clans across Taixia Country had thousands of immediate disciples. Tianlu Palace might have hundreds of thousands of disciples. Without such a background, how could they dominate one region and be qualified as a major clan? Even so, very few of these clan disciples could receive the instruction of elders and knights in the sect. Therefore, when one knight-level powerhouse was going to open a sect or enroll

apprentices, it would be very boisterous.

Sects and major clans were natural allies in Taixia Country.

If the master was an earth knight who cultivated marquis-level secret method, he was destined to have a bright future. His apprentices would gain a lot of benefits from him and would finally become the reliance of the clan.

With the bounty land covering over 1 million square miles and 10 cities, this master was definitely rich. His apprentices would never lack cultivation resources before promoting to knights.

As he could understand the essence of a fist skill on the battlefield and enter the master-level realm, it also meant that this master had a much better comprehension about battle skills than commoners. After being instructed by such a master, his apprentices would take a shortcut for sure. It was definitely the greatest luck for those juniors to be enrolled by such a master as his apprentices.

What was more, Fire Dragon Hermit was alone, who was not troubled by family affairs like the masters of some sects and clans or knights. Even if those with families could enroll apprentices, they would spend limited time in their apprentices. It meant that Fire Dragon Hermit would spend most of his time in developing the undertaking of Iron-Dragon Sect and instructing his apprentices.

Honestly, few masters as excellent as Fire Dragon Hermit could be found across Taixia Country, not to mention the remote Northeast Military Region.

Actually, there were almost no idiots in this world. What one person could understand would be understood by others too. Therefore, in the afternoon, before Fire Dragon Hermit enrolled his apprentices officially, everybody in Xuantian Courtyard of Iron-Dragon Sect even in Xuantian City wanted to know who was the first apprentice of him. Therefore, it became quiet in a split

second.

When the apprentice enrollment ritual started in the afternoon, Zhang Tie sat on a seat made of pure gold in a very dignified manner in the venue with 2 boys on each of his side. The 4 boys in ceremonial Hua robes looked innocent with a tray made of pure silver in hand. There was a red silk cloth in each tray. On each red silk cloth, there was a different item. From left to right, they were respectively a huge wolf-hair brush made of pure gold, golden cinnabar, a group of tea cups and a tea pot made of pure gold.

Many people of Wang Clan were standing behind the four boys. The guests were seated on two sides of Zhang Tie in front of him. Closely after that, the young disciples of these clans would enter the venue in groups to congratulate Zhang Tie. Those being favored by Zhang Tie would become his apprentices...

The process of enrolling apprentices in the opening ceremony of one sect was similar to the allusion of bring the painted dragon to live by putting in the pupils of its eyes and implied good luck and happiness. Therefore, it was called putting in dragons...



# Chapter 1063: The First Apprentice of Zhang Tie

---

Sitting on his golden chair, Zhang Tie looked at the crowd. It was pretty silent in the venue.

This process made everybody at present nervous. According to the schedule, after a short while, the young representatives of each clan would show up in batches in front of Fire Dragon Hermit so as to congratulate him. If Zhang Tie favored one or some of them, he would point onto their foreheads with golden cinnabar by that golden brush and enroll him as his apprentice. Closely after that, those being selected would have a sudden rise in social status...

Those being selected by Fire Dragon Hermit would have a chance to gain literary advancement.

At this moment, Wang Chongde the master of Wang Clan walked into the venue and served as a compere in the venue on his own initiative. When Wang Chongde was ready to shout, "All the youngsters of each clan will congratulate Fire Dragon Hermit in turns", Zhang Tie suddenly raised his hand.

Watching Zhang Tie's movement, Wang Chongde swallowed back his words.

Zhang Tie focused on Liu Xing and some guys who served as guards behind the guests.

When Zhang Tie returned to Fire Dragon Bounty Territory, he had got enough assistants for holding the opening ceremony due to the favor of all the clans in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory. Therefore, 12 of the 19 black-armored fighters left him since they returned to the earth surface from Earth-elements Realm due to various reasons. Previously, these black-armored fighters just helped Zhang Tie leave the Earth-elements Realm by airboat at Guan Qianchong's order for the time being; they were not

subordinate to Zhang Tie at all. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't force them to stay; additionally, he prepared 200,000 gold coins for each of them so that they could leave him happily.

However, 7 of the 19 black-armored fighters stayed to follow Zhang Tie's order.

Among the 7 people who stayed, Liu Xing was a LV 9 fighter who had made the most meritorious services with the highest official post in the Lion Fortress. Therefore, it was more convincing for Liu Xing to be the head of the 7 people.

"Liu Xing, Zhao Bing, Wu Yinhui, Zhou Xiao, Ma Kuicheng, Linghu Biao, Sun Zhan, you guys come over here..."

The moment Zhang Tie uttered, all the others at present became shocked as they turned around to watch the 7 retired black-armored fighters.

The team of 7 were also amazed as they didn't know what Zhang Tie would let them do at this moment. However, after listening to their names, they rapidly ran over here from behind the crowd and stood in a row in front of Zhang Tie.

"Hermit, what can we do for you?" Liu Xing asked.

Zhang Tie smiled as he looked through the 7 black-armored fighters. Liu Xing was introverted and profound. Although he looked gracious, he was decisive inside; Zhao Bing was brave and aggressive; Wu Yinhui was a bit arrogant yet persistent; Zhou Xiao was as valiant as his name who didn't consider about the result of his deed; Ma Kuicheng was experienced and meticulous; Linghu Biao was silent yet kind-hearted; Sun Zhan was too changeable in character yet was righteous. Additionally, Sun Zhan was the most active person among them who used to joke around the others. After staying with them for so long, Zhang Tie had been observing everybody's movements since he entered the airboat.

Although these black-armored fighters had evidently different

temperaments, they shared one common point, namely, these people were all loyal to Taixia Country. As they all experienced the battlefield in the Earth-elements Realm, they were not cowards. However, like Liu Xing, they had to retire due to various reasons.

There was one last point, namely, all the 7 people were born in common clans and families. Wu Yinhui's family background was a bit better; however, his family only had some big manors, plants or small business groups just like those local tyrants in the 10 cities of Fire Dragon Bounty Territory, which could never match that of major clans with knights.

"Do you want to be my apprentices?" Zhang Tie asked calmly, which sounded like a bomb among the crowd.

Liu Xing and the other 6 black-armored fighters were shocked too much. Even those knights and elders of the major clans in the surroundings exchanged glances with each other silently.

'Apprentice? Apprentice of Fire Dragon Hermit?'

The team of 7 could never imagine that they could have such a good luck to be enrolled as the apprentices of Fire Dragon Hermit.

Sun Zhan was the first one who made a response to Zhang Tie's words. He immediately knelt down in front of Zhang Tie with an excited look and kowtowed towards Zhang Tie for nine times, causing "bang, bang, bang". His forehead even turned red.

The others were not idiots. Facing such a rare opportunity which could change their destiny, even their clans', if they still hesitated or declined, their predecessors buried under the ground might jump out to slap their faces.

Additionally, as they all came back from Earth-elements Realm, they knew Zhang Tie's military exploits in the Earth-elements Realm much better. They admired him pretty much. As the highest level among the 7 people was LV 9, it was their great fortune to be favored by an earth knight. Watching Shun Zhan's

movement, all the others hurriedly knelt down and kowtowed 9 times in front of Zhang Tie.

Under the admiring and jealous eyes of the others, Zhang Tie stretched out his arm and picked that golden brush. Closely after that, he dipped some golden cinnabar by that golden brush before pointing it at Liu Xing's forehead, leaving a golden and rosy mark over there, which looked like a brilliant dragon's eye.

Liu Xing had not imagined that he could be the first one being pointed with golden cinnabar. When he touched Zhang Tie's brush, Liu Xing felt a bit cold on his forehead as he quivered all over due to the excitement.

'I...I have become...the first apprentice of Fire Dragon Hermit.'

Liu Xing didn't know why he could be favored by Fire Dragon Hermit as he felt that he had reached the sky in a single bound.

At this moment, Liu Xing felt that everybody else at present was watching him with unprecedented hot eyes, including the clan elders and knights. All the other disciples of major clans who were pretty arrogant in front of him started to hold him in awe and intended to flatter him. Liu Xing felt a buzz in his mind as his body turned hot all over. He felt as unreal as kneeling down onto the soft sponge.

"From today on, Liu Xing, you will be my first apprentice. All the disciples of Iron-Dragon Sect would respect you from then on. Don't let me down. Live up to my expectation!" Zhang Tie told Liu Xing genially.

The first Liu Xing that Zhang Tie met had sacrificed in Waii Subcontinent. That one was his comrade-in-arms in Iron-Blood Camp; therefore, Zhang Tie selected the second Liu Xing as his first apprentice so as to fix his regret inside.

"Yes, sir, Liu Xing will follow Hermit's instructions seriously..."

In this public occasion, even Liu Xing had experienced the life or

death situation in the Earth-elements Realm, he still became restrained unconsciously. After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Liu Xing answered in a restrained way. After that, he found that Zhao Bing silently dragged the hem of his clothes. He then realized that he misspoke it just now; therefore, he hurriedly corrected his words, "Hmm...it's master's instructions!"

Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he faintly triggered his battle qi and had another bit of golden cinnabar fly onto the forehead of the other six people respectively steadily.

After pointing golden cinnabar onto the 7 people's foreheads, two boys moved forward, one of them served the teacup made of pure gold to Liu Xing, the other made a cup of tea water for him.

It was Taixia's regulation to kowtow and serve tea in the apprentice enrollment ritual. The bigger the sect was, the stricter the regulation would be. The apprentice enrollment ritual in the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect was a bit simple. As to the apprentice enrollment ritual of other sects, there were so many learnings on the preparation, the selection of time and place, the tea water and the wares. The more rules there were, the more cautious they were. The cautious attitude could frighten the apprentices and make it look like an apprentice enrollment ritual. Before the apprentice enrollment ritual, the apprentices should not eat meat; besides, they should clean their bodies and remain sincere for 81 days.

Of course, Liu Xing knew these rules. Even if nobody had taught him that, a native Hua people must have heard too much about that. Even kids knew about that.

Liu Xing moved forward a few steps by knees and raised high the teacup by two hands without spilling any water out of the cup, "Master, please have a drink!"

After taking the teacup and drinking it up, Zhang Tie gave the teacup back to the boy beside him, "Stand up!"

Liu Xing stood up before moving to the back of Zhang Tie. However, only after kneeling down a few minutes, when he stood up, he felt that the whole world was different. He felt like having a rebirth.

After Liu Xing, all the other 6 people served tea sincerely to Zhang Tie in turns while kneeling down. After drinking their tea, all the other 6 people stood behind Zhang Tie. Like how Liu Xing felt, the 6 people also felt like having a new life from then on.

Finding that the first apprentice of Zhang Tie had nothing to do with their clans, all the elders and knights at present felt complex. After knowing that their disciples lost the qualification to be the first apprentice of Fire Dragon Hermit, many people felt jealous more or less. However, when they found that the other clans lost the qualification too, they slowly recovered their composure once again.

They all knew about the seven people's jobs on Fire Dragon Hermit's side; however, they could never imagine that Fire Dragon Hermit could enroll them as his apprentices. Given this point, they felt that Fire Dragon Hermit was very affectionate; therefore, they longed for the followings...

# Chapter 1064: Putting in Dragons by Golden Brush

---

After the 7 black-armored fighters were selected as apprentices, the juniors of the major clans came on the stage by batches. Even the apprentices of the elders and masters of some small sects had come on the stage.

Actually, no secret method in Northeast Military Region could match "Fire Dragon Sutra" given the levels of the secret methods. Of course, the elders and masters of those small sects wanted their own apprentices to make further progress. As the old saying went, water flew downwards, human preferred to go to higher places. Although there were competitions among sects, it was common that disciples of elders and masters of small sects acknowledged the masters of major sects as their own masters in Taixia Country.

"XXX wishes Fire Dragon Hermit to run immortal chakras forever and have a firm sect forever..."

...

"XXX wishes Fire Dragon Hermit to have a lasting and firmer cultivation base and a greater influence..."

All the young disciples chested out and said almost the same auspicious words. At the same time, they were nervous and longing for being selected by Fire Dragon Hermit so as to be utterly different from then on...

Sitting on the golden chair, Zhang Tie could even sense the increasing heartbeats of those young men, the rising temperatures on their faces and the suddenly stimulated or constrictive blood vessels.

All the young men looked vigorous and keen. They must be the elites of each sect. As average clans were too weak, they could never be favored by Fire Dragon Hermit, those average clans and

their masters wouldn't attend this opening ceremony at all.

At this moment, major clans and sects had already been faintly competitive with each other. The manifestation of their junior elites was like a parade in front of Fire Dragon Hermit.

Those junior disciples contained male and female. Most of them were below 40 years old. As for commoners, they were not young anymore at their 40s; however, in the world of cultivators, as cultivators could have longer lives than commoners, it was normal for them to reach LV 9 at their 40s. It could be said that they had just entered the official road of cultivation at this age.

In knights' world, besides freaks like Zhang Tie, those who could promote to an earth knight before 100 years old definitely had tiptop talents. In front of earth knights, these cultivators at their 40s were like children in the kindergartens in the eyes of professors in universities. The sharp gap between them was insurmountable.

Only a few of them were above 40 years old, 1/5 of them were between 30-40 years old. Most of the junior elites were at their 20s or 30s, who were almost as old as Zhang Tie. These guys accounted most of the disciples in each clan and sect; the rest 1/5 of them aged between 10 to 20...

These people entered the stage nervously with their flickering eyes, some of them looked straight into Zhang Tie's eyes while pretending to be calm; some of them dared not even look at Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie recalled the period of the last semester in Blackhot City when he was going to face his life choice. During that period, Zhang Tie's situation was very similar to that of these junior cultivators. Being muddled, they were waiting for the judgments of their destinies in an intense and exciting way. Although these people in front of him were much nobler than Zhang Tie when he was in Blackhot City, they might share the same mood with Zhang Tie in that period.



The order of junior disciples of clans was according to the order of the seats of the elders and masters of clans and sects which was very considerate. It was basically arranged according to the overall strength and influence of them. Those junior disciples with greater overall strength and influence could come to Zhang Tie's front earlier. All those at present understood it...

Of course, the first group came from Zhu Clan with the provincial governor of Yanzhou Province...

Zhu Dabiao was the first member of Zhu Clan whom Zhang Tie was familiar with. What was more interesting, perhaps the elders of Zhu Clan wanted Zhu Dabiao to experience such a magnificent occasion and meet Fire Dragon Hermit, Zhu Dabiao was also in the group of junior cultivators of Zhu Clan.

However, Zhu Dabiao looked pretty gentle in the uniformed costumes that were specially designed for the junior cultivators of Zhu Clan. His current look had nothing to do with the look of a playboy when he was in Youzhou City, Yanghe Prefecture. Only Zhang Tie who was familiar with him could discover that this guy was peeping at the beautiful young female disciples of the other clans.

Zhu Dabiao was not eye-catching among the junior disciples of Zhu Clan. Zhu elders might know that Zhu Dabiao was just an average person; therefore, they arranged for him to stand on one side of the team of junior cultivators of Zhu Clan. By contrast, those members in the middle of the team were much better than Zhu Dabiao given their looks and battle strength.

Seeing Zhang Tie throwing a casual glance at him, Zhu Dabiao felt being hit by an overwhelming strength. It felt even more powerful than that of his grandpa. All of a sudden, Zhu Dabiao was scared too much that his heart pounded. At the same time, his face turned faintly pale. He dared not to see Zhang Tie anymore.

'Haha, what a hilarious guy!' Zhang Tie laughed inside. However,

he immediately thought up making a parody.

Zhang Tie then sent two drops of golden cinnabar flying onto the foreheads of a handsome and stable 30-year old guy in the middle of the team and Zhu Dabiao on the end of the team respectively.

The two people felt a golden light flashing in front of their eyes before feeling a bit cold on their foreheads. The disciple in the middle of the team felt like having a dream. He felt like being prestigious in a split second. Being overjoyed, under the admirable and jealous gazes of the other disciples of the same clan, he hurriedly strode a few steps forward and knelt down before kowtowing towards Zhang Tie 9 times, causing "bang, bang, bang, bang..." However, it seemed that Zhu Dabiao didn't even know what happened or he still didn't believe in it. He only felt that the other members of the team were watching him with weird looks in a split second...

"Douchebag, Zhu Dabiao, kneel down and kowtow in front of your master. What're you looking at? Are you waiting for my kick..." Zhu Elder's anxious voice drifted into Zhu Dabiao's ears. Zhu Dabiao immediately quivered all over like being poured cold water on his body. After being clear-minded, he hurriedly knelt down and kowtowed 10 times towards Zhang Tie. After doing that, he still couldn't accept the fact, 'Ahh, why it's me? why it's me? Is it because that I didn't deflower the little virgin girl in Fragrancereading Building who was transported from Goldenrock Subcontinent and bought her and set her free of good intent a few days ago?'

'Fire Dragon Hermit's disciple? F\*ck...I'm rich now. I will see who dare say that I'm useless at home from today on...'

Zhu Dabiao became wild with joy inside as he felt that he was so lucky today.

Watching Zhu Yuanxing standing up after serving tea to Fire Dragon Hermit, before a Wang disciple gave him the teacup, Zhu

Dabiao had hurriedly moved there by knees...

At the sight of this scene, the Zhu elders closed their eyes painfully. Even though kneeling down, kowtowing and serving tea to Fire Dragon Hermit, Zhu Yuanxing, the other disciple of Zhu Clan being selected behaved seriously of dignified bearing; when it came to Zhu Dabiao, Zhu elder felt like watching a dog pushing against Fire Dragon Hermit while sticking his tongue out.

Thankfully, Zhu Dabiao was acknowledging Fire Dragon Hermit as a master, who didn't care too much about etiquette; therefore, Zhu Dabiao's performance was not too embarrassing and even made Zhu elder a bit reassured. What made Zhu elder depressed was that he didn't know why Fire Dragon Hermit selected Zhu Dabiao the douchebag, 'Is that one's destiny?'

When Zhu Dabiao served tea to Fire Dragon Hermit, he silently raised his head and threw a glance at Zhang Tie. Unimaginably, he found that Zhang Tie was gazing at him at the same time. Zhu Dabiao became so scared that he almost spilled the tea water of the teacup. However, when he quivered his hand, Fire Dragon Hermit casually took the teacup and drank it rapidly in case of making him embarrassed.

After picking him up from the ground, Zhu Dabiao felt that Fire Dragon Hermit was watching him with a bit strange look. However, he didn't think too much about that, he just felt muddle-headed.

After Zhu Clan, it was the turn of Qian Clan with the provincial governor of Tongzhou Province...

Although the overall strength of Qian Clan was a bit weaker than that of Huaiyuan Palace, they rooted in Tongzhou Province longer and had a greater influence in Tongzhou Province. Additionally, Tongzhou Province was more prosperous than Youzhou Province. Therefore, Qian Clan ranked 2nd, closely followed by Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace. It was reasonable. At least, each clan felt good.

Nobody would comment that Iron-Dragon Sect was snobbish.

Qian Clan's junior cultivators were almost as many as that of Zhu Clan. Actually, Qian Clan had more female junior cultivators than that of Zhu Clan; additionally, Qian Clan's female cultivators were the best in both looks and temperaments.

Zhang Tie selected two junior cultivators of Qian Clan too, namely, the tall and beautiful female in the middle of the team and the last but one youth with a common look.

Like the two people being selected in Zhu Clan's team, the two people being selected in Qian Clan's team were also excited; however, they still smoothly completed the ritual to formally acknowledge Fire Dragon Hermit as their master.

"Master, it seems that the female disciple of Qian Clan is well prepared. When she's formally acknowledging you as her master, she's thinking about whether she could warm up bed for you!"

Bai Suxian ridiculed Zhang Tie in a secret way. Zhang Tie threw a glance at Bai Suxian who was sitting still in the distance and found that Bai Suxian revealed a big smile.

"Cut the crap; otherwise, I will beat your butt on the bed!"

"Master, come on; this humble slave can't wait for that. How about calling this female disciple together? Master could cultivate together with this female apprentice. In this humble slave's eyes, this female apprentice is still a virgin. Are you interested in that? Qian Clan must be longing for that!"

'What a spirit!'

...

After Qian Clan, it was the turn of Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace. Zhang Clan received two golden invitation letters; Huaiyuan Palace and Zhang Yang received one respectively. Therefore, according to the etiquette, Zhang Clan would congratulate Fire Dragon Hermit in two teams.

The first team was from Huaiyuan Palace. Zhang Tie threw a glance at these junior apprentices of Zhang Clan and selected two of them.

The second team only contained two people, namely his two nephews, Zhang Chengxu and Zhang Chengze.

Compared to the earlier teams which always contained dozens of people, Zhang Chengxu and Zhang Chengze were the youngest and most eye-catching ones.

"The branch in Jinwu City of Huaiyuan Palace wishes Fire Dragon Hermit to run immortal chakras forever and have a firm sect forever..."

Zhang Chengxu and Zhang Chengze then bowed towards Zhang Tie gracefully. Although they were a bit younger than Zhang Cheng'an, their eldest brother, they were already 12 years old. Zhang Tie could faintly see his elder brother's look from their faces.

Of course, the two juniors didn't know that Fire Dragon Hermit was their uncle.

Zhang Tie sighed with emotions inside. Closely after that, he sent two drops of golden cinnabar flying onto the foreheads of the two people.

Watching Zhang Tie selecting another two disciples of Huaiyuan Palace, all the others at present sighed inside, 'What? How could Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace have such a good luck? Fire Dragon Hermit only enrolled two from Zhu Clan and Qian Clan respectively; however, he enrolled 4 from Huaiyuan Palace. It seems that Fire Dragon Hermit favors Huaiyuan Palace very much.'

Everybody was sighing with emotion inside when they were thinking about the reason why Fire Dragon Hermit favored Huaiyuan Palace so much. Because Xuantian City was in Youzhou Province, Fire Dragon Hermit especially cared about Zhang Clan;

because of the all-purpose medicament and Jinwu Business Group in Jinwu City that attracted Fire Dragon Hermit's eyes; because the two kids had an uncle called Zhang Tie whose reputation was famous among humans and was going to recover his freedom? or all the reason above...

Zhang Tie didn't know what they were thinking about; however, all the others at present thought that they had got the reason.

After Zhang Chengxu and Zhang Chengze, it was the turn of the juniors of Lu Clan from Spiritualmaple Prefecture. Zhang Tie selected two disciples from them too.

After Zhang Tie selected the disciples of Lu Clan, those in the auditorium figured out something, namely, Zhang Tie didn't only select those in the middle of the teams; he would also select those on the end of the teams who didn't look outstanding. Additionally, besides Zhang Clan, Fire Dragon Hermit would also pay special attention to those clans with earth knights. He would select one excellent disciple and an average one from each clan. Those in the auditorium didn't know why would Fire Dragon Hermit adopt this mode.

All the elders and knights in the auditorium exchanged a glance with each other as they started to consider about the reason...

In the later, it was the turn of disciples of the major clans in Tongzhou Province and Yanzhou Province who had earth knights. When they entered the stage, Zhang Tie treated them equally by selecting 2 disciples from each major clan, one excellent, the other average.

Nobody knew why Zhang Tie selected the average ones. Actually, Zhang Tie's thought was very simple, namely sparing a chance to those who looked average.

When Zhang Tie was young, he was also an average person. Therefore, he knew that those average ones cultivated very hard.

After selecting apprentices from those major clans with earth knights, Zhang Tie would start to select apprentices from those clans with black iron knights.

By contrast, he only selected one apprentice from each clan with black iron knights.

When everybody at present thought that they had figured out the rules of Fire Dragon Hermit, Zhang Tie selected 7 disciples from Wang Clan of Yushun Palace, Ning'an City under the shocked and unbelievable gazes of all the guests, which shocked their entire venue and the Xuantian City as a whole...

# Chapter 1065: Over One Hundred Apprentices

---

Today, Wang Clan of Yushun Palace, Ningnan City was unprecedentedly brilliant.

After providing free porridge in Ningnan City constantly for over 70 years, Wang Clan finally got a compensation.

Fire Dragon Hermit put in 2 dragons from each clan with earth knights and 1 dragon from each clan with black iron knights. Although Wang Clan had no knights, Fire Dragon Hermit put in 7 dragons from Wang Clan which shocked all the other clans.

What did this mean?

Fire Dragon Hermit only put in 8 dragons from the three clans with provincial governors of Yanzhou Province, Tongzhou Province and Youzhou Province in total, 2 of which were from the branch in Jinwu City of Zhang Clan, Huaiyuan Palace, which indicated that Fire Dragon Hermit favored Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace and that Lion of Youzhou Province who was well-known across Taixia Country. However, he put in 7 dragons from Wang Clan, which almost matched the total number of dragons being put in from the three clans with provincial governors. If the 2 dragons being put in from the branch of Jinwu City was not included, Wang Clan would even have one more dragon than the total number of dragons being put in by Fire Dragon Hermit from Zhu Clan, Qian Clan and Zhang Clan.

90 years ago, Wang Clan had a black iron knight who was the founder of Yushun Palace of Wang Clan. However, like how those clans with knights flourished and withered, over 70 years ago, that black iron knight of Wang Clan was killed in the Earth-elements Realm. From then on, the potential momentum of development of Wang Clan stopped abruptly. Although Wang Clan didn't fully decline, they just safeguarded the undertaking of their ancestor.



After Wang Clan's ancestor died in the Earth-elements Realm, Wang Clan stuck to the ideology that "a family which always do good would have a good luck for sure" and started to do good by providing free porridge and building bridges and paving roads. They had been doing that for over 70 years ceaselessly.

Today, Wang Clan finally received their compensation.

Watching 7 golden and red light flying off Fire Dragon Hermit's golden brush and falling on the foreheads of the 7 junior disciples of Wang Clan, Wang Chongde the master of Wang Clan and some Wang elders quivered all over with tears in their eye sockets. Wang Clan's rejuvenation was hopeful. As long as one of the 7 juniors could promote to a knight, Wang Clan would be qualified to be a major clan and recover the glory of their past days.

Wang Clan had been waiting for this day for over 7 decades.

From today on, the entire Wang Clan of Yushun Palace, Ning'an City, would bind themselves to Zhang Tie's charity.

As the old saying went, 'A man dies for his bosom friend.' With such a reliance and glory, of course, a clan would not hesitate to stand on the side of Fire Dragon Hermit.

The omen of rejuvenation of Wang Clan had appeared; however, nobody was jealous about them. Because it was the result of Wang Clan after doing good for over 7 decades. Those who knew the reason could only admire and sigh with emotion about the good luck of Wang Clan.

If the other clan could be as persistent as Wang Clan and be known by Fire Dragon Hermit within Fire Dragon Bounty Territory by accident, the other clan might also enjoy such a special treatment; however, there was not such a clan anymore; therefore, the others could only accept the fact.

People in Taixia Country didn't hate rich men or officials; they just hated those who were rich yet cruel and those tight-fisted

officials. Those who were both righteous and benevolent would never be hated by commoners no matter how magnificent their clans were. Few people would give a false account of the true facts.

Those who carried tails were all in tales.

After Wang Clan had 7 dragons being put in, the others immediately congratulated Wang Clan to be the biggest winner in the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect.

After the Immortal Fist Position Sect's master was beaten in the fight and left, Wang Clan became a rising star. The up and down made this opening ceremony special and brought the guests at present more topics and thoughts.

It might be a God's will.

Zhang Tie selected 4 males and 3 females. The eldest one among the 7 lucky dogs was over 30 years old, the youngest one among them was only 16 years old. Their levels varied from LV 4 to LV 8.

Zhang Tie didn't care what the others would think about. After enrolling the 7 disciples of Wang Clan, he continued to put in dragons.

One person from Lu Clan, Dashang City, Gaoping Prefecture of Yanzhou Province was selected.

After that, Zhang Tie respectively put in one dragon from Fang Clan of Qinghe City, Chen Clan of Muqing Palace, Langyun City, the four sons of Li Tao, the boss of Zhongpin Business Group of Dongyang City, Sun Clan of Xuantian City and Gu Clan of Snowpine City.

The masters and elders of these later clans were all in the auditorium. Because of their relatively inferior positions, their seats were close to the end. When they found that their own disciples were put in dragon by Zhang Tie, they were all very excited.

Although the other clans only had one disciple being put in the

dragon, it was already a great treatment that each knight's clan could enjoy. Such a treatment had already satisfied these clans. They all determined to fulfill the task assigned by Fire Dragon Hermit well and strive for a better performance in front of Fire Dragon Hermit so as to pave a smooth way for their own disciples in Iron-Dragon Sect.

After entering Iron-Dragon Sect, besides efforts and talents, these disciples from all clans also required their own clans' assistance.

Daddy was the key, but in different skills and patterns.

Especially in Taixia Country, everybody was clear about benefit-based relationships between major clans and sects. When their own disciples entered Iron-Dragon Sect and the other small-and medium-sized sects, they would send gifts to the master out of their sincerity. There was no fixed regulation on the value of the gifts. They should send gifts according to their own abilities. However, they all had a clear idea about that.

Although there was a much-told tale that the master of a sect might like that even if disciples and parents from poor families gifted him some tea leaves that they picked from the mountain; however, commoners had better not play that trick. If everybody could fabricate a "much-told tale", the "much-told tale" would be valueless. Even a rural teacher would receive a gift of dried flesh; not to mention an earth knight of a sect.

...

Zhang Tie enrolled 121 apprentices in total, 82 of them were male, 39 of them were female. Generally, a sect should contain more males than females.

After the 121 formally acknowledged their master, they all stood behind Zhang Tie according to the order that they were put in dragons while trying to recover their composure. As Liu Xing was Fire Dragon Hermit's first apprentice, he stood closely behind

Zhang Tie as the most special one among all the apprentices of Zhang Tie.

Previously, there was nobody behind Zhang Tie. Now, after so many apprentices stood behind him and Zhang Tie sat on the golden chair in such a generous way, the Iron-Dragon Sect immediately became majestic and imposing.

'From today on, will the destiny of the 121 people behind me be connected to that of myself?'

As it was his first time to enroll apprentices, Zhang Tie also felt a bit weird. Actually, some apprentices were even elder than Zhang Tie himself.

Whatever, after they formally acknowledged Zhang Tie as their master, the identities of both parties were already fixed. From then on, they would become Zhang Tie's apprentices while their life and future would be determined by Zhang Tie. From today on, if they disobeyed the regulations of Iron-Dragon Sect or irritated Zhang Tie, even if they were killed by Zhang Tie, the of Iron-Dragon Sect or the officials of Taixia Country didn't have a right to say no.

It was the No. 1 taboo in Taixia Country to cheat one's master or slander one's ancestors. Such people would not even be forgiven by God. After joining one sect, to a certain extent, it was equal to sign an unalterable life or death contract with their sect and their master.

Zhang Tie knew that the clans of the 121 apprentices behind him indicated a great set of relationships that he cast in Northeast Military Region. It might take commoners a few generations to build such a great set of relationships. However, it was very easy for an earth knight to do it. They only needed to establish a sect and enroll apprentices. Only after one day, the nickname of Fire Dragon Hermit had become different for these clans. This interpreted the dignity and ability of an earth knight.

'From today on, if I really want to root in Taixia Country, the

relationship between me and these apprentices might become a bit utilitarian; however, as they've kowtowed and served tea to me, I should be responsible for these people more or less.'

Zhang Tie sighed with emotion inside as he put the golden brush into the tray carried by a virgin boy on his side.

Everybody was watching Zhang Tie and waiting for him to say something; Zhang Tie also read a lot of information from the eyes of the surrounding people.

Bai Suxian's eyes flickered with full pleasure, excitement and a bit pride.

The old guy on Bai Suxian's side looked glassy-eyed as usual who made Zhang Tie a bit awkward. Strangely, Zhang Tie could see through the overall strength of all the people at present except for that old guy on Bai Suxian's side. Zhang Tie felt that nobody at present could defeat this old guy except for Zhang Tie himself.

'Whatever, I will ask Bai Suxian about the background of this old guy after the opening ceremony.'

After being silent for a few seconds, Zhang Tie uttered, "Liu Xing!"

"I'm here, Master!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's call, Liu Xing responded respectfully at once.

"From today on, the 120 people would be your junior fellow brothers and sisters. As my first apprentice, you can manage all the 120 people at your will. With me on your back, you should pay special attention to the seniority of the members in Iron-Dragon Sect!" Zhang Tie said in a muffled voice.

After hearing that, many people's hearts raced; however, Liu Xing became reassured. Because Liu Xing's clan was very average; neither did he have a great natural gift. He was the one with the least background among all the apprentices of Zhang Tie. Just

now, Liu Xing was still concerned that he might not be able to control his junior apprentice brothers and sisters who came from knights' clans. After hearing Zhang Tie's order, Liu Xing became reassured. However, Liu Xing still gritted his teeth inside after getting the expectation of Zhang Tie, 'No matter what, I have to grasp this opportunity and will never lose face for my master...'

...

When Zhang Tie finished putting in dragons, another airboat arrived at Xuantian City. At the sight of this airboat, everybody became faintly stunned as it was from the Supreme Court of Taixia Country given its symbol...

After Zhang Tie finished his talk with Liu Xing, two people had flown off that airboat towards Xuantian Courtyard...

# Chapter 1066: Towards Zhongzhou Province

---

The airboat of Supreme Court was blue all over. It was about 200 m in length. Additionally, there were symbols of the Supreme Court on both sides of the airboat.

Two people got off the airboat, one of them was Gao Tianqi whom Zhang Tie had met before.

When Zhang Tie saw Gao Tianqi for the first time, he was staying with Feng Cangwu. Later on, Zhang Tie saw him in White Tiger Platform when Zhang Tie knew that this youth was a chief of bodyguards of Commander Cheng Honglie of Northeast Military Region. He was the trusted subordinate of Commander Cheng who had a bright future.

The other one who flew off the airboat together with Gao Tianqi was an earth knight given his qi. He was elder than Gao Tianqi. In an official uniform of the supreme court in Taixia Country and a standard Xiezhi crown, he had slim eyebrows and eyes and looked solemn.

Watching Gao Tianqi and an earth knight of supreme court flying towards him, Zhang Tie almost mistook that they were here to arrest him. However, after thinking about it for a short while, he forgot about this thought.

'Are you kidding me? Besides my elder brother, nobody else knows my real identity. Additionally, even if the Supreme Court of Taixia Country was going to arrest me, they would never do that at this moment. As the bloody figure event has just broken out, the Supreme Court of Taixia Country doesn't even have time to care about me at all. I think they are here to cancel my order for arrest.'

Many people on the ground identified Gao Tianqi. Although Gao Tianqi was just a black iron knight, he enjoyed a high position in Northeast Military Region as the chief of the bodyguards of Commander Cheng. Additionally, it seemed that Gao Tianqi was

leading the way for that guy from the Supreme Court of Taixia Country.

Out of etiquette, almost everyone at present had stood up, including Zhang Tie.

"Is Huaiyuan Palace's elder here?"

Gao Tianqi's voice arrived ahead of his body.

'They didn't come here for me on this occasion?'

Zhang Tie and everybody else at present became curious as they wanted to see what the two people were going to do.

Elder Muyu became a bit stunned; however, he made a response immediately.

Elder Muyu cupped his hand as he looked up and said, "I'm Elder Muyu from Huaiyuan Palace!"

Gao Tianqi and the earth knight then landed on the ground.

"Ahh, Elder Muyu, long time no see!" Gao Tianqi hailed Elder Muyu with a smile before nodding towards all the others at present. Closely after that, he watched Zhang Tie's bald head for a second before cupping his hands towards Zhang Tie respectfully, "This one must be Fire Dragon Hermit!"

"Yes, it's me!" Zhang Tie touched his bald head.

"Fire Dragon Hermit, please forgive me. This one is Lord Cao from the Supreme Court of Taixia Country. Previously, Lord Cao wanted to release a news to Huaiyuan Palace in Youzhou City; I know that there must be an elder of Huaiyuan Palace here; plus so many friends from different provinces, it might be better for Lord Cao to declare the news here. Additionally, we were near here; therefore, I brought Lord Cao here!"

"Hahahah...go ahead, go ahead!" Zhang Tie burst out into laughter generously, "Now that you two could come, you've already brought me glory, just let me know if you need any help!"



"We don't need your help, but Lord Cao wants to say something to Elder Muyu of Huaiyuan Palace in the public!"

"Please!"

When Zhang Tie talked with Gao Tianqi, Lord Cao from Supreme Court of Taixia Country had already looked over Zhang Tie carefully before catching sight of the 18 secret pearls in the distance. Lord Cao blinked his eyes as he felt that he was dazzled. After confirming that they were secret pearls, Lord Cao became amazed. Zhang Tie knew that Lord Cao had already identified the background of these secret pearls.

"Go ahead, Lord Cao!" Elder Muyu cupped his hands towards Lord Cao from the Supreme Court in neither kind nor cold attitude. Since Zhang Tie was framed and escaped away, the relationship between Huaiyuan Palace and Supreme Court had been neither close nor cold like how Elder Muyu behaved now.

Lord Cao looked around before saying loudly on purpose so that everyone at present could hear it, "I'm here to notice the Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace on behalf of the Supreme Court of Taixia Country that Elder Zhang Mushen, namely Zhang Tie's order for arrest has been officially canceled. From today on, Zhang Tie will gain his freedom and not be wanted anymore across Taixia Country. The Supreme Court of Taixia Country will investigate the tragedy in Fuhai City that happened 4 years ago from the scratch!" As Lord Cao declared, a document appeared in his hand. He then passed it to Elder Muyu.

In the distance, Zhang Tie could only see a red seal of the Supreme Court of Taixia Country on the document.

After taking that document and skimming over it, Elder Muyu's hands quivered. After hearing Lord Cao's declaration, Zhang Yang directly pushed into one side of Elder Mushen and read it too.

As Lord Cao didn't know Zhang Yang, when he saw Zhang Yang approaching him, he even slightly frowned. However, Gao Tianqi

knew Zhang Yang.

"This is Zhang Yang, Zhang Tie's elder brother, the boss of Jinwu Business Group!" Gao Tianqi told Lord Cao in a secret way. After hearing Gao Tianqi's explanation, Lord Cao relieved his frown. He knew that if not that Zhang family in Jinwu City received the news ahead of them, when the bloody sea became mature, the result would definitely be much worse than now.

Although the Zhongzhou Provincial Court suffered a great loss, the judicial agencies of Taixia Country had definitely made a great meritorious service this time.

Everybody at present could guess that the file that Lord Cao gave Elder Muyu was the official document about canceling off the order of arrest for Zhang Tie.

To declare this news on this occasion was definitely more effective than declaring it to Huaiyuan Palace in Youzhou Province alone.

"Lord Cao, is my brother Zhang Tie free now?"

"He's free. Being entrusted by the chief justice of the Supreme Court, I'm especially here to notice Huaiyuan Palace about this news. The chief justice of the Supreme Court felt pretty pitiful about what Zhang Tie has experienced these years. This time, the Supreme Court is going to restart the investigation of the tragedy in Fuhai City. The chief justice said if Zhang Tie likes, he could continue to serve as an official in a judicial agency when he comes back. He could even participate in the investigation of the tragedy in Fuhai City himself!"

When Zhang Tie served as the chief justice of Youzhou Province, he had inflicted a great loss to the Heavens Reaching Church and spread his reputation "Lion of Youzhou Province" over the entire judicial system in Taixia Country. Nobody could imagine that the Supreme Court of Taixia Country could cancel off Zhang Tie's order for arrest and would even entrust him with an important

post once again.

In a split second, a well-known human criminal became innocent and might be entrusted as an awe-struck important post in the judicial system of Taixia Country, 'Is this the plot of the chief justice of the Supreme Court or a compensation or both of them?'

Those at present were considering the attitude of the Supreme Court of Taixia Country carefully. Zhang Tie felt complex inside.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that his stigma and crime could be cleared only after returning to Jinwu City and identifying the plot of Heavens Reaching Church, 'I could finally be free in the public in my original look.'

'Four years ago, I unconsciously became a widely wanted criminal across Taixia Country.'

'Four years later, the stigma and suspicion of being a wanted criminal were cleared unconsciously.'

'That's my destiny.'

After experiencing all this, Zhang Tie felt that his destiny was played by an invisible hand like how a clown performed acrobatics of throwing bottles. His life contrail rolled many circles in the sky in a very risky way before coming back to its original point. It seemed that nothing had changed at all.

'But really?'

Watching these knights from major clans who came here to celebrate the opening ceremony of Fire Dragon Hermit and Bai Suxian who was watching him with her big watery eyes, Zhang Tie could only swear many times inside, 'f\*ck!'

At this time, Zhang Tie became reassured and depressed. With this complex mood, Zhang Tie could neither laugh nor cry.

No matter what, both Elder Muyu and Zhang Yang were satisfied with this result. After hearing this news, no matter what they

thought inside, they also started to congratulate Elder Muyu and Zhang Yang apparently.

Zhang Yang threw a glance at Zhang Tie stealthily and found that Zhang Tie was watching him. They soon moved their eyes away. However, due to the privity between the two brothers, they had exchanged much information silently.

Zhang Yang, "Are you going back?"

Zhang Tie, "Do you think I can come back now?"

Zhang Yang, "What to do then?"

Zhang Tie, "I will finish the affairs of Iron-Dragon Sect first. If I go back now, it might not be good."

"Fire Dragon Hermit, are those balls secret pearls?" Gao Tianqi asked Zhang Tie with an uncertain tone which drew Zhang Tie back to the helpless yet hilarious reality.

"Hahaha, yup. I've got some delicacies from Earth-elements Realm. I use them to entertain the guests today!"

'Entertain?' Even though Gao Tianqi had seen a lot of rarities on the side of Commander Cheng, it was his first time to hear someone using so many secret pearls to "entertain the guests"...

"May I have your attention, please? Good things should be in pairs. Besides my opening ceremony, an elder of Huaiyuan Palace also became innocent. As we're happy now, let's try our luck. If you have a good luck, you might get a silver secret item. I'm afraid that many people can't wait for that..."

Zhang Tie said as he applauded twice. Closely after that, Wang disciples carried out a special tool for hitting golden eggs...

After that, Zhang Tie made a brief introduction about the game rule to enliven the atmosphere in the opening ceremony...

Of course, the game rule was pretty fair for the other knights. As Zhang Tie was a supreme dominator and had lotus-flower eyes, he

especially prepared the secret pearl which contained a silver secret item for Huaiyuan Palace. Nobody else could take it away. Therefore, it was just an entertainment for the others.

...

Watching the Zhu Elder entering the stage in high spirits to get numbers from a fully enclosed metal cylinder, Zhang Tie waved his hand and fetched Liu Xing.

"Notice the outside. Iron-Dragon Sect will enroll 3,000 exterior door disciples. You're responsible for accomplishing it in 3 days."

"3 days?"

"Yes, because I will take you to Zhongzhou Province to have a practice 3 days later..."

...

The day when the Iron-Dragon Sect opened made many people unforgettable...

Compared to the first day in Xuantian Courtyard, the following 3 days were more boisterous across Xuantian City.

As for many ambitious young men, if they could become exterior door disciples of Iron-Dragon Sect, they would also have a chance to become the internal door disciples even elite disciples and disciples being directly taught by Fire Dragon Hermit if they were excellent enough. It depended on their destinies...

Zhang Tie kept dealing with many affairs and meeting many people in Xuantian City for consecutive 3 days without a sleep. After confirming the local representatives of the 10 cities in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory, Fire Dragon Bounty Territory was almost on the right track. After that, Zhang Tie took the 121 inside door disciples to Zhongzhou Province by airboat...

At this moment, Zhongzhou Province, one of the nine immortal provinces in Taixia Country was the most boisterous place in

Taixia Country as many airships, airboats and bounty criminal hunters were gathering there...

# Chapter 1067: A Knot

---

After one night's stand with Bai Suxian, Zhang Tie only had less than 3 hours' deep sleep and adjustment before waking up.

It was in a super deluxe bedroom of the airboat, which covered over 200 square meters. The top of the bedroom was a flexible crystal dome. After opening the crystal dome, they could see the stars over the sky. Additionally, there were a lot of bamboo palms, some special flowers and grasses inside the bedroom. Because of the existence of these plants, the air in the bedroom always smelt refreshing and a bit fragrant even after Zhang Tie's one night's stand with Bai Suxian.

During the period when this airboat parked in Xuantian City, all the basic hardware facilities inside the airboat such as flowers and grass remained unchanged, except for those private belongings such as beddings which were changed at Zhang Tie's request. The red brilliant lacquer over the surface of the airboat was also changed to relatively low-key silver gray at Zhang Tie's request after the opening ceremony.

He won this airboat from Taixia Fantasy Sect through a bet. No matter what, Taiyi Fantasy Sect was one of the top seven sects which had a profound background. If he showed it off everywhere, it was equal to slapping Taiyi Fantasy Sect on their face. After fighting Nangong Sheng, Zhang Tie realized that he should be low-key; therefore, he changed the color of his airboat.

No matter how great was an earth knight, if he became a thorn in the flesh of Taiyi Fantasy Sect which was a top sect in Taixia Country, this knight would not stay in Taixia Country anymore.

He had changed the color for his airboat and left some leeway for Immortal Fist Position Sect. After the two events, Zhang Tie believed that Feng Yexiao, the grand elder of Taiyi Fantasy Sect would not bring trouble to him anymore as long as he didn't have a

conflict of interest with Taiyi Fantasy Sect.

Although gangsters and ruffians might cling to bring him trouble until death, top sects like Taiyi Fantasy Sect were keen on face-saving, pattern and tolerance. If they really annoyed Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie would travel across Taixia Country by this airboat and open it to commoners at the cost of only one copper coin or renovate it into an air nightclub or brothel such as Flowers Pavilion. By then, Taiyi Fantasy Sect would not bear it for sure.

Bai Suxian was sleeping pretty well on the bed in a sluggish way. From one side, her curve was pretty thrilling. After waking up, Zhang Tie didn't get up immediately; instead, he just watched Bai Suxian silently on the bed.

'I wonder what this woman would feel if she knew that I'm Zhang Tie.'

A whim occurred to Zhang Tie's mind. Even though Zhang Tie himself was not sure whether she could accept his original identity or not. After living with her these days, Zhang Tie knew that Bai Suxian really loved him although her demeanor was a bit crazy sometimes.

This time, Bai Suxian came to Fire Dragon Bounty Territory with an airboat, an earth knight and over 2,000 people, which included female and male servants, bodyguards and variously skilled craftsmen. These skilled craftsmen included over 30 chefs and pastry cooks who could make all the food that you named, tailors, instruments craftsmen, gardeners, cordwainers, shoemakers, carpenters, accountants, doctors, dare-to-die men, stewards...all of them were here to serve Bai Suxian.

At the sight of so many people, Zhang Tie was scared too much. He then knew how rich was Lord Guangnan's Mansion.

The over 2,000 people who followed Bai Suxian here were not commoners in Taixia Country; instead, they were servants whom Lord Guangnan's Mansion trained since they were young.



Honestly, they were just slaves of Bai Suxian. Nominally, they were not slaves, but family servants. Actually, family servants would have more personal rights than slaves.

These family servants would be Bai Suxian's dowry in the future. That was to say, when Bai Suxian got married, these servants would also follow Bai Suxian over there to serve her.

Actually, Lord Guangnan's Mansion prepared 150,000 people like these for Bai Suxian, which contained an elite army of 100,000 bodyguards.

Followed by 150,000 people, an airboat and an earth knight who called himself "this old slave", Bai Suxian was definitely going to be a respectable figure instead of being a wife.

If not being afraid that Zhang Tie disliked that, Bai Suxian would definitely bring more than 2,000 followers this time.

After Bai Suxian returned to Lord Guangnan's Mansion, she only had a chance to see her grandma for the last time. After seeing Bai Suxian for the last time, the grand madam of Lord Guangnan's Mansion passed away.

After observing mourning for her grandma for 49 days, when Bai Suxian received Zhang Tie's golden invitation letter, she arrived here followed by that earth knight. The "old slave" was left by her grandma who was responsible for protecting her.

According to Bai Suxian, because of the death of her grandma, her dad was forbidden to marry new concubines within at least 3 years. Therefore, Fang Xinyi who wanted to be her step-mother could only wait for 3 years. Additionally, Bai Suxian didn't want to stay in Lord Guangnan's Mansion anymore; therefore, she just came here to find Cui Li with only a small part of her dowry.

When Zhang Tie saw her followers, he was not angry. These days, Bai Suxian was very spirited; especially after she boarded the airboat and heard that Zhang Tie's apprentices call her master's

wife privately, Bai Suxian was happier.

Zhang Tie didn't know whether Bai Suxian was trying to test the relationship between him and her with the over 2,000 followers. Even Zhang Tie wondered about the current identity of Bai Suxian, 'lover, friend, comrade-in-arms, paramour or fiancée?'

If it was just an average one night's stand, Zhang Tie didn't need to think too much about that. Now that Bai Suxian had fallen in love with him, of course, Zhang Tie had to treat this marriage seriously. No matter what, Zhang Tie didn't want to hurt a woman who treated him sincerely. No matter what the woman's identity was, a man who hurt his woman's heart was definitely a bad man. Zhang Tie didn't want to be that bad man.

'But...will I really become Lord Guangnan's son-in-law?'

'In which identity, Cui Li or Zhang Tie? If she knows that my current identity and looks are all fake, will this woman accept it and not want to kill me around the world with so many knight-level powerhouses from Lord Guangnan's Mansion?'

Whenever Zhang Tie thought about this, he would feel muddle-headed faintly.

Watching Bai Suxian in front of him, Zhang Tie had to consider about this question seriously.

After being silently gazed for a few minutes, Bai Suxian might have sensed it as he opened her eyes and revealed an indolent smile towards Zhang Tie.

"Morning."

"Hmm!" Bai Suxian lightly replied with her nose before pushing herself into Zhang Tie's cradle like a Persian cat. She hugged Zhang Tie as she pasted her face onto Zhang Tie's chest with a big satisfied smile, "Why did you look at me in that way just now? Were you thinking about a bad idea?"

"Hoho, what bad idea would I have?" Zhang Tie replied with a

smile as he patted Bai Suxian's plump butt in the quilt.

"Who knows. All men behave like that. When you eat the rice in the bowl, you will look at the dish in the pot; when you bite one in the mouth, you nip another by chopsticks; you can't even wait to press one by your butt and hook one by your leg.." Bai Suxian pouted her mouth as she gave a light bite onto Zhang Tie's chest as she continued, "Take my dad as an instance, he could find all sorts of women in the mansion; however, he preferred that foxtrel Fang Xinyi. He didn't even consider about my face in the mansion if he married that woman..."

Zhang Tie didn't want to involve in the affairs in Lord Guangnan's Mansion; neither would he comment about that. After hearing Bai Suxian's words, he just replied with a smile. However, Bai Suxian suddenly thought about something as she made a roll and pressed onto Zhang Tie's body. Closely after that, she started to whisper, "Do you like that woman called Guo Hongyi?"

"Cut the crap! Why?"

"Humph. If you don't like her, how could she get a secret pearl in Xuantian Courtyard? Have you noticed how she looked at you after getting that secret pearl? If not this humble slave was on your side, that woman might have found an excuse to stay in Xuantian Courtyard!"

"Shut up, it depended on her good luck. With so many eyes in the surroundings, how could I promise that she could get that secret pearl?"

Honestly, in the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect, besides that secret pearl of Huaiyuan Palace which was fixed by Zhang Tie in advance, all the other secret pearls were distributed according to the rules without anyone's disturbance. In this situation, Guo Hongyi still got a secret pearl by good luck. As Guo Hongyi was pretty happy at that moment, she just revealed a big smile towards Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie didn't think too much about that.

"Whatever, I think that you could have a method to have her get that secret pearl. Those rules might be available to other knights; however, you must have a method to determine who to own those secret pearls!"

Zhang Tie's heart raced. Sometimes, this woman's sixth sense and intuition were terrifying when it was involved with sex.

"If I liked her, why would I choose such a tortuous method? Why not directly gift her a silver secret item?"

"You're right!" Bai Suxian agreed. After thinking about the temperament of this man whom she was hugging, she was sure that this man would not be so stingy.

"I was thinking, what would you do if you found out that I cheated you one day?" Zhang Tie asked in a glassy-eyed look.

# Chapter 1068: A Burning Village

---

"Are you a demon?"

"No!"

"Are you a member of Three-eye Association?"

"No!"

"Then no problem. What else could you cheat me with? Master, you saved this humble slave's life. You can take away whatever you want from me!"

Zhang Tie had not imagined that Bai Suxian could reply him in this way.

As Bai Suxian replied, she bit Zhang Tie's ear and started to twist her naked body once again.

"I mean...if...if one day you find another identity of me, what will you do?" Zhang Tie pressed Bai Suxian down in case she moved.

"As long as master doesn't dislike me and doesn't chase me away; as long as master keep this humble slave on your side to look after you. This humble slave will do whatever master wants..."

'Damn!' Watching Bai Suxian's enchanting slim eyes and blush, Zhang Tie knew that this question became effective, 'What I'm concerned about is nothing but sh\*t in Bai Suxian's eyes, not to mention that Zhang Tie is not a wanted criminal anymore; even though Bai Suxian knows that I'm Zhang Tie and could change my figure and look, based on her temperament, this woman would only feel it's more stimulative.'

'Given the identity of Bai Suxian, besides those who betrayed humans and Taixia Country as a whole would make her disgusting, this woman might really not care about the real identity of Zhang Tie at all.'

'Sometimes, if a woman falls in love with someone, she would be

more dedicated than the man.'

'Well, whatever. Perhaps, this woman will leave me after staying with me for a couple of years when she feels that I'm boring.'

Zhang Tie became silent. Bai Suxian put her hand into the quilt...

"Stop, it's going to break..."

"Master, it's still 1 hour left!"

...

When the atmosphere in the bedroom became increasingly ambiguous and the lipid in Zhang Tie's body rose sharply, a bell at the head of their bed rang loudly.

This bell would ring only in contingency. After this airboat left Xuantian City, this ring finally rang for the first time.

"Emergency!" When Zhang Tie heard this bell ring, he sprung up from the bed at once. Although he was naked, he strode towards a speaking trumpet which was connected to a brass pipe and picked up the phone.

This airboat was matched with a set of senior equipment. It contained the voice-transmitting pipes which were usually matched in airships. By contrast, the two terminal ends of voice-transmitting pipes on the airboat were evenly matched with a more advanced alchemist's device. Being similar to a mini loudspeaker, this alchemist's device could make sound clearer and stabler. The listener could easily hear it through the loudspeaker, which was similar to the effect of face-to-face talk.

"What's happening?"

"Master, there's a big fire accident in a village in the far. It doesn't look good!" Linghu Biao replied through the brass pipes, which indicated that he was on duty in the command module of the airboat at this moment. Although Linghu Biao always behaved in a noisy, gay and boisterous manner, he sounded very serious at

this moment.

"Where are we?"

"We're still in Mingzhou Province. But we will enter the border of Zhongzhou Province in 1 hour!"

Zhang Tie faintly frowned as he continued to ask, "How far are we from the burning village?"

"It's still over 150 miles away. We could arrive there in 10 minutes at the current speed of Iron-Dragon Airboat!"

This airboat was renamed Iron-Dragon by Zhang Tie.

"Wake up all the others. I will arrive at the command module soon!"

"Yes, sir!"

Zhang Tie turned around and threw a glance at Bai Suxian who was sitting up with a blush, "Let's go there together!"

'I will see who's destroying this grandma's good thing.' Bai Suxian thought as she gritted her teeth.

Bai Suxian pulled down a rope on the side of the bed. Twelve beautiful female servants immediately entered the bedroom with tidy clothes and cleansing wares one after another and started to serve them.

Zhang Tie had experienced this process in the Navyblue Castle for the first time. When Zhang Tie faced such a sexy scene for the first time, his face blushed and heart pounded. He almost couldn't bear it. As a result, he was a bit embarrassed at that time. By contrast, Zhang Tie was not a virgin now; even though he was naked and facing the 8 beautiful female servants on Bai Suxian's side, he still looked as calm as usual and was not afraid of being observed by them at all. However, the 8 beautiful female servants blushed when they saw Zhang Tie's sturdy, naked body. Even though they still couldn't stand to glance at Zhang Tie. Since they

were born, actually they had not served any man beside Bai Suxian.

...

As knights, they would finish putting on clothes and cleansing themselves as fast as possible in this emergency situation; especially when some people were serving them. Even though Bai Suxian only spent less than 7 minutes in finishing the whole process. Of course, if not in a hurry, Bai Suxian could also prolong this process to above 1 hour.

In a wholly new dress, Zhang Tie left the bedroom with Bai Suxian and soon arrived at the command module of the airboat.

Zhang Tie's disciples moved even a bit faster than Zhang Tie. Before Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian arrived at the command module, all the 121 inside door disciples of Zhang Tie had already been waiting for them inside the command module.

"Master, Peak Master Bai!"

Standing in a few rows, the inside door disciples of Iron-Dragon Sect hailed Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian at the same time. Only a few of them dared call Bai Suxian "master's wife" privately. In Iron-Dragon Sect, Zhang Tie only told his disciples that Bai Suxian was the master of a peak in Iron-Dragon Sect. After Iron-Dragon Sect was established in Yangui Mountain Range, Bai Suxian would occupy one of the 18 Xuantian peaks in Yangui Mountain Range and select some apprentices from Iron-Dragon Sect to instruct them.

Being silent, Zhang Tie directly came to the front of the ground optical imaging instrument in the command module and lowered his head.

It was the vast land underfoot. It didn't break now as the stars and moons were still hanging over the sky. It was pitch dark downside there. By contrast, the flames in the village became more



dazzling.

In front of that optical imaging instrument, Zhang Tie found that the village was on the riverside at the foot of a mountain. There was no big city within 100 square miles. There were fertile farmlands at the riverside. The village was tranquil and graceful. By contrast, the flames looked grimmer.

It was not a house that caught fire; instead, the greater part of the village caught fire. As the airboat moved forward, although the ground images would be blocked by clouds transiently, Zhang Tie could still see many corpses lying on the ground and commoners who were running and wailing in the fierce flames through the ground optical imaging instrument...

"Let's take a look downside there..." Zhang Tie told Bai Suxian.

Bai Suxian nodded with a solemn look.

"Master, do we need to do something?" Liu Xing asked.

"It's unidentified down side there. You'd better observe the surroundings in the sky and wait for my message..."

# Chapter 1069: Kill and Save

---

Heavy smokes were rushing into the sky from the tranquil village. After leaving the airboat, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian soon arrived at the destination after traveling dozens of miles.

In the sky, Zhang Tie's eyes faintly revealed a lotus-flower shaped halo and changed the halo several times silently before seeing everything in the village.

In the flames, Zhang Tie saw people running hurriedly in all directions with flashing sabers and swords and spraying blood.

It was a massacre. Some people were wailing; some were dying; some were resisting.

Over 40 people were making a massacre and setting fire across the village.

Those killers were in disordered clothes; however, they were very ferocious. What was more, Zhang Tie found that all of these killers were LV 9 fighters.

Zhang Tie understood it immediately that these people were bloody figures that escaped from Zhongzhou Province.

...

In the east of the village which was covered with raging flames, there was a plain grain-sunning ground near the foot of the mountain, a tough Hua man was waving his huge saber, the handle of which was carved with a ghost's head and leading over 20 young Hua people to fight over 10 bloody figures who were moving around the grain-sunning ground.

The tough man and the surrounding young men were all wounded. Over 30 corpses were lying around the grain-sunning ground, most of which were young men; only a few of them were split into two halves, which might belong to those bloody figures.

"Forming a battle formation. Stay on my side. Injured ones stay inside the battle formation and don't break out..." The tough man roared as he waved his huge saber and fought those bloody figures.

The tough man's bloody battle qi totem was rolling behind him like an exotic, fierce tiger. He kept chopping and moving as he constantly punched towards the bloody figures. His battle qi formed in the shape of a fist and flew towards those bloody figures within 10 m, which could protect those young men in his battle formation.

Among those young men in the battle formation, a couple of them also released battle qi totems; however, all of them were LV 6 black spiders.

Over 10 bloody figures were besieging them. Perhaps, this tough man had already killed some bloody figures; therefore, the rest bloody figures were scared of him. At this moment, those bloody figures were fighting these people on the grain-sunning ground like wolf packs. The tough man's off-hand strikes and huge saber were both powerful. Therefore, these bloody figures could only fight him in a flexible way.

Meanwhile, they radiated bloody eye lights and wailed like wild beasts while seeking for the chance to break the defense line of these people.

Hearing the cries and wails from inside the village, all the young men being besieged by the bloody figures knew what was happening in the distance.

However, they could only grit their teeth to stand it while bleeding and dropping tears.

All the partners who wanted to go back home to save their family members due to impulsion had become corpses around the grain-sunning ground.

The sudden catastrophe and brutal reality made these survivors

strong-willed. They could only resist the attack of the bloody figures at their full efforts.

In the blink of an eye, 5-6 bloody figures ran towards them from the flames in the distance while their mouths were covered with blood. Some of them were even holding slim and tender arms and shins of babies and gnawing them.

"You sons of bitches..." The tough man who was waving his huge saber was so furious that his eyes almost jumped out of his eye sockets.

However, he couldn't break out. Perhaps he could kill two more bloody figures; he might also break through the besiege of these LV 9 bloody figures; however, if he did that, all young men on his side would be killed in less than 1 minute.

Therefore, he had to stand it until the reinforcement arrived. Such raging flames were pretty eye-catching in the evening. Even though there wasn't any city in the surroundings, as long as an airship flew by, it could pass the message to the superiors of this territory; perhaps the reinforcement was already on their way...

The new bloody figures brought a greater stress to these people on the grain-sunning ground abruptly.

Although the bloody figures were still moving around these people; they launched more tentative attacks towards these people.

The more active the bloody figures were, the more dangerous these people on the grain-sunning ground were.

The bloody figures didn't speak; they just communicated in muffled voice or roars and watched these people on the grain-sunning ground with red eyes.

Nobody knew what these wild-beasts like bloody figures were thinking about.

In a split second, five bloody figures attacked the battle formation from 5 directions at the same time.

At the sight of this, the tough man roared and immediately punched 5 battle qi towards the 5 bloody figures respectively.

Pitifully, the LV 10 fighter didn't hit bloody figures with his battle qi; instead, he hit some shadows in the air.

As a result, the shadows were shattered into pieces by the tough man's battle qi, spraying bloody flesh in all directions.

The shadows were not bloody figures, but some young men's corpses that the other bloody figures had picked up from the ground.

The bloody figures were in a tacit cooperation and pretty cunning. When the tough man shattered the corpses into pieces by his punch-shaped battle qi, the five bloody figures who were approaching the battle formation from 5 directions suddenly retreated. At the same time, three bloody figures rushed towards the young men's battle formation from the other three directions respectively while exposing their fangs.

Additionally, 6 bloody figures rushed towards the tough man at the same time.

'It's too bad.' The tough man thought as his heart pounded.

"Let's fight these sons of bitches to death..." A young man in the battle formation shouted.

"Go die!" The tough man had also determined to fight those bloody figures at the cost of his life. He waved his huge saber and involved in three bloody figures who were rushing towards him with his saber aura. At the same time, he punched towards another bloody figure, sending him flying in the distance...

In this process, the tough man revealed his loopholes. The other two bloody figures seized the opportunity and immediately caused two grim wounds on the tough man's back and lower abdomen.

LV 10 fighter's battle qi strikes were not limitless. Additionally, a LV 10 fighter was also scared of the wheel war and besiege from LV

9 opponents.

When the tough man was injured, the battle formation collided with the three bloody figures. Two young men in the battle formation uttered a muffled sound and got injured at the same time. As a result, the battle formation was weakened a bit...

After seizing the opportunity, all the surrounding bloody figures roared and rushed forward.

At the critical moment, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian arrived.

"Sons of b\*tches..." Bai Suxian was irritated. Before Zhang Tie started his attack, Bai Suxian's eyes had turned cold. She wove her hand while white battle qi lines as dense as rain covered the entire grain-sunning ground like a huge net.

The moment the white battle qi lines were tightened up, the heads of over 10 bloody figures in the grain-sunning ground had been chopped off. Closely after that, their bodies were cut into pieces in a split second.

However, that tough man and those young men who formed the battle formation were all safe and sound.

At the sight of this scene, even Zhang Tie applauded for Bai Suxian inside.

In a split second, those people who were resisting bloody figures in the grain-sunning ground felt that the heavy bloody smell suffused. The tough man who was waving the huge saber also looked up and caught sight of Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian immediately.

In the flames, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian arrived with surging qis. At the sight of them, the tough man knew that their saviors finally arrived.

"You take care of them here. I'm afraid that few people are still alive in the village.

I will kill all of the b\*stards!" Zhang Tie told Bai Suxian.

"Fine!" Bai Suxian always followed Zhang Tie's order on such occasions. It was a bit privy that they cultivated when fighting demon knights in the Earth-elements Realm.

Zhang Tie threw a glance at the grain-sunning ground as he let out a sigh inside. Before those people on the grain-sunning ground appreciated him, he had disappeared in the air.

Because he moved too fast, commoners could not catch his movement by naked eyes. Therefore, those people on the grain-sunning ground thought that Zhang Tie disappeared out of the void.

Zhang Tie didn't know how these bloody figures communicated with each other. When Bai Suxian launched her strike, even though those bloody figures didn't utter any voice until death, Zhang Tie still found that all the bloody figures who were making a massacre and setting fires in the village became still for a second. Closely after that, all the rest bloody figures escaped in all directions.

It would be a joke if Zhang Tie allowed these bloody figures to escape under his eyes.

Zhang Tie moved as fast as a lightning bolt. Only after flying around the village two circles, he had killed all the bloody figures by shooting them with his battle qi from his fingers, except for two, who were left alive purposefully by Zhang Tie. The farthest one was only less than 100 m away from the village.

At this moment, these LV 9 bloody figures were as weak as flies with broken wings and legs who were waiting to be killed by a heavy hammer.

It took Zhang Tie a few time to kill all the bloody figures in the village.

By contrast, it took him a long time to save people. Under Zhang

Tie's lotus-flower eyes, he could see clearly all the alive people who were hiding in the cellars and wells.

He saved them one after another. He even broke two cellars by force...



# Chapter 1070: Ruins in the Bloody Flames

---

In the raging flame, a wooden building had collapsed partly. Commoners would not stay in this high-temperature environment at all, except for Zhang Tie.

In that collapsed building, few corpses had been charred, suffusing a vomiting odor.

As Zhang Tie caught sight of a person in the cellar below this building, he flew over here and opened the entrance of the cellar by tender force and prepared to take the alive person out of there.

This cellar had a few air vents. Therefore, the person in the cellar did not suffocate to death.

When Zhang Tie opened the cellar, a person charged out of there as she stabbed a knife towards Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie caught her wrist. The female raised her head and looked at Zhang Tie with extremely rancorous, tearful eyes as she swore, "You beasts...". Closely after that, she opened her mouth while lowering her head as she bit Zhang Tie's wrist forcefully.

She was a 17-year-old girl with dust and tears over her face. It seemed that she had already become delirious. Being stimulated by fear and animosity constantly, she had passed out when she bit Zhang Tie's wrist.

Watching this girl biting him forcefully, Zhang Tie faintly frowned. Closely after that, he caught her wrist and left the cellar. They soon arrived at the grain-sunning ground. At this moment, Zhang Tie made the muscles on his arms move, sliding away from the girl's mouth before handing her to those people over there.

"What happened?" Watching the girl biting Zhang Tie forcefully with a knife in hand, Bai Suxian asked out of curiosity.

"Her family members might have already been killed. When I saved her out of the cellar, she mistook me as a bloody figure.

Therefore, she immediately stabbed towards me with her knife. Closely after that, she even bit me. As she was too exhausted, she passed out directly!" Zhang Tie explained it to Bai Suxian. Closely after that, he disappeared once again.

Besides this girl, Zhang Tie saved many batches of alive people. Some kids who hid in the well in their homes at the request of their family members survived the catastrophe.

When these people were saved, some of them also cried and struggled like that girl. Not until they were put on the grain-sunning ground, saw the tough man and listened to the explanation did these people recover their composure.

After saving those alive people, Zhang Tie also saved those heavily wounded ones from the collapsed houses and brought them to the grain-sunning ground in the village.

Under the guidance of the tough man, the grain-sunning ground was cleaned up as the temporary settlements of these live villagers. Bai Suxian took out his portable medicines and instructed those alive young men to save people with the medicines.

Bai Suxian was like a fairy in the eyes of those young men.

It was Zhang Tie's first time to find that Bai Suxian could be so kindhearted.

Perhaps, Bai Suxian was too eye-catching when she appeared or had a strong qi field. Additionally, she had been used to command people since she was young. After Zhang Tie moved all the alive people to the grain-sunning ground, he found that Bai Suxian had already become the boss of all the others here. Everybody here was following her order.

After Zhang Tie put down the last alive person who was severely burned, he told his disciples to suspend the Fire Dragon Airboat over this place through remote-sensing crystal ring. After that, Bai Suxian walked towards Zhang Tie with that tough man.

The tough man's traumas had been treated. However, he was still a bit weary spiritually with a weak and pale look. If Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian were a few minutes late, nobody in the village could survive this massacre.

"Xu Yian appreciates Fire Dragon Hermit for saving our lives on behalf of all the alive villagers in Xujia Village!"

Bai Suxian might have already told the tough man about Zhang Tie's identity; therefore, the tough man immediately made a deep bow towards Zhang Tie the moment he came to Zhang Tie's front.

Additionally, Zhang Tie saved them sincerely. He didn't put on his airs as an earth knight. This tough man had seen what Zhang Tie had done by saving so many villagers from the raging flames and the water. Therefore, he respected Zhang Tie sincerely.

Zhang Tie was especially interested in the LV 10 battle qi totem that this tough man released just now. When in Waii Subcontinent, as there were very few mutated beasts above LV 10 in the underground world, most of the cultivators could not have a chance to integrate the LV 10 mutated beasts' soul flames with their own battle qis after promoting to LV 10 fighters. As a result, they could only release a "white totem with no image on it". At the sight of the LV 10 fighter's battle qi totem with an image on it, Zhang Tie was curious about that at once. It was even rarer than seeing a knight here.

This indicated the sharp difference in cultivating resources between different continents. Taixia Country had extensive land and rich resources. It was hard to see mutated beasts above LV 10 in the underground world of the other subcontinents; however, they could definitely find them in the underground world of Taixia Country. Besides, Taixia Country had more species of mutated beasts from LV 6 to LV 9 than that in other subcontinents.

"How do you feel now?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Thanks for your concern, Hermit. I'm much better after taking

one vial of medium-level recovery medicament from sister Bai!" Xu Yian's mouth corners twitched; however, he couldn't laugh out.

"What happened here?"

"Honestly, I have no idea. All of a sudden, I felt I was on the battlefield as I heard the miserable shrieks from inside the village. Before I went to see what happened with these young men who were cultivating with me, over 10 bloody figures had rushed towards us and besieged us. If these young men didn't cultivate with me before each daybreak over these years, I'm afraid that nobody in Xujia Village could survive in the end..." Xu Yian said in a bitter tone.

Xu Yian had the greatest battle strength in Xujia Village. He was a soldier before. After retiring from the troop, he even worked as a bounty criminal hunter for a period. In late years, after the holy war broke out, he returned to Xujia Village and trained the young men in Xujia Village so that they could protect themselves in the flames of war.

However, there was only one LV 10 strong fighter in Xujia Village. It was Xu Yian who enabled these young men to survive the catastrophe tonight. Without this LV 10 strong fighter, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian would not see anyone alive in this village when they arrived.

After talking with Zhang Tie for a short while, Xu Yian had felt that it became suddenly darker in the sky. He raised his head and saw the Iron-Dragon Airboat which was slowly declining. Xu Yian was shocked too much by this over 600-m long airboat even though he had seen the world.

Those young men who survived the catastrophe started to be in an uproar as they felt a great stress from the declining airboat.

As Xu Yian had seen the world, he was shocked by such a huge airboat. Xu Yian knew that those clans which had private airboats in Taixia Country were all not average. Many major clans with

knights didn't even have a private airboat, not to mention average clans. Additionally, the size of the airboat in Taixia Country also indicated the position of the master of the airboat. In Taixia Country, even a commander's airboat was only about 500 m in length. However, this airboat was about 600 m in length, which indicated the prestigious identity of its owner.

The airboat was too long and huge to park in Xujia Village. Finally, the airboat could only suspend above a mountain slope over 200 m away from the grain-sunning ground. After dropping the rope from the airboat, the 121 apprentices of Zhang Tie soon got off the airboat and converged with Zhang Tie on the grain-sunning ground.

After Zhang Tie's apprentices got off the airboat, a team of 49 elite guards of Bai Suxian stayed inside the airboat. The head of those elite guards was a LV 15 battle spirit. They could manipulate the airboat.

When the 121 apprentices of Zhang Tie passed by Xujia Village, many of them were shocked by the raging flames and the corpses scattering on both sides of the roads. As a result, the faces of many young apprentices who had not experienced such a horrible scene turned pale. When some female apprentices caught sight of the corpses which had been half charred and some kids' incomplete corpses that were shared by some bloody figures, they had started to throw up crazily before they arrived at the grain-sunning ground.

Liu Xing and the other apprentices of Zhang Tie also looked pretty bad. Even though they had experienced the brutal battles in the Earth-elements Realm, their hearts still pounded when they saw so many corpses across the small village in Taixia Country. They felt that such brutal images should not appear in Taixia Country...

What they saw shocked them greatly.

When all the 121 apprentices arrived at the grain-sunning ground, the day had already broken.

"Master!" All the apprentices bowed towards Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie threw a glance at those apprentices with pale faces before uttering, "Liu Xing, Zhao Bing and Wu Yinhui, you lead a team of LV 9 fighters respectively and search 35 miles away with this village as the original point. Catch any alive bloody figure back. I need them to breathe even if you break their limbs. If you cannot catch them alive, kill them. When you encounter any powerful enemy or dangerous situation, send signals to me. The others just stay here to help them deal with the funeral affairs..."

# Chapter 1071: An Achievement

---

Since they left Xuantian City, it was Zhang Tie's first time to assign a task to his disciples.

Although there was not any extremely talented person among his disciples, all of them were smarter than average people. All of these disciples knew that Zhang Tie took them out to practice them and make them coordinate with each other. Their performance in this task would be directly related to Zhang Tie's comments about them and might determine their position in Iron-Dragon Sect in the future.

More than one disciple had such a thought. Actually, all the disciples of Iron Dragon Hermit were very active in front of Zhang Tie. After receiving Zhang Tie's order, all of his disciples started to move rapidly while gritting their teeth, including those female disciples who had vomited so severely at the sight of those corpses that their faces even turned pale.

Among Zhang Tie's disciples, 53 of them were LV 9 fighters. If they were distributed into three teams, two teams would contain 18 members respectively while one team would contain 17 members. With the arrangement of Liu Xing, the 53 people were soon distributed into three teams and left the small village in three directions as fast as possible so as to search for the alive bloody figures. The rest disciples started to put out fire and deal with the corpses in the village...

Zhang Tie just watched his disciples doing all this. Standing on Zhang Tie's side, Xu Yian looked at Zhang Tie and Zhang Tie's disciples who were busy doing their jobs as his eyes flickered...

"Where's the nearest city?" Zhang Tie asked Xu Yian.

"The nearest big city is Xingyu City over 250 miles away. Xingyu City is a Class A city where massive forces were stationed in. If the situation here was spread to Xingyu City, I'm afraid that Xingyu

City will assign rescue here very soon!"

Zhang Tie nodded, "Just let me know if you need any help!"

"Thanks, Hermit!" Xu Yian looked at Zhang Tie's disciples before asking, "Hermit, are all these people...your disciples? I wonder about the location of your sect."

"Hmm, they're all my disciples. Iron-Dragon Sect is in the Fire Dragon Bounty Territory of Northeast Military Region!"

After hearing Fire Dragon Bounty Territory, Xu Yian was shocked once again. He knew that most of the bounty territories in Taixia Country were rewarded due to great military exploits. Now that Fire Dragon Bounty Territory was so similar to the appellation of Fire Dragon Hermit, it indicated that this bounty territory was made by Fire Dragon Hermit himself through great military exploits.

'If he did not have a great talent, how could Fire Dragon Hermit have such a large area of bounty territory?'

After hearing Zhang Tie's words and watching those young men who survived themselves, Xu Yian confirmed his mind once again.

'No matter what, I have to ask for a chance for these young men who survived this catastrophe in Xujia Village.' Xu Yian made a decision inside.

"Oh, I found that you've reached LV 10 and have a great battle strength. I wonder about the secret method that you're cultivating?" Zhang Tie asked Xu Yian.

Xu Yian shook his head before replying, "This humble man is just a little figure, how could I have a chance to practice any secret method. I'm just cultivating Heavenly Blue Sutra ."

"Heavenly Blue Sutra ?" Zhang Tie slightly frowned as this name was too strange and sounded a bit weird.

"The predecessor of Heavenly Blue Sutra is God Sutra . However,



as it's incomplete, I could at most promote to LV 13 battle general. This humble man didn't have a chance to join a major sect. Therefore..." Xu Yian became embarrassed before continuing, "But I will be satisfied with it if I could promote to a LV 13 battle general in my life based on my qualification..."

After hearing Xu Yian's answer, Zhang Tie suddenly remembered that he was cultivating the emperor-level "King Roc Sutra" and had gained a lot of secret methods that were above baron level and could help people promote to knights due to various reasons.

In Zhang Tie's opinion, \*\* sutra that could help the cultivator promote to knight's realm was really valuable secret methods. However, Zhang Tie forgot that it was very difficult for most of the cultivators to gain a \*\* sutra in both Waii Subcontinent and Taixia Country.

'When in Waii Subcontinent, I almost lost my life only for a \*\* sutra. Even I had to pay such a high price for a \*\* sutra at that moment; not to mention the others.'

'Lan Yunxi told me that the secret methods below sutra could be further divided into five levels, namely; dao, law, sutra, genre and skill. \*\* dao could enable people to promote to a battle spirit; \*\* law could enable people to promote to a battle demon; \*\* sutra could enable people to promote to a battle general; \*\* genre could enable people to promote to a battle master. The predecessor of "King Roc Sutra" is the most average "Barbarous Ox Skill" which could only enable people to promote to LV 11.

"Which kind of secret method does God Sutra belong to?"

" God Sutra is a count-level secret method. Although Heavenly Blue Sutra is incomplete and could only enable cultivators to light 297 surging points, it contains a complete God's Saber Skill . When one promotes to a battle general, this saber skill could display its power..."

...

After a brief talk with Zhang Tie, Xu Yian also started to organize those young men who survived the massacre to put out fire and collect corpses. By the way, checking whether there were any alive people left.

Zhang Tie stood still as Xuyian's words reminded him of one possibility, 'I might be able to recover these incomplete secret methods.'

'Although I've lit all of my surging points. I could still simulate the effects of various secret methods and skills benefited from the King Roc Sutra that I cultivate. The process of simulation is actually to light my surging points once again in a bizarre dormant state benefited from a feather of King Roc Sutra . What if I could simulate those lost parts of secret methods through King Roc Sutra in the trouble-reappearance situation?'

When he thought about this, Zhang Tie's heart palpitated.

'If I could simulate the secret methods above marquis level and could gain the complete skills that are matched with these secret methods, doesn't it mean that I would gain the complete versions of these secret methods?'

'In Taixia Country, there are all sorts of secret methods below sutra. Now that there is such an incomplete version of Heavenly Blue Sutra which contains a complete God's Saber Skill , there must be other incomplete secret methods which are more advanced than Heavenly Blue Sutra and are matched with complete skills. As long as I paid attention to that, it would not be difficult for me to find them.'

'After coming to Taixia Country, I reunited with my family members in Youzhou Province in a relaxed way for a few days. Closely after that, I was involved in the tragedy in Fuhai City and had to escape. After such a radical change, I almost forgot that I had a such a trump card.' Zhang Tie forcefully patted his head when he thought about this.

"What's wrong with you?" Bai Suxian asked out of concern when she noticed Zhang Tie's movement.

Zhang Tie replied with a smile, "Nothing!"

"Actually, you don't need to blame yourself too much. We've already tried our best. If we arrived here a bit earlier, we truly could save more people. However, such a tragedy is unpredictable!" Bai Suxian comforted Zhang Tie in a tender voice.

"I know. Ohh, what's the name of that skill that you used just now? It looks nice..."

After hearing Zhang Tie's praise, Bai Suxian's face shone as she replied, "It's called silk traction. It fits opponents below knight level very well..."

"Xu Yian's words reminded me. Do you know where to find those incomplete secret methods below sutra? I was thinking about that; although these secret methods might be incomplete and could not enable people to promote to knights, the various battle skills that were matched with these incomplete secret methods were valuable; especially those high-level incomplete secret methods. If I could collect some complete battle skills of some incomplete secret methods, I might make a greater improvement in my battle skills through comparison!" Zhang Tie told Bai Suxian.

"Master, why did you not tell me that earlier? If you told me a bit earlier, I would have brought hundreds of incomplete secret methods along with their complete battle skills from Lord Guangnan's Mansion to you this time!"

"Hoho, no need to move the collections in Lord Guangnan's Mansion. As they have limited value, if you brought them to me from Lord Guangnan's Mansion, it might cause gossips. I could find them in Taixia Country too!"

Bai Suxian rolled her beautiful eyes before saying, "Master, if you want these things, you could find them in the private markets

opened by the top seven sects in Taixia Country. You could find almost everything in the private markets of the top seven sects.

"The private markets of top seven sects in Taixia Country?"

"Right. Although they are private markets; actually the 7 private markets have already formed 7 super large cities in Taixia Country within the sphere of influence of the top seven sects respectively. The nearest private market is the Gold and Power Market of Gold and Power Law. After passing Zhongzhou Province and entering the territory of Xuanyuan Hill, you would find Gold and Power Market. I've been to Gold and Power Market with my dad when I was young. Gold and Power Market is almost the most prosperous place in human territory. It's said that you could even exchange for rare space-teleportation equipment in Gold and Power Market..."

"You arouse my interest. After the unrest is pacified, we will take a look in Gold and Power Market and broaden our vision!"

As they talked with each other, another airship suspended in the sky.

The raging flames in Xuajia Village and the Iron-Dragon Airboat on the hillside nearby Xujia Village were too eye-catching. Anyone would know that there was an accident here the moment they saw here.

Before that airship landed, a group of people had already jumped off the airship. They opened their rotachutes in the air and landed on the open land nearby Xujia Village one after another.

The moment these people landed, some battle airships of Taixia Country had appeared and were accelerating towards here from afar...

The rescues of Xingyu City finally arrived, although being late.

# Chapter 1072: Visit and News

---

Zhang Tie stayed in Xujia Village for 1 day.

In that day, his 53 LV 9 apprentices indeed caught 6 alive bloody figures within 35 miles under the leadership of Liu Xing, Zhao Bing and Wu Yinhui.

When the 6 bloody figures were caught back, their limbs had been broken. As a result, they could only move their heads. Plus the 6 live bloody figures, Zhang Tie caught 8 live bloody figures in total.

After the rescue force arrived from Xingyu City, the raging flames in Xujia Village were soon put out. The clean-up jobs in Xujia Village also sped up.

Only 83 of the 769 people of Xujia Village survived the one night massacre and raging flames, including those who were severely wounded. All the others had been killed or burned to death. Some kids were even eaten alive by bloody figures.

Xujia Village had completely become ruins.

The rescue force from Xingyu City was led by a border region general surnamed Lu. After confirming what happened in Xujia Village, General Lu instantly passed the situation here back to Xingyu City, which shocked the entire Xingyu City and its surroundings.

Xujia Village and Xingyu City were located in Shanghe Prefecture of Mingzhou Province, which neighbored Longxi Prefecture in Zhongzhou Province. However, the distance between Pingsha Valley, Longxi Prefecture and Xujia Village and Xingyu City was over 1,400 miles.

Only after a few days, the bloody figures that rushed out of Pingsha Valley had already exited Zhongzhou Province and influenced over 700 miles.

Although these bloody figures couldn't influence those well-prepared big cities, they could cause a great catastrophe to rural areas outside the city walls for sure.

There were numerous small villages like Xujia Village which were far away from prosperous big cities in Taixia Country. However, not each small village like Xujia Village could have a LV 10 strong fighter like Xu Yian on their back. Generally, most of the young men above LV 6 would leave these small villages and make a living outside instead of staying in their own villages. Very few people would like to stay in the small villages after reaching LV 9. Therefore, such a small village could become ruins overnight by 10-20 bloody figures.

As Zhang Tie, an earth knight, was here in Xujia Village, who had saved so many people, both General Lu and those bounty criminal hunters who jumped off the passing airship by rotachutes came here to see Zhang Tie respectfully.

Zhang Tie gained much first-hand news from General Lu and those bounty criminal hunters.

Longxi Prefecture in Zhongzhou Province was growing more chaotic. It was safe inside big cities. After learning lessons, all the big cities had been ready for combat while heavy forces were patrolling across the cities around the clock. Due to the appearance of bloody figures, many places outside the cities were in greater chaos. Those bloody figures had scattered in terms of smaller teams and were attacking villages, towns, traffic arteries and railways at any time. Additionally, they were scattering like an epidemic virus, causing people to become nerve-wracking.

Lately, bloody figures had appeared in the Shanghe Prefecture of Mingzhou Province. They started to cause troubles everywhere. After receiving the notice, the garrisons across Shanghe Prefecture had been strengthening the vigilance at the same time within 130 miles around Xingyu City. It was the utmost effort that Xingyu City could do. However, nobody could imagine that the

catastrophe happened in Xujia Village. It was beyond Xingyu City's grasp. Therefore, the garrisons of Xingyu City couldn't find the problem timely. They didn't dispatch rescue force to Xujia Village until they received the message sent from the airship that passed by Xingyu City. But it was still too late.

Because of the event in Zhongzhou Province, all the major cities in Taixia Country were in strict vigilance. Even airships that parked in these major cities for supplies had to be inquired.

General Lu extended his thanks to Zhang Tie's righteous deed. Additionally, he expressed that he would provide every convenience to Zhang Tie within his ability when Zhang Tie passed Xingyu City.

The general paid a formal visit to Zhang Tie in the morning; at noon, some bounty criminal hunters also arrived.

Starting from Li Butian and Yang Zhigang, Zhang Tie had a good feeling about bounty criminal hunters in Taixia Country. In Zhang Tie's opinion, Taixia Country was too large. It contained various elements. The bounty criminal hunters in Taixia Country were like white cells in the body of Taixia Country and the woodpeckers in woods. Bounty criminal hunter was an unnecessary link of the entire ecosystem of Taixia Country. These bounty criminal hunters performed as a very positive role. When the government and the judicial system of Taixia Country couldn't solve something, they would always have the nongovernmental forces in Taixia Country deal with it. The profession of bounty criminal hunter combined the chivalrous spirit with its legal system in Taixia Country and served as an equilibrium point. As an important security force in Taixia Country, bounty criminal hunters cooperated with the Supreme Court. By serving as bounty criminal hunters, cultivators could make money and improve their battle strength. It was very not bad for both cultivators and the government of Taixia Country.

Because of this reason, Zhang Tie received those bounty criminal

hunters without putting on his airs at all.

From those bounty criminal hunters, Zhang Tie knew that the Supreme Court and all the Buildings of Brightness across Taixia Country had already officially offered a reward for killing bloody figures in Zhongzhou Province.

The reward that Buildings of Brightness could provide was very high. The head of a bloody figure could be easily exchanged for 5,000 gold coins.

5,000 gold coins' reward for one LV 9 bloody figure. This reward was much greater than that for many LV 9 criminals. As for many bounty criminal hunters above LV 10, it was nothing different than gifting them money.

Being stimulated by such an alluring reward, all the able bounty criminal hunters converged in Zhongzhou Province from all directions.

Before those bounty criminal hunters paid a formal visit to Zhang Tie, they had heard that Zhang Tie caught two alive bloody figures. Therefore, they wanted to take a look at the bloody figure so that they could easily identify them. After hearing this request, Zhang Tie immediately showed the two alive bloody figures to them in the prison of his airboat.

Given their looks, it was hard to distinguish them from commoners. However, the bloody figures had two very special features. First, they didn't speak; second, their eyes contained bloodlines, which looked a bit grim and very special. Actually, people could identify bloody figures through their eyes...



# Chapter 1073: Outdoor Disciples

---

Soon after those bounty criminal hunters left, Xu Yian had arrived.

After hearing the report from a guard on the airboat, Zhang Tie invited Xu Yian in. After meeting Zhang Tie once again, Xu Yian immediately knelt down in front of Zhang Tie like a falling mountain and pillar.

"Ahh, what are you doing? Hurry up...stand up" Zhang Tie became stunned as he hurriedly lifted Xu Yian up.

Although Xu Yian was sturdy and tall, he was still one head lower than Cui Li.

Honestly, although he was already an earth knight, Zhang Tie really couldn't stand seeing anyone kneeling down in front of him except that when his disciples knelt down in front of him to acknowledge him as their master in the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect.

Among Hua people in Taixia Country, it was a major etiquette for one to kneel down in front of the other by two knees. Even if an average fighter only needed to kneel down by one knee in front of Xuanyuan Emperor. The major etiquette of kneeling down by two knees was only used to sacrifice the heavens and the ground, the master and the parents. Even Xuanyuan Hill couldn't bear it, not to mention commoners.

Xu Yian looked very complex. Being a bit embarrassed and shameful, he looked like having made a decision. After being pulled up by Zhang Tie, he looked straight into Zhang Tie's eyes as he plucked his courage and said, "Fire Dragon Hermit, please spare a chance for the young men who have survived the massacre in Xujia Village."

"What do you mean?"

"Those young men who survived in Xujia Village had no relatives now. They are in the ebb of their lives. I have limited ability. If those young men continue to follow me, I'm afraid that their future would be influenced. After knowing that Hermit is the master of Iron-Dragon Sect, this humble man begs Hermit to spare a chance for those young men in Xujia Village..."

Zhang Tie understood Xu Yian's meaning. All the young men who survived the massacre in Xujia Village had almost lost their families. Even though he was in the airboat, Zhang Tie could still hear the heartfelt cries of those young men in Xujia Village. It was the first heavy blow that they suffered in their lives. Over one night, they had lost their families and homes. Given the current situation in Xujia Village, even though everything here was dealt with, nobody would like to stay here anymore.

After such a catastrophe, even though under Xu Yian's leadership, these young men would live a very difficult life in the future. Taixia Country was too large. What a LV 10 strong fighter could do with a group of young men?

When these people were most hopeless, they met Zhang Tie. Xu Yian found a hope at once.

Those young men were in deep grief. They had not considered about their future yet. Neither did they know what Zhang Tie's appearance meant. However, as Xu Yian had seen the world, he had to seize the opportunity which could change the destiny of those young men in Xujia Village.

Zhang Tie asked Xu Yian calmly, "Do you want me to enroll them as my apprentices?"

"I didn't mean to offend you. I just beg Hermit to spare a chance for them!"

Xu Yian explained very politely. Although Zhang Tie' 121 apprentices didn't have great battle strength, their temperament as disciples from major clans could not be covered at all. It was not so

easy for a black iron knight to enroll apprentices, not to mention an earth knight. Honestly, although these young men in Xujia Village were pitiful, they were still far from acknowledging an earth knight as their master from all aspects.

Zhang Tie nodded inside about the polite way of speaking. Only after thinking about it for a short while, Zhang Tie had asked Xu Yian, "Do those young men know what you're doing? Will they follow your order?"

"Most of the people in Xujia Village surname Xu. Even though some of them don't have surname Xu, they are also my nephews. I could be their half master. I could determine the affairs in Xujia Village!" Xu Yian immediately became spirited as his eyes flickered when he found that Zhang Tie didn't refuse him.

"As I have to leave Xujia Village tomorrow. After I leave here, you can exchange the heads of those bloody figures that I've killed for gold coins in Xingyu City. After dealing with the affairs in Xujia Village, you take them to Xuantian City, Fire Dragon Prefecture, Northeast Military Region where you could join Iron-Dragon Sect. These young men in Xujia Village will be my outdoor disciples. You will serve as an outdoor deacon of Iron-Dragon Sect and help me look after them. How about that?"

"Thanks, Master!"

Xu Yian changed his appellation of Zhang Tie right away.

Zhang Tie's answer was much better than that Xu Yian could anticipate. After becoming the outdoor disciples of Iron-Dragon Sect, if some of the disciples in Xujia Village could be outstanding in Iron-Dragon Sect, they would also have a chance to be indoor disciples of Fire Dragon Hermit. If these young men were average in performance, they could easily root in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory or Northeast Military Region with Iron-Dragon Sect and Fire Dragon Hermit as their reliances in the future.

As for Xu Yian himself, he had been deeply convinced by Zhang

Tie's battle strength and moral standing. Now that an earth knight could allow him to be an outdoor deacon of Iron-Dragon Sect, of course, Xu Yian agreed at once. He knew that many people were more qualified than him.

In the evening, Liu Xing and his team members brought back some alive bloody figures. The raging flames were also put out, leaving no sparkles at all. After such a big fire accident, there was almost no complete house in Xujia Village. There was nothing but pitch-dark ruins here when one looked down from the sky.

In the daytime, with the assistance of the rescue force from Xingyu City, all the corpses in Xujia Village had been collected. Many corpses were unidentified. As it was too hot, those collected corpses couldn't be stored for too long; otherwise, there would be a plague. Being suggested by General Lu, Xu Yian made a decision to dig a huge pit on the hillside of Xujia Village over 300 m away from the grain-sunning ground and buried all the corpses of villagers inside before building a cemetery.

After doing all this, General Lu left Xujia Village by airship with his rescue force from Xingyu City. What happened in Xujia Village shocked the surroundings. Many places were in strict vigilance. When General Lu was in Xujia Village, he had received the order from the superior. Right in this daytime, a company of traveling merchants in the suburb of Pingxian Country over 130 miles away from Xingyu City was robbed. All the 40-odd people were killed. According to the analysis, another team of about 10 bloody figures probably had arrived there. Being afraid that other bloody figures would appear nearby Xingyu City, the superior requested General Lu to encircle and annihilate them with his rescue force...

...

Two bonfires were set on the hillside beside Xujia Village. Those young men who survived this massacre and Zhang Tie's apprentices were sitting on each side of the two bonfires.

It was the cemetery of Xujia Village nearby the bonfires.

The preliminary grave mound of the cemetery was like a small hill. Later on, Xu Yian would lead those young men who survived the massacre to further complete the building of this cemetery. After leaving Xujia Village, Xu Yian didn't know when would he come back. Therefore, this cemetery had to be firm and stand over 100 years. Because this was the last spiritual pillar for these young men in Xujia Village to stay alive.

Additionally, there should be a religious ceremony to reassure the souls of the late people. The injured ones needed to be treated. Their relatives and friends outside Xujia Village should be noticed. Not until finishing doing all this could Xu Yian and those young men went to Fire Dragon Bounty Territory for Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie's disciples were sitting on one side of the bonfires and roasting sweet potatoes. Although there were fleshes on Zhang Tie's airboat, after experiencing such a massacre, they would vomit the moment they saw meat not to mention eating it; especially for those people who were below LV 9.

Everybody was silent because of sadness or being touched by what happened today. Living in the most powerful human country in such a prosperous age, many Zhang Tie's apprentices didn't experience such a tragic situation before. Watching such a tranquil and vigorous village in Taixia Country vanishing overnight in front of them, many people were touched greatly.

Only a few people were whispering around the bonfires.

As it was the alternative period between the summer and autumn, the raging bonfire attracted a lot of fireflies, who were flying around the bonfires. Through the flames, they could even see the wide area of wildflowers on the hillside and the sparkling stars above their head. Although it was a beautiful scenery, nobody felt romantic at all.

Some young men in Xujia Village were even sobbing. On this

occasion, even Liu Xing and the other apprentices of Zhang Tie became silent.

The roasted sweet potatoes were almost cooked well while a special sweet fragrance was suffusing in the surroundings. Liu Xing moved forward and fiddled them with a twig before saying, "The most roast sweet potatoes are almost cooked well, junior sister apprentices, you could eat them first..."

Liu Xing was indeed qualified to be Zhang Tie's first apprentice; especially after completing today's task with the experience in the Earth-elements Realm at the cost of blood and tears and his instinct. Liu Xing's performance had won the approval of many people among Zhang Tie's apprentices. His position as the first apprentice of Fire Dragon Hermit was also consolidated.

After saying that, Liu Xing saw Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian walking towards him, followed by Bai Suxian's bodyguards. Those bodyguards were holding something. The two bodyguards at the end of the team even lifted two bloody figures who were already crippled...

As the wind blew, Liu Xing sniffed the bloody smell from those items in the hands of those bodyguards behind Zhang Tie immediately...

# Chapter 1074: The First Lesson

---

Watching Zhang Tie coming over here, all of his apprentices stood up immediately and bowed towards him as they said in unison, "Master!", including those young men who survived the massacre in Xujia Village.

Zhang Tie nodded towards all of them.

Zhang Tie had people bring here some beef that was stored in the icy warehouse on his airboat and two disabled bloody figures. Those beef were about 200 kg in weight. As Zhang Tie just had people store these beef in the icy warehouse before the airboat set off, they were still fresh now. The moment they opened these sealed cases, those fresh beef had given off a bloody odor.

In order to preserve the fresh taste of these beef, after those beef were slaughtered, their fleshs were instantly sealed in cases even with blood.

Beside the bonfires, the moment those people who participated in collecting corpses in the daytime smelt the bloody odor, their faces had turned a bit pale.

Since Zhang Tie took the first fruit of redemption, he had realized the value of those lives which looked trivial. From then on, he rarely ate meat; except for this time.

Zhang Tie nodded silently as he waved his hand. After seeing Zhang Tie's gesture, those bodyguards behind Zhang Tie put all the fresh beef in trays one after another. A bodyguard even brought some professional forks and knives which were used to eat roasted meat. On the other side, some bodyguards unfolded two metal operation tables which were especially for field operations.

They fixed the limbs, waists, necks and heads of the two disabled bloody figures on the metal operation tables, causing the atmosphere beside the bonfires to become weird.

'Bloody beef on one side, bloody figures on metal operation tables that were always used in field operations on the other side, what does the master want to do?'

Under the silent gazes of the apprentices, the two disabled bloody figures roared and struggled on the operation tables.

Zhang Tie looked at his apprentices with a big smile, exposing his white teeth, "You must be hungry. I've already prepared the supper for you. At least 1 kg's beef per person. You could eat well-cooked beef or half-cooked beef here!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, some female apprentices of Zhang Tie immediately vomited.

Zhang Tie didn't care about those female apprentices; instead, he continued to look at the other apprentices, "Is there anyone who has learned anatomy or surgical rescue? Raise your hand..."

Liu Xing and the other 6 black-armored fighters raised their hands. Among the other apprentices, over 10 people raised their hands too, including Zhu Dabiao.

It seemed that those who came from major clans with provincial governors could indeed accept a better education.

"Good, you're responsible for dissecting the two bloody figures. As we're all here, you will make an overall analysis of the two bloody figures from their heads to their feet and tell the others about the physiological difference between the two bloody figures and commoners. Liu Xing, you 7 just stay aside to teach them how to do that!"

Zhang Tie's words were as influential as imperial edicts for the 121 apprentices of Iron-Dragon Sect. After saying these words, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian sat beside a bonfire and started to roast two pieces of beef with iron forks. Liu Xing and the others who had raised their hands didn't dare waste time; they immediately started to autopsy. Watching Zhang Tie roasting beef, all the others



started to roast beef by iron forks consciously, even though some of them looked pale and were vomiting.

Zhang Tie said each of them had to eat at least 1 kg's beef. Therefore, no matter how disgusting those people felt, they had to do that.

"Master, those girls have not experienced this before. Is it a bit excessive?" Bai Suxian asked Zhang Tie in a secret way as she saw some female apprentices moving timidly to take their bloody beef, some of which even started to vomit once again after taking their shares.

"If you cannot even pass such a low-grade test, how could you be my apprentices? Do you think that you will never meet such a scene in the future? I took you out for a practice, not for a trip! I've treated you good enough; otherwise, I would have told you to eat the flesh of the bloody figures..."

"The flesh of bloody figures. It sounds more disgusting!"

"Disgusting? Do you know that many human fighters have to eat the flesh of the rotten demonized puppets on the battlefields of other subcontinents? If you they don't pass this test, it will be useless even if they promote to knights in the future."

After hearing Zhang Tie's reply, Bai Suxian became silent. Zhang Tie didn't overstate. What he described indeed happened in Selnes Theater of Operations. Zhang Tie even witnessed it. How did those human fighters survive the mountains of bloody corpses in Selnes Plain? How did those humans being captured live in the hell-like underground cave of Misty Moons Forest?

"The two bloody figures are really valuable. As they are still alive, open their skulls by saw first and observe the difference between their brains and human brains. Many demonized humans would have puppet worms in their brains. You'd better check whether there's such a thing in their brains! After dissecting their heads, dissect their organs one after another..." Zhang Tie told his

apprentices to "start from the head" when he saw them picking various tools and preparing for the autopsy...

The two metal operation tables were matched with the whole sets of surgical apparatuses. The moment Zhang Tie finished his words, someone had fetched the bone saws and started to saw the two bloody figures' skulls at the same time.

Although the two bloody figures were fixed on the metal operation tables, they had not taken anesthesia yet.

Along with the roars of the bloody figures was the sound of frictions between bone saws and their skulls. The skins on their heads were immediately cut by saws, spurting out blood at once, spraying over the clothes of those people surrounding the operation tables.

When the two bloody figures were slowly opened by saws and sprayed blood in all directions, the beef started to give off fragrance. During this process, the two bloody figures were not dead; they just made struggles in vain on the metal operation tables

The greater part of Zhang Tie's apprentices had turned pale. It might be the first time for the two apprentices to saw bloody figures' skulls as their hands were shivering.

Liu Xing and the other black-armored fighters were instructing them on one side, 'You should not cut into the skull directly in case of hurting the bloody figures' brains; instead, you should slowly saw it around the skull.

None of Zhang Tie's apprentices might have dissected alive bloody figures which looked like humans before. Therefore, they were all very intense throughout the whole process. One apprentice directly cut off a bloody figure's ear when he circled around the skull by saw, causing the bloody figure to shriek more miserably.

"Let me have a try..." Zhu Dabiao gritted his teeth with bloody eyes as he rolled up his sleeves and took that the saw from the apprentice who cut off the bloody figure's ear by a mistake. He pressed the badly mutilated head of the bloody figure by one hand and started to have a try. In the beginning, Zhu Dabiao's hands were quivering; however, after trying it a few times, this guy had become stable mentally and physically.

Zhang Tie threw a glance at Zhu Dabiao. Although this guy always looked sluggish, he was indeed a bit vicious at the critical moment.

Watching this scene, the young men who survived the massacre in Xujia Village and Xu Yian became silent; especially the former ones who just watched all this with dumbfounded looks as they felt that Fire Dragon Hermit's image became a bit terrifying for the first time.

Not until now did Xu Yian tell these young men that they would join Iron-Dragon Sect in the future. Therefore, those young men didn't know that their destinies in the future were closely related to Zhang Tie for the time being.

As Xu Yian had the similar experience in the troop, he had guessed Zhang Tie's purpose; even though, Xu Yian still had not imagined that Zhang Tie could directly dissect two bloody figures alive.

After looking at the young men on his side whose faces had turned pale, Xu Yian made a decision right away. He directly came to Zhang Tie's side and asked, "Hermit, do you have some more beef on your airboat?"

Zhang Tie threw a glance at Xu Yian before saying, "Do you also want some?"

"We need them too!" Xu Yian said decisively.

"Great!" Zhang Tie told a bodyguard on Bai Suxian's side, "Gift

them 100 kg's beef!"

After receiving the order, that bodyguard left. After a short while, he brought the beef along with the forks and knives and gave them to Xu Yian.

Xu Yian watched those young men with red eyes as he said furiously, "We will also eat beef. After growing stronger, we will learn battle skills and revenge for our family members!"

Xu Yian took a piece of beef immediately, closely followed by all the other young men of Xujia Village silently.

...

"Enjoy it..."

The beef was not cooked well yet as there was still blood in it. Someone might feel that it tasted tender; however, for those who had seen so many badly mutilated corpses today, Zhang Tie's order was like a curse.

Those apprentices who had always felt that Zhang Tie was genial since they formally acknowledged him as their master finally found that their master was cold-hearted and dignified.

After receiving Zhang Tie's order, nobody dared to move; even though the beef was not cooked well yet.

When Zhang Tie started to eat it, everybody else followed him.

Many people had started to vomit the moment they took the first bite. Even so, they continued to eat while gritting their teeth after looking at Zhang Tie's glassy-eyed look.

After they ate for 2 minutes, the first bloody figure's skull was opened, exposing the brain tissues inside. What shocked everybody at present was that there was indeed a gray octopus-shaped puppet worm that had already combined with the bloody figure's brains...

All of a sudden, after feeling the flames, the puppet worm started to creep as if it wanted to hide into the brain. However, before it

entered the brain, the one who was responsible for opening the skull had nipped it out of the brain by a pair of forceps.

When the puppet worm left the bloody figure's brain, the bloody figure suddenly quivered all over on the operation table as he showed the whites of his eyes. Only after a few seconds, the bloody figure had become still. As the puppet worm's tentacles were tightly sticking to the bloody figure's brain, it destroyed the bloody figure's brain when it nipped out of there.

In the flame, the octopus-shaped puppet worm was placed in a surgical tray. However, it was still creeping as if it wanted to climb out of the tray. At the sight of such a disgusting thing, many people who had vomited just now started to vomit once again.

"Haha, I wonder whether this thing tastes good or not!" Zhang Tie burst out into laughter as he stood up and came to the operation table. Catching that creeping puppet worm by hand, he walked to one bonfire and started to roast it on the bonfire.

The puppet worm kept struggling and creeping at its utmost effort in Zhang Tie's hand; however, it gradually became still and oozed oil in the flame...

Under the gaze of the surrounding people, after a few minutes, Zhang Tie's hand remained unchanged like performing a magic; however, the puppet worm in his hand had been cooked well. Zhang Tie directly put that well cooked octopus-shaped puppet worm into his mouth and started to chew it. At the same time, he praised that it tasted good.

After eating the cooked worm that was taken out of the brain of the bloody figure, Zhang Tie threw a glance at his apprentices, "In the former two holy wars, as the demon corps could eat human flesh, they didn't worry about food supply wherever they were. By contrast, humans would always change their faces due to fear when they talked about demons. Can you eat demon flesh? Can you make demons change their faces the moment they talk about

you? Do you think that Taixia Country will be peaceful forever? Do you think that flames of war and turmoils have nothing to do with you? Do you think that you only need to cultivate yourselves in Iron-Dragon Sect? After that event in Zhongzhou Province, do you think that demons and the Heavens Reaching Church only founded one bloody sea in Pingsha Valley? Although you all hope so, don't tell me that you're my apprentices in the future if you really think so. I don't need such stupid apprentices."

"Do you know why I brought you to Zhongzhou Province? Because I wanted to show you the possible situation that you might face in the future and how bad your opponents are? I wanted to warn you for that. As your master, actually, I only hope that you could survive this holy war instead of promoting to knights. Only when you survive yourselves could you have a bright future. I'm afraid that you might be involved in a tricky situation before making any preparation..."

After saying that, Zhang Tie threw a glance at Bai Suxian. Bai Suxian then walked towards him. Closely after that, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian returned to the airboat.

Beside the bonfires, everybody became silent once again. After a while, someone suddenly started to chew the bloody beef forcefully...

The autopsy continued. Although someone was still vomiting, more people started to chew beef forcefully...

As Zhang Tie's first apprentice, Liu Xing was the second person who took the disgusting puppet worm being covered with the brains out of another bloody figure's head and roasted it on the fire before eating it with a glassy-eyed look...

# Chapter 1075: Active Dark Forces

---

After leaving Xujia Village, Iron-Dragon Airboat parked in Xingyu City for supply.

It was Zhang Tie's first time to replenish materials for his airboat after leaving Fire Dragon Bounty Territory. Although airboats of Taixia Country didn't need to replenish energy and fuel, people in the airboats had to eat and drink.

The central dynamic and suspension system of airboat was made of a metal called floating metal. It was said that this rare metal came from a mysterious place in Earth-elements Realm. As of now, only the imperial household of Taixia Country could get hang of the technique of making airboat using floating metal. It was said that this technology originated from a prehistoric civilization. Benefited from this technology and this special metal, airboats would never run out of energy.

Except for Gold and Power Law, all the other top 6 sects in Taixia Country exchanged something for the airboats of the imperial household of Taixia Country, including the Iron-Dragon Airboat that Zhang Tie won from Feng Yexiao, the grand elder of Taiyi Fantasy Sect.

'To a certain extent, the relationship between the imperial household of Taixia Country, which is the top sect in Taixia Country, and the top 7 sects in Taixia Country is similar to that between Iron-Dragon Sect and the major sects within Northeast Military Region. They mutually restrict and coexist with each other. The win-win situation based on the prosperity and stability of Taixia Country. As they share the same foundation, their relationships would never deteriorate.'

'However, the interest conflict between both parties, also the difference between the imperial household and the top 7 sects in Taixia country lies in that only one people across Taixia Country

could ascend to the altar and throne of Emperor Xuanyuan. There is saint level above heavenly knight in both imperial household and the other seven top sects. However, the Xuanyuan God Sutra which is adopted by the imperial household of Taixia Country is the only emperor-level secret method that humans own today. Emperor Xuanyuan on saint level is the most dignified person among humans. With "Xuanyuan God Sutra", the imperial household overwhelms the top 7 sects in Taixia Country and stand on the peak of humans. The other 7 sects have to follow the order of the imperial household. Because of this, the relationship between the imperial household and the top 7 sects in Taixia Country wouldn't be too good.'

'In Taixia Country, everybody knows that Gold and Power Law as one of the top 7 sects has imperial household on their back. In the beginning, the imperial household of Taixia Country established Gold and Power Law and made it one of the top 7 sects in Taixia Country so as to compete with the other top 6 sects on many aspects. From then on, Gold and Power Law would do anything that the imperial household and the official of Taixia Country felt inconvenient to do on behalf of the latter. Of course, this would dissatisfy the other top 6 sects. So what? Gold and Power Law had Emperor Xuanyuan on its back. Although being an emperor, Emperor Xuanyuan wants to establish a sect for fun.'

'Nevertheless, Emperor Xuanyuan has been missing for many years. The holy war is growing fiercer. The inside of Taixia Country becomes increasingly unstable. Even the 6 top sects are eager for action.'

'Before the event in Zhongzhou Province, the dark forces in Taixia Country have been active. After such a catastrophe being similar to the catastrophe caused demonized puppets broke out in Zhongzhou Province, the hinterland of Taixia Country, the situation in Taixia Country becomes more intricate and might be intensified.'



Bai Suxian told Zhang Tie.

After one night stand, the two people were lying on the bed and looking at the stars above the crystal dome. At the same time, they were talking about the current situation facing Taixia Country.

As Bai Suxian was born and raised in Lord Guangnan's Mansion, after returning to Lord Guangnan's Mansion and meeting his dad Lord Guangnan, she knew better than commoners about the current situation facing Taixia Country.

With this woman on his side, Zhang Tie felt having one more adviser who knew the top intelligence about Taixia Country.

"Would those old d\*\*chebags above heavenly knight level among the top 7 sects attack Xuanyuan Hill?" Zhang Tie asked Bai Suxian.

"Maybe. But commoners could not make a speculation about their methods and action time. Although my dad has made such a judgment, he couldn't make sure what those old d\*\*chebags would do. After all, if Taixia Country is chaotic at this moment, none of the top 7 sects will make any benefits from it. However, it's impossible for them to ignore the current situation facing Taixia Country and Xuanyuan Hill. If they didn't do something, they would feel losing the best opportunity; if they did it excessively, the top 7 sects have to think about how to explain it to Emperor Xuanyuan if he suddenly comes back. Even though the top 7 sects are very powerful after combining with each other, they could not weaken the prestige of Emperor Xuanyuan in Hua people, either"

"If Xuanyuan Hill really went against the top 7 sects, which side would Lord Guangnan's Mansion stand on?"

"Neither!"

"Ohh!"

"The rank of nobility and bounty territory of Lord Guangnan were gained by the predecessors of Bai Clan in the former holy wars through blood and sweat; instead of being gifted by anyone.

Therefore, Lord Guangnan's Mansion doesn't need to consider the others' moods. Principally, Lord Guangnan's Mansion should stand on the side of Xuanyuan Hill; however, the current situation is that Emperor Xuanyuan is missing. Xuanyuan Hill has lost its leader. Additionally, the foxtriel Fang Xinyi belongs to Qionglou Building, one of the top 7 sects in Taixia Country. If Xuanyuan Hill went against the top 7 sects in Taixia Country, my father might maintain neutral!"

"Maintain neutral!"

After hearing Bai Suxian's words, Zhang Tie's heart pounded, 'Given the position of Lord Guangnan, the father of Bai Suxian, he might not be the first one who knows the news that Emperor Xuanyuan is missing; however, he is definitely one of the first batches of people who know the news. If her dad determines to sleep with Bai Suxian's ladybro after receiving the news that Emperor Xuanyuan is missing, it would be interesting. After Emperor Xuanyuan disappeared, if Lord Guangnan married a woman from Qionglou Building, one of the top 7 sects in Taixia Country as his princess because he had predicted the possible conflict between Xuanyuan Hill and the top 7 sects one day, he must be very considerate.'

When Zhang Tie heard that Lord Guangnan made Bai Suxian's ladybro as her step-mother in Earth-elements Realm, he despised Lord Guangnan as he felt that he was too tasteless. As a lord, how could he fall out with his daughter only for a woman? What a weirdo!

However, after Zhang Tie figured out the relationship between the top 7 sects and Xuanyuan Hill, his impression about Lord Guangnan immediately reversed completely, 'This Lord Guangnan is really smart.'

Perhaps, Bai Suxian had guessed this reason; therefore, she just left Lord Guangnan's Mansion decisively and directly ignored it.

"Are the words that you told Liu Xing real? Are you worried that what happened in Zhongzhou Province might repeat in other places in Taixia Country?" Bai Suxian asked out of concern.

Zhang Tie let out a sigh, "Undoubtedly, the Heavens Reaching Church is on the back of those bloody figures. Now that Heavens Reaching Church could build a bloody sea in Zhongzhou Province, one of the 9 immortal provinces in Taixia Country, do you think that it's more difficult for them to build another one in other places?"

"Additionally, before the catastrophe broke out in Zhongzhou Province, few people knew about Wen Haoyun in Pingsha Valley, Longxi Prefecture, Zhongzhou Province. An average black iron knight could be a bit well-known locally; however, as long as he exits his prefecture or province, he becomes nothing. Now that Heavens Reaching Church could allow a black iron knight to manage a bloody sea beneath Pingsha Valley, Zhongzhou Province, it means that this bloody sea is not irreplaceable. Pingsha Valley is just a base of Heavens Reaching Church. It's not the core region of Heavens Reaching Church at all; otherwise, Heavens Reaching Church would feel not enough by assigning an earth knight to safeguard here; not to mention a black iron knight. Don't forget that demons and Heavens Reaching Church have hidden a lot of knight-level powerhouses in Taixia Country. Old Monster Qi whom I met in the Earth-elements Realm is one of them!"

"Third, the news that Emperor Xuanyuan is missing was released by demons in the battlefield of Earth-elements Realm. The moment this news was released, it soon spread among humans. The demons must have their reason to release this news at that time. After knowing that Emperor Xuanyuan is missing, the entire Taixia Country is shocked while dark forces started to become active. Right then, the bloody figures that were bred in the bloody sea underground Pingsha Valley had almost become mature. If not the loophole on Pingsha Valley's side, these bloody figures might

still be in the bloody sea; even though they've become mature, they could also move secretly and nobody else would know that. Didn't you find any relation between the two events?"

"The time when demons released the news that Emperor Xuanyuan was missing is consistent with the time when the bloody figures in the bloody sea became mature!" Bai Suxian understood it right away.

"Of course it's not a coincidence but a part of the series of plots against Taixia Country and Hua people. The bloody figures that were bred underground Pingsha Valley were just LV 9 fighters. Even if there were 100,000 more LV 9 fighters, it was not a big deal for Taixia Country; at most aches for Taixia Country. They could not shake the base of Taixia Country at all. Hundreds of thousands of LV 9 fighters would be cleaned up after destroying one province at most when they have no high-level knight as their leader. In the holy war, Taixia Country could easily bear such a bit loss. After cooperating with each other, of course, demons and Heavens Reaching Church don't mean to only tickle Taixia Country. If I was the head of demons and Three-eye Association, I would establish as more bloody sea as possible. I would even establish at least one bloody sea in each province across Taixia Country. By then, with the assistance of the knight-level powerhouses of Heavens Reaching Church, each province would be plundered by bloody figures, leaving nothing but ruins. Only in this way could they shake the foundation of Taixia Country. Even if Taixia Country could pacify the catastrophe of bloody figures in the end, they would be severely damaged. Finally, Taixia Country would collapse from inside...'

When he caught those alive bloody figures, Zhang Tie had already read all of their memories. The first image that he gained from each bloody figure's memory was that they tore open the bloody ball in the bloody sea. Through their memories and visions, Zhang Tie saw what he wanted the most to see in Zhongzhou

Province—the bloody sea underground Pingsha Valley.

After seeing the bloody sea which bred those bloody figures, Zhang Tie felt extremely disappointed.

The main raw materials of the bloody sea were gold and senior crystal. Gold and senior crystals might be precious for commoners; however, they were nothing different than common steel bars and cement for the one who could establish bloody sea.

The most important thing for establishing bloody sea was the set of rune secret method that was applied to those gold and crystals. As for the one who had grasped the rune secret method of the bloody sea, now that he had established the first bloody sea, it was not difficult for him to establish the 2nd, the 3rd and the 4th one as long as he had sufficient raw materials.

Like how a craftsman built houses. The more houses he built, the more skilled he would be.

With this intuitionistic recognition, Zhang Tie judged that Heavens Reaching Church and demons definitely had built one bloody sea in Taixia country.

This judgment was very important. Although Heavens Reaching Church and demons couldn't build the original type of the bloody sea, they could build the bloody sea which could produce LV 9 fighters. Additionally, they combined the bloody sea with puppet worms in a creative way. It was already enough for demons and Heavens Reaching Church to overthrow Taixia Country.

The bloody sea which was originally invented by the Bloody Soul Temple was more like a bloody demon sea in the hands of demons and Heavens Reaching Church.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Bai Suxian's tender naked body suddenly felt a bit cold as she drew closer to Zhang Tie silently and said, "If your prediction is true. Heavens Reaching Church might launch an overall rebel in Taixia Country after this batch of bloody

figures in Pingsha Valley fully became mature. The period when the news that Emperor Xuanyuan was missing was released to the period when this batch of bloody figures in Pingsha Valley became mature was specially prepared for intensifying the conflict between the top 7 sects and Emperor Hill. When the two parties were both annoyed, it would satisfy the demons and Heavens Reaching Church for sure!"

"Yes. Additionally, I doubt that demons and Heavens Reaching Church might have shaper plots against Taixia Country and Hua people!"

"Sharper plots? You're worried that demons and Heavens Reaching Church might have more shaper means?"

"Yes, don't forget that Heavens Reaching Church excels at confusing people. They're good at involving commoners in. With the news that Emperor Xuanyuan was missing and these bloody figures who behave like mutated beasts, Heavens Reaching Church could not mobilize commoners. Only when the commoners lost their consciousness could the whole world become fully chaotic. That's what demons and Heavens Reaching Church want most! Additionally, I doubt that Heavens Reaching Church and demons have moles inside Taixia Country. He might hide in Xuanyuan Hill as a top chancellor. With the cover and assistance of this mole could Heavens Reaching Church silently build bloody seas one after another across Taixia Country..."

Bai Suxian let out a sigh faintly before saying, "After hearing your words, I don't know whether Taixia Country could tide over this holy war. Even if we could tide over this holy war, how severely damaged would our country be. If Taixia really perishes one day, will you leave me alone?"

"If there's really that day, I will take you to a place where even demons couldn't find us. We will live our own lives by eating and drinking; when we feel bored, we will deliver babies..." Zhang Tie let out a sigh too...

Although they both sighed, their sighs contained different meanings.

"Is there really such a place?" Bai Suxian threw a glance at Zhang Tie with flickering eyes.

"Believe me, there is!" Zhang Tie answered immediately.

Bai Suxian replied with a smile, "Even if you are lying to me to make me feel better, I'm already satisfied with your words!"

After saying that, Bai Suxian closed her eyes and fell asleep sweetly in Zhang Tie's cradle.

Zhang Tie looked up the stars...

Although the airboat was flying, the stars didn't move at all. Therefore, Zhang Tie felt asleep in a room on the ground instead of being in an airboat.

Of course, there was a place that could not be found by demons——Castle of Black Iron.

Previously, Zhang Tie had not considered about the size of Castle of Black Iron. However, lately, he had to think about it carefully. Now that he could see the possible crises across Taixia Country in the future, it was reasonable for him to think about the way of escape.

Zhang Tie liked Taixia Country; however, he had not imagined about sacrificing himself for Taixia Country one day. In Zhang Tie's opinion, living people counted most. As long as people were alive, everything else could be achieved.

At this moment, a whim occurred to Zhang Tie's mind, 'If there's really one day when Taixia Country perishes, I have to teleport all of my family members, relatives, friends, Bai Suxian, members of Iron-Dragon Sect and those people in Ice and Snow Wilderness into Castle of Black Iron. But whether Castle of Black Iron is big enough to hold all of them or not? After all, I alone have over 10 children...'

Zhang Tie realized that he had not expanded land resources for Castle of Black Iron for a long time. Therefore, he made a decision, 'Given the current situation facing Taixia Country, it seems that I should manage Castle of Black Iron well so that it could be available to all of us at the critical moment.'

'Besides further expanding the land resources in Castle of Black Iron, I should teleport as many plants and animals as possible into Castle of Black Iron. When the land in Castle of Black Iron was expanded, there would be more diversified ecological and mineral resources inside it and people inside it would live better.'

Zhang Tie remembered an experiment that zoologists and sociologists made before the Catastrophe. In that experiment, they put 10 mice into an enclosed paradise-like environment which could hold 1,000 mice and wanted to see the result.

At the beginning, all the mice behaved normally. They ate, drank and reproduced. Until the population of mice reached 1,000, the colony of rats suddenly collapsed. All the rats started to fight and kill each other in various methods until only dozens of rats survived. Although the living rats didn't fight and kill each other anymore, they couldn't live as casually as before and reproduce anymore. As a result, even the dozens of alive rats died.

Through this experiment, those zoologists and sociologists reached a conclusion—the desire for exploring the unknown world was the original driving force for the development and existence of human society. When human society lost their desire for exploration one day and its carrying capacity on materials and population reached its climax, humans would be at the verge of extermination.

Heller said that Castle of Black Iron was too small and incomplete; therefore, many things had not been bred yet. When Castle of Black Iron was big enough one day, it would derive a complete world.



'What's the look of the complete world?' After thinking about this question for a few seconds, Zhang Tie put it aside for the time being...

Zhang Tie was not afraid that those people inside Castle of Black Iron would lose their desire for exploration one day. After all, he could access to this world through Castle of Black Iron freely. If someone really felt bored inside Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie could throw him out to have fun with demons.

'What counts most now is that I should become stronger and make my backup more comfortable. I should make preparations for taking my beloved ones away from this world one day. I should also try my best to stop it from happening. I should try my best to save more commoners in the holy war until the end. '

'I will never let those b\*stards of Heavens Reaching Church and demons destroy all this in front of me.'

'Previously, I had limited abilities. After promoting to an earth knight, with Fire-Dragon Bounty Territory, Iron-Dragon Sect and Jinwu City, I could actually do many things.'

'I've already damaged many plans of demons, Three-eye Association and Heavens Reaching Church, why not continue?'

# Chapter 1076: The King Roc Flapped Its Wings

---

In a chaotic world, one had to do something that he didn't like to do.

Zhang Tie felt that he was a bit unfortunate. Previously, when in Waii Subcontinent, he always felt that Taixia Country was a safe place. Even in the holy war, Taixia Country would also be a safe place for humans which would maintain prosperity forever. Zhang Tie thought that he and his family members could have a safe and stable home here. Even before coming to Taixia Country, Zhang Tie had a faintly crazy idea——at the critical moment, he would organize a fleet from Taixia Country to evacuate those people from Ice and Snow Wilderness.

However, only after coming to Taixia Country for a short period, Zhang Tie had already been involved in the turmoil of Taixia Country. At the arrival of the 3rd holy war, Taixia Country which had been peaceful for hundreds of years might become the center of the storm.

Demons' plots in Taixia Country were too deep-rooted. Zhang Tie didn't know how long had demons prepared for such a day, 100 years or 200 years. When this day finally arrived, the bombs that demons buried in Taixia Country started to be detonated one after another. The future of the entire Eastern Continent then became complicated.

Besides training his apprentices, Zhang Tie had another purpose in Zhongzhou Province, namely, he wanted to find that culprit among the top 9 chancellors in Taixia Country. Given the current situation, after reading the memories of those bloody figures, Zhang Tie found it was very difficult to realize that.

Wen Haoyun, the master of Wen Clan in Pingsha Valley should know something; however, that guy had already escaped away. He

was still being wanted across Taixia Country. It might also be unrealistic for Zhang Tie to catch Wen Haoyun and gain some information from that guy.

'Whatever, now that I've come to Zhongzhou Province, I will take a round in Zhongzhou Province before broadening my vision in Xuanyuan Hill.'

With this thought, Zhang Tie became reassured.

After completing its materials supply in Xingyu City, Zhang Tie had Iron-Dragon Airboat leave Xingyu City for Longxi Prefecture, Zhongzhou Province on the same day.

Those alive bloody figures that Zhang Tie caught came from a branch of those bloody figures who had broken through Huian City. After destroying Huian City, facing the combined strikes from the knights of Supreme Court, knight-level powerhouses that came here from all directions and local garrisons, all the bloody figures scattered in all directions. Covering over 700 miles, they destroyed one prefecture and constantly divided into smaller teams to make troubles everywhere.

When those bloody figures escaped from Xingyu City, their total population reached over 10,000. Later on, after being struck by knights for a few times on the way, the troop started to divide into 5 regiments, each of which contained over 2,000 people. Facing constant strikes, each regiment of further divided into 5 camps, each of which contained about 400-500 people. A few days ago, these camps were further struck by local garrisons for a few times near the border of Zhongzhou Province before scattering into teams, each of which contained 40-50 members. When a team of bloody figures entered Shanghe Prefecture, Mingzhou Province, they almost killed all the people inside Xujia Village...

Although this team of bloody figures was killed, Zhang Tie had borne in mind the marching routes of the bloody figures; especially the general directions of those bloody figures after each strike.

When in Xingyu City, Zhang Tie drew a route chart on the aero map in the command module of Iron-Dragon Airboat after a consideration.

According to Zhang Tie's route chart, Iron-Dragon Airboat would fly in a snake-shaped curve instead of a straight line from Xingyu City to Pingsha Valley, Longxi Prefecture, Zhongzhou Province. Previously, Xingyu City was only over 1,300 miles away from Pingsha Valley. It only took an airboat 2 hours to finish this distance; However, according to Zhang Tie's route chart, they needed to spend almost 1 month from Xingyu City to Pingsha Valley.

On the new route chart, Zhang Tie changed the airboat into a movable military camp. It only moved 130 miles ahead a day at a very slow speed. However, Zhang Tie 121 disciples were divided into two teams. One team was composed of 60 people; the other team was composed of 61 people. They would march forward on the ground according to the route chart. At the same time, they would kill all the bloody figures that they met on the way.

Bai Suxian was a bit worried about this, "Is it okay?"

"Don't worry. There're 53 LV 9 fighters in the 2 teams totally. I've estimated that they might rarely meet a team of over 50 bloody figures on the way. All these bloody figures are disbanded, stragglers. Additionally, Liu Xing and the other 6 black-armored figures have rich battle experiences in Earth-elements Realm. They know how to deal with emergencies. Even if they met a team of over 50 bloody figures and couldn't deal with them, they only needed to send a signal to me. I'd be there soon! My disciples come from different clans and are greatly different from each other in gender, age and family background. It's a good opportunity for them to coordinate with each other; otherwise, they are just a heap of loose sand!"

Bai Suxian understood it. By doing this, Zhang Tie intended to train his apprentices and make them coordinate with each other

much better besides hunting bloody figures. Additionally, he aimed to help Liu Xing, his first apprentice who had no family background, to establish his prestige among his apprentices. Among Zhang Tie's apprentices, the group of seven black-armored fighters represented by Liu Xing had poorest family backgrounds. Meanwhile, they also had the richest battle experience. Zhang Tie's plan might be very difficult for the others; however, it was as easy as pie for the seven black-armored fighters who had practiced in Earth-elements Realm.

If Liu Xing could establish his prestige among the other apprentices as Zhang Tie's first apprentice at this moment, Liu Xing's words would be followed by the other apprentices in the future.

Bai Suxian revealed a smile, "You've really cudgeled your brains for your apprentices!"

Zhang Tie also replied with a smile, "I have to. After becoming their master, I have to be responsible for them! Taixia Country might be in a greater trouble in the future. I have to have them adapt to it. If some of them were really hurt or killed, it's their destiny. They have to bear that. Even in the top 7 sects of Taixia Country, those knight-level knights might also be hurt or killed when they execute tasks. Their clans sent them to Iron-Dragon Sect not to become playboys. After entering Iron-Dragon Sect, they have to treat themselves as a piece of worthless iron no matter how dignified they were in their major clans."

Zhang Tie had made his firm determination. Actually, he had thought much more than Bai Suxian. Because the youngest and weakest two members among his 121 disciples were his nephews, Zhang Chengxu and Zhang Chengze. Zhang Tie's request was definitely a great, tough test for the two people. They were respectively 12 years old and 11.5 years old. It was indeed too young for them to participate in such an action.

However, they couldn't refuse it because of their age. Zhang

Cheng Xu and Zhang Chengze were brothers; additionally, they had lit their shrine surging points and 4 surging points on their spines respectively. Given their battle strength, they had been LV 4 warriors. When Zhang Tie was at their age, he had just learned how to polish surging points. By contrast, Zhang Chengxu and Zhang Chengze had been learning battle skills from masters since very young; additionally, Zhang family didn't lack training resources; therefore, the two brothers lit 5 surging points at such a young age.

Zhang Tie could even let his nephews join in the action, not to mention the others.

During the process of materials supply, Zhang Tie went to the Building of Brightness in Xingyu City.

In the Building of Brightness of Xingyu City, Zhang Tie delivered a task to all the bounty criminal hunters in Taixia Country in the identity of the master of Fire Dragon Bounty Territory——alive bloody figures purchase. 10,000 gold coins for each bloody figure. The more, the better. The captors only need to exchange alive bloody figures for gold coins in the Northeast Military Region.

The reward of the imperial court was 5,000 gold coins for each bloody figure. However, Zhang Tie purchased alive bloody figures at two times higher price. Additionally, the more, the better. As for those bounty criminal hunters who poured in Zhongzhou Province, although alive bloody figures were a bit tricky and would take them some time to hire airships to transport alive bloody figures to the Northeast Military Region at some cost. Zhang Tie's purchasing price was still very attractive. Of course, it was not worthwhile to travel to Fire Dragon Bounty Territory only for the reward of one bloody figure. But if they could catch a lot of live bloody figures and hired an airship to transport these alive bloody figures to Fire Dragon Bounty Territory, it would be very profitable...

When Zhang Tie's airboat left Xingyu City, the news that Cui Li,

the master of Fire Dragon Bounty Territory, was purchasing alive bloody figures at the price of 10,000 gold coins for each had been spread over the entire Buildings of Brightness across Zhongzhou Province and Mingzhou Province. Some clever ones had been considering how to make a fortune in this business. Over 95% of commoners in Taixia Country could not make so much money in their whole lives. Many small commercial organizations and business groups couldn't even make so much profit in one year. Everybody was crazy about this news. If not the event in Zhongzhou Province, where to find such a good opportunity to make a fortune.

When Zhang Tie was going to deliver a task in the Building of Brightness, Bai Suxian was cultivating silently in the cultivation room of the airboat. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't notice her. Until Zhang Tie came back, those people in the airboat still didn't know that Zhang Tie had delivered such a task in the Building of Brightness.

After promoting to an earth knight, gold coins had been meaningless for Zhang Tie. The gold coin was just a matter of number and material for him. Zhang Tie was clear about the purchasing power of 10,000 gold coins too. He knew that his purchasing price was even higher than that of the imperial court of Taixia Country. However, although 10,000 gold coins looked a bit much at this moment, it might be nothing in the future...

'I will make an advisement for myself in Taixia Country by the event in Zhongzhou Province only at a bit cost.' Zhang Tie believed that all the people across Taixia Country would know Cui Li the Fire Dragon Hermit and Iron-Dragon Sect after a short period.

If he wanted to do something big and make demons and those b\*stards of Heavens Reaching Church feel bad, how could he have no popularity?

When Iron-Dragon Airboat left Xingyu City, many big figures and masters of major clans had received that news from their

subordinates——Cui Li the Fire Dragon Hermit, also the owner of Fire Dragon Bounty Territory in Northeast Military Region is purchasing alive bloody figures at a high price. The more, the better.

After hearing this news, all the big figures and master of major clans frowned almost at the same time. Closely after that, they sent the same two orders.

First, figure out the background of Fire Dragon Hermit.

Second, figure out what Fire Dragon Hermit used those live bloody figures for.

In the coming storm that might roll over the entire Taixia Country, Zhang Tie started to forcefully flap his wings towards a looming iron wall in the future...



# Chapter 1077: The Role of Master

---

They moved very slowly.

Before each daybreak, the two teams had already left the airboat and searched along the route that Zhang Tie designated for the bloody figures. After finding bloody figures, they would kill them right away and bring back their heads.

According to ZhangTie's route chart, they only needed to move about 130 miles a day. They spent most of their time in the wild and unpopulated places that were far away from cities. Sometimes, they needed to tramp over mountains and through ravines. Even though they had tools, the roads were still tricky; especially that they had to search over the surroundings so as to prevent from being raided by bloody figures. After finding bloody figures, they had to kill them. Such a route was a tough challenge for Zhang Tie's apprentices, the highest level of which was just LV 9.

Therefore, although they left early each day, they always came back to the place where the airboat landed after the night fell.

When they left the airboat, Zhang Tie only allowed them to carry weapons, empty water bottles, slopes and signal flares for surviving themselves. They could not even carry medicament. On the way in the daytime, they had to find food themselves. Of course, when they came back to the airboat, they could eat whatever they wanted with unlimited quantities.

On the first day, since they left Xingyu City, they spent 15 hours on the way. When they returned to the airboat, it was already over 1 am midnight. Everybody had been extremely fatigued. Some female disciples looked embarrassed as their clothes had been broken in many places. Zhang Chengze and Zhang Chengze were completely carried back on stretchers made of twigs by Liu Xing and the other guys.

As the weakest and youngest two people among Zhang Tie's

apprentices, Zhang Chengxu and Zhang Chengze had reached their physical limits when they finished 80 miles of the journey in the wild. One passed out, the other started to throw up and twitch all over. Therefore, the others could only carry them back by stretchers.

On the first day, when they came back, some female disciples, Zhang Chengxu and Zhang Chengze had silently cried in their own cabins. Others didn't know that they were crying; however, Zhang Tie could as long as he wanted.

After resting less than 6 hours on the airboat, all of them set off once again at about 7 am next morning, including Zhang Chengxu and Zhang Chengze.

On the second day, they returned to Iron-Dragon Airboat almost at the same time. Being different than that on the first day, this time, they brought back 3 bloody figures' heads.

It was their first time to meet 3 bloody figures in the wild on the route designated by Zhang Tie. Of course, they killed them soon.

Zhang Tie felt that these bloody figures were as disgusting as demonized puppets. He didn't want to carry these bloody figures in case that the fresh air in the airboat was polluted. Additionally, he wanted to make his apprentices move more conveniently. Therefore, he only told them to bring back the heads of bloody figures.

After seeing the three bloody figures' heads, Zhang Tie awarded them with 6 vials of full-purpose medicament.

After taking the award, all the 121 apprentices of Zhang Tie became spirited.

In peacetime, it was hard to see the effect of all-purpose medicament. Only in such a tough situation could those vials of all-purpose medicament bring a great effect to a team at the critical moment. They could enable those who could not stand it to walk

farther and help those being slightly wounded to recover rapidly. As a result, they could improve the overall action efficiency of a team.

The fact was that this method that Zhang Tie chose for his apprentices to cooperate with each other was especially effective.

Only after one week, the 121 apprentices had been familiar with each other and looked more like fellow apprentices of the same master. They gradually became an entity. Many people started to call others Senior Fellow Apprentice \*\*, Junior Fellow Apprentice \*\*, Senior Sister Apprentice \*\*, Junior Sister Apprentice\*\* which sounded intimate.

Besides Liu Xing who was the first apprentice of Zhang Tie, the others' seniorities were arranged according to their ages. Elder ones would be called senior fellow or sister apprentices; younger ones would be called junior fellow or sister apprentices. Without Zhang Tie's concern, these apprentices had already figured out their seniorities mutually after 1 week's cooperation.

Zhang Chengxu, Zhang Chengze and some female apprentices didn't cry anymore. The two teams left the airboat at the same time; however, they came back earlier and earlier gradually from 1 am to 11 pm.

After experiencing the initial hardships, the two teams became increasingly vigorous. Everybody gradually treated daily tough march as an interesting yet dangerous game. The reward of the game for bloody figures' heads was the all-purpose medicament. With more vials of the all-purpose medicament, the teams would be more relaxed in the march and more active in searching for bloody figures.

Some disciples were hurt by bloody figures, if they couldn't continue to join the action for the time being, they would return to Iron-Dragon Airboat for a few days' recuperation. After recovery, they would return to their teams. As long as those injured ones

recovered their wounds basically, they would request to return to their teams instead of staying in the airboat.

Through many battles with bloody figures, they could have chances to improve their own battle skills through communication. After experiencing the hardships in Earth-elements Realm, Liu Xing and the other 6 black-armored fighters had rich battle skills; those disciples who came from major clans could have chances to learn various battle skills since they were young. Many people's clans had collected various secret methods on battle skills. Therefore, they were open-minded. They could learn and draw benefits from each other. As a result, everybody gained more battle experience and better battle skills very soon.

In the early days, when they came back to the airboat, it was already too late. After taking some food, they would hurriedly go to bed due to tiredness for the sake of the task the next day. As they came back earlier and earlier, after taking food, they still had much free time. Therefore, they started to chat and discuss the gains and losses of that day's battles. When they were excited about that, some LV 9 disciples would even simulate the battles in an open place in the canteen. One party would perform as bloody figures that they met that day, the other party would be themselves. They deduced the battles in slow movements and studied how to avoid from the opponent's movement, how to kill the opponent at the fastest speed, how to coordinate with each other, how to break the opponent's coordination, how to resist the opponents which outnumbered them and vice versa, etc...

Through similar communication, they all had great achievements and became very excited.

In the first 3 days since they returned to the airboat and started to conclude their daily battle experience, Zhang Tie didn't join them. He just observed that spiritually. After observing them for 3 days, Zhang Tie found that such communications about the battle experience were very good. In such conclusions, they were

learning, rethinking, communicating and improving day by day. An individual's experience and gnosis would soon be shared by the rest of people. Benefited from this method, all of them could improve pretty fast. Therefore, on the 4th day, since they started their conclusions, Zhang Tie had told them to conclude in the training field of the airboat after having supper. Additionally, he also joined them and instructed them.

Zhang Tie had died thousands of times in trouble-reappearance situations. In reality, he had also experienced numerous brutal battles. As an earth knight, only by giving them a few directions could Zhang Tie benefit them a lot.

Sometimes, Zhang Tie directly limited his battle strength to a LV 9 fighter like Liu Xing and fought them for a better experience, ignoring his identity as an earth knight.

After Zhang Tie joined them, all of his apprentices became highly spirited at once. They would always maintain that high spirit when they left the airboat so as to communicate with Zhang Tie when they came back.

None of Zhang Tie's apprentices were stupid. All of them knew that such opportunities were rare. Very few LV 9 fighters could be instructed by an earth knight across Taixia Country.

In Zhang Tie's opinion, Liu Xing and the other guys were his peers. They had a lot of things to share. Therefore, he didn't treat himself as their elder in many cases; instead, he just communicated with them smoothly on the equal footing.

When in deduction, Zhang Tie could deal with the besiege of 20 LV 9 disciples including Liu Xing in the battle strength of a common LV 9 fighter. However, he could still "kill all the 20 people" without suffering a bit wound. This result shocked everybody at present. It was his apprentices' first time to watch the "extremely brilliant battle skill"...

Zhang Tie didn't know that his mentality and look when he

instructed his apprentices shocked all of his apprentices. Zhang Tie didn't put on his airs; however, he gained more respect. After watching Zhang Tie's extremely brilliant battle skill, some female apprentices' eyes were sparkling starlight at the sight of Zhang Tie...

When Zhang Tie's apprentices left the airboat for hunting bloody figures every day, Zhang Tie kept studying a secret method that Bai Suxian had given him.

That secret method was called "Bright Enlightenment Sutra"...

This secret method solved a question that had puzzled Zhang Tie for so long...

# Chapter 1078: Bright Enlightenment Sutra

---

Very few commoners could promote to knights by cultivating secret methods; especially senior secret methods. By contrast, super forces like top seven sects in Taixia Country mastered many secret methods and cultivation resources for sure.

In Taixia Country, on one hand, billions of commoners had a great desire and demand for secret methods; on the other hand, few forces and major clans mastered a great number of resources. Therefore, someone would use various means to meet commoners' demand at the risk of their lives.

There were definitely more than 1 disciple among top 7 sects and those super clans who could touch and cultivate those rare secret methods. Only in this way could a sect and a clan maintain a strong vitality and constantly train excellent talents.

Zhang Tie wondered why he had not heard that any disciples of the top 7 sects betrayed their sects and exposed their clans' secret methods to the public, causing a great chaos in the world.

Zhang Tie didn't believe that all the disciples who could touch top secret methods among the top 7 sects and major clans were saints and gentlemen. Given the probability, after so many years since those major sects and super clans were founded, some ambitious guys or lunatics must have touched those top secret methods. Now that they had touched those top secret methods, why didn't they steal those top secret methods and expose them to the others? How did those major sects and super clans prevent their top secret methods from being exposed to the public in case of losses?

'As I've reached a very high level in soul-forbidden skill, if I caught a core disciple of one of the top 7 sects who had touched the top secret methods, couldn't I get that top secret method from that core disciple's memory? How do the major sects and super clans in

Taixia Country prevent it from being exposed in this way?'

'How do major sects and super clans in Taixia Country maintain the uniqueness and confidentiality of their own secret methods?'

Zhang Tie had been thinking about this question especially after establishing the Iron-Dragon Sect.

Previously, when in Huaiyuan Palace, as Zhang Tie didn't cultivate Sun Breaking Sutra , he didn't know how the Sun Breaking Sutra of Huaiyuan Palace was inherited. Now, Zhang Tie realized how Lan Yunxi trusted him and was brave to give him the Sun Breaking Sutra at that moment.

Zhang Tie was always worried that what if some of his disciples were ambitious guys or lunatics and might expose his Fire Dragon Sutra and other secret methods to the public?

As Zhang Tie had not figured out this question, he had not passed the method of lighting surging points to promote to LV 10 to his disciples these days.

When he told Bai Suxian about his concern, the latter widely opened her eyes at once as she asked Zhang Tie with an amazed look, "Master, don't you know that?"

"Don't know what?'

"Do you think that major sects pass their classics and secret methods to their disciples by giving them books?"

"Why not?" Zhang Tie touched his bald head.

Bai Suxian watched Zhang Tie with a funny look, "Of course not, otherwise, as long as some unfilial apprentices were captured by an evil person, the inheritance of those major sects and clans would be chaotic. If the others could gain top secret methods so easily, the so-called top secret methods would be too average. If so, how could those major sects and clans last 1,000 years and shock the world with those top secret methods?'



"What if not?"

After hearing that, Bai Suxian took out a piece of secret method crystal from his portable space and gave it to Zhang Tie.

The secret method in the crystal was Bright Enlightenment Sutra ...

Since he received the Bright Enlightenment Sutra , Zhang Tie had been immersing in this secret method these days in the airboat when he was free.

After reading it, Zhang Tie finally knew how the major sects and clans in Taixia Country protected their own classics and secret methods.

To be honest, as Zhang Tie grew up in Blackhot City as a commoner, his background was too weak; neither did he receive any good education or systemic knowledge and instructions from experts. Later on, he promoted to a black iron knight too fast one step after another. Only after a few years, he had promoted to an earth knight. Like a nouveau riche among knights, he was not clear about some things for sure. Due to his blind spots in some aspects, he would make mistakes.

Zhang Tie gained his secret methods easily. He just cultivated according to the secret methods. He even gained the complete "King Roc Sutra" step by step through multiple trials in trouble-reappearance situations. Therefore, Zhang Tie thought that the major clans and sects in Taixia Country also inherited their secret methods by giving them to their disciples like that in school or in Hidden Dragon Island where secret methods could be exchanged with accumulated points and contribution.

Actually, in those major sects and clans, disciples could indeed exchange for secret methods with contribution and accumulated points like how Zhang Tie did in Hidden Dragon Island. However, those secret methods were not very precious. The most precious secret methods and classics were usually inherited in an ancient

and mysterious method——enlightenment.

Bright Enlightenment Sutra taught people how to inherit secret methods through enlightenment. This secret method could only be cultivated by people when they reached knight level.

The secret sutra introduced three methods for enlightenment, namely, Bright Enlightenment Method , Heavenly Wheel Enlightenment Method and Sacrifice Enlightenment Method .

Bright Enlightenment Method was mainly used by major clans and sects in Taixia Country. To a certain extent, Zhang Tie felt that Bright Enlightenment Method was similar to the process of transmitting a coded document into people's awareness.

The coding process was called the combination and blessing of body, mouth and awareness. Additionally, it could only be decoded one time.

When Bright Enlightenment Method was used to inherit secret methods, the one who received the enlightenment could not expose what he received and learned to others in any means; neither could the others gain any content of the secret methods in any means.

If the one who received the enlightenment would like to leak the information on purpose, as long as he thought about it and put it into action, he would be destructed by the secret method that he received through enlightenment. Being affected by body, mouth and awareness, nobody could cheat himself. Even if the one who received the enlightenment had entered the saint level, he could still not avoid from being destructed if he intended to leak the information and put it into action. A part of the strength of self-destruction came from the one who received the enlightenment; most of it came from the punishment that the one being executed violated the contract that he had admitted.

The one who leaked the secret method which he had received through Bright Enlightenment Method would become muddle-

headed as a plant man at least; in the worst scenario, he would explode and disappear.

In the history of Taixia Country, some heavenly knights who didn't believe that they would be destructed by the Bright Enlightenment Method. However, they were all killed in the end, which laid a solid foundation for the uniqueness of Bright Enlightenment Sutra .

As for the Heavenly Wheel Enlightenment Method, the executor would transfer his own spiritual energy to the executee. In this process, the executee could only gain half of the spiritual energy from the executor. The other half of spiritual energy would escape.

The third enlightenment method of Bright Enlightenment Sutra was called Sacrifice Enlightenment Method, which was the most powerful enlightenment method. Through this enlightenment method, the executor could transfer all of his life energy to the executee. The executee could gain  $\frac{1}{7}$  of the total life energy of the executor. If  $\frac{1}{7}$  of the executor's life energy was powerful enough, the executee could even light all of his surging points and form a chakra.

However, a knight could only apply Sacrifice Enlightenment Method one time in his whole life. As the term suggested, the executor had to pay his life for implementing this method. Therefore, only when some knights in major clans and sects were almost dying would they transfer their life energy to a selected lucky dog in Sacrifice Enlightenment Method. In this way, they could produce a powerhouse at the fastest speed and leave some hope for their sect or clan.

To a certain extent, Sacrifice Enlightenment Method was similar to Bloody Demon Imitation method. The difference between them was that Sacrifice Enlightenment Method was righteous while Bloody Demon Imitation Method was evil, which would release others' life potential in the shortest period at the cost of their lives.

Previously, Bai Suxian kept Bright Enlightenment Sutra for herself. After knowing that Zhang Tie was establishing a sect, she realized that she might instruct disciples in Iron-Dragon Sect after marrying Zhang Tie. Therefore, Bai Suxian came here with the Bright Enlightenment Sutra . It was out of her imagination that Zhang Tie needed it more than her.

The Bright Enlightenment Sutra solved a question which had puzzled Zhang Tie for so long. As long as he mastered this sutra, Zhang Tie knew that his Fire Dragon Sutra and Mental Arithmetic by Abacus even the methods that he used to promote cultivation through setting free animals would never be exposed to anyone else through his disciples. Even if he passed top secret methods such as King Roc Sutra and the Great Wilderness Sutra to his son through Bright Enlightenment Method, nobody else would know about that.

This Bright Enlightenment Sutra was really timely for Zhang Tie, which pushed open a gate in front of Zhang Tie at once...

# Chapter 1079: Marching towards Pingsha Valley

---

On October 4th, after almost 1 month's march, Iron-Dragon Airboat and Zhang Tie's disciples were finally close to Pingsha Valley, Longxi Prefecture, Zhongzhou Province.

When they entered Zhongzhou Province in late September, they saw airships and airboats arriving at Zhongzhou Province from all directions. Iron-Dragon Airboat encountered 3-4 batches of knight-level powerhouses from courts across Zhongzhou Province in the sky. Additionally, Zhang Tie met about 10-20 unidentified knight-level powerhouses who were inspecting the ground every day in the sky.

They could see hundreds of battle airships flying over the land every day. As long as an emergency was discovered, the elites on the airships would immediately jump off the airships under the leadership of fighters above LV 10 officially organized by the military of Taixia Country, who could easily sweep small teams of bloody figures.

On the ground, the garrisons dispatched from all cities in Longxi Prefecture had set cordons in each communications center. Armored vehicles and temporary mini battle fortresses could be seen everywhere. Those bounty criminal hunters who arrived here from the other provinces would besiege and hunt dispersed bloody figures in the wild in teams.

It was more like a rounding up and hunting rather than a battle.

Zhang Tie's 121 apprentices would meet some teams of bounty criminal hunters on the ground every day. Meanwhile, they also had a chance to watch a military elite team of Taixia Country rounding up and hunting a small team of bloody figures in the wild.

At the sight of this situation, Zhang Tie knew that the bloody figures in Zhongzhou Province would soon be appeased by parties in Taixia Country after over 1 month's concerted efforts.

The bloody figures were like wildfire that extended and die out fast.

Over 100,000 LV 9 bloody figures were a terrifying, subversive force which could match that of the super demon corps led by the demon general in any subcontinent.

However, the contingent of bloody figures had a fatal shortcoming—they had no knight-level leader. As long as some bloody figures gathered together, they would soon become the targets of human knights and could be easily dispersed. Therefore, it was hard for them to form a great force that was possessed by an army.

Any troop would only be a motley crew and roving bandits as long as they were dispersed. This explained why Zhang Tie couldn't see the contingent of the bloody figures separate into smaller teams of bloody figures spontaneously in their memories. Although these bloody figures would cause great damages wherever they were, as long they appeared, they would definitely be besieged from all directions. It determined that their lives were short.

Additionally, although these bloody figures looked as same as Hua people, they didn't speak. They could be easily identified from their eyes. This accelerated the extinction of bloody figures.

On the evening of October 3, Iron-Dragon Airboat encamped in the wild over 400 miles away from Pingsha Valley. On the same evening, it turned gloomy and rained heavily. In the morning, the heavy rain didn't stop while the water level in the brook in the wild rose rapidly. Additionally, the road was muddy.

Last night, due to the storm, the airboat rose from 1 m above the ground to 10 m above the ground out of safety. On the next early

morning, Zhang Tie came to the command module on the top of the airboat to observe the weather outside through the crystal protective wall.

The raindrops hit the airboat heavily; however, people inside the command module couldn't hear it at all. Even so, Zhang Tie could still watch the scenery in the outside through the transparent crystal protective wall.

It was dusty outside with a very low visibility. The limpid river yesterday had already turned completely murky. Additionally, the water level had risen greatly. After falling on the crystal protective wall, the raindrops formed into trickles. After starting the wiper, Zhang Tie could see the scenery outside clearly. The water in the water-diversion groove on one side of the head of the airboat flew off the diversion mouth like an over 10 m high waterfall.

Although it had rained several times in the past 1 month, today's rain was the heaviest.

"Tell Liu Xing, the survival training comes to an end. They don't need to leave the airboat today. We will fly towards Pingsha Valley..." Zhang Tie turned around and told someone to notice Liu Xing and the other apprentices after thinking for a few seconds.

Over the past 1 month, Zhang Tie had reached his target. His disciples had been looked like coming out of the same sect. All of them had been able to coordinate with each other with a very good atmosphere of teamwork. Liu Xing also gained his prestige as the other apprentices' first senior fellow apprentice. All of them had practiced and been familiar with what they needed to experience. They even brought back 134 heads of bloody figures. Even his two nephews had accomplished the march with their team in the last 10 days. Zhang Chengxu was decisive. He carried back all the heads of bloody figures in the last 10 days. By contrast, Zhang Chengze looked a bit introversive; however, he could also bear hardships. Zhang Tie knew that the two brothers would polish their surging points 2 hours a day in their own bedrooms after they came back.

If it was in peaceful times, Zhang Tie didn't want to have his two nephews touch such bloody things. However, it was in the holy war, even if a boy didn't go to the battlefield, he should also touch something relevant. If Zhang family's disciples would pass out at the sight of blood, how could they protect the undertakings of Jinwu City and Jinwu Business Group?

When they received Zhang Tie's order, Liu Xing had just adjusted the members' distribution of the two teams. Those who were slightly wounded yesterday would gather at the end of the teams. Everybody had just put on raincoats which were especially for wild operations. When they received Zhang Tie's order from a bodyguard of Bai Suxian, everybody became a bit dumbfounded at the beginning. However, after confirming that it was not a joke, everybody cheered up as they exclaimed and jumped...

It finally came to an end.

Honestly, over the past 1 month, they had borne many hardships. However, nobody complained about it. Many people bore it while gritting their teeth. It was like how those students in school suddenly received the news that they would have a holiday from today onwards. What a big surprise!

"Ahh, I can finally have a lie-in!" Zhu Dabiao who looked much thinner than before hurriedly put off his raincoat as he walked towards his own cabin.

"Dabiao, where are you going?" Sun Zhan shouted.

"Senior fellow apprentice Sun, I will have a nap in my cabin!" Zhu Dabiao who looked spirited just now couldn't stand having a yawn.

"Are you kidding me? It's less than 1 hour's trip from Pingsha Valley!"

"It's okay. Half an hour's nap is enough. One moment in the morning is worth 1,000 gold coins. Senior Fellow Apprentice Sun,



I've been thin in the past 1 month!" Zhu Dabiao said as he pinched the fat over his waist with a painful look.

Some female disciples burst out into laughter at once.

"You're thin? You ate 3 people's food whenever we got prey in the wild!" Sun Zhan mumbled.

"When there's a chance, I will invite Senior Fellow Apprentice Sun to have a big meal!"

Not only Zhu Dabiao, but even some female disciples had also returned to their own cabins after hearing the news.

"Junior Sister Apprentice Zhou, you're also going to have a nap?" Sun Zhan shouted.

Among the 7 disciples who were enrolled by Zhang Tie at the beginning, Sun Zhan was the most active and humorous one. Therefore, he got along well with all the other disciples.

"Senior Fellow Apprentice Sun, we will go back...to change clothes..." Junior Sister Apprentice Zhou replied with a blush.

Sun Zhan smirked as he asked, "Junior Sister Apprentice Zhou, tell me which junior fellow apprentice have you fallen in love with? I will be a matchmaker for you!"

"Senior Fellow Apprentice Sun, you're too bad, I will not tell you..."

After being teased by Sun Zhan, Junior Sister Apprentice Zhou's face turned redder as she left out of there. Some high-spirited and audacious female disciples even rolled their eyes at Sun Zhan. Whatever, they all knew that Senior Fellow Apprentice Sun was not bad and didn't always grow angry over trivial matters.

Almost all the female disciples had left in a split second. Sun Zhan was curious about the reason as a hand patted onto his shoulder heavily. Sun Zhan knew that was Ma Kuicheng's big hand without turning around. At the same time, Ma Kuicheng told Sun

Zhan in a secret way, "Don't you know that beauty is more important than life for all the women? Over the past 1 month, these junior sister apprentices have worn the military uniforms too much; especially when they saw the wife of their master stay on the master's side every day like a peony blossom. If you didn't let them dress up at this moment, they would fight you to death!"

Sun Zhan understood it right away.

...

Zhang Tie also heard the cheers of his disciples. He suddenly recalled how happy he was when he heard that they would have one week's holiday for the 50th anniversary of the founding of Andaman Alliance when he was in the 2nd grade of the No. 5 Male Middle School of Blackhot City...

'How long have I not experienced such a simple and direct pleasure?'

At that moment, Zhang Tie was poor. He could only have a few copper coins per day. His battle strength was very poor and he dreamt about lighting his Shrine surging point one day. Additionally, he didn't have a woman. He just had a blush for Miss Daina silently like all the other male boys in the No. 7 Male Middle School.

However, Zhang Tie could easily have such a simple and direct pleasure at that moment. He would always feel delighted for a few more days' holidays at school, a small gift, new clothes or a new pair of leather shoes brought by his elder brother from the troop.

Zhang Tie suddenly realized that the so-called maturity and growth enabled people to not have such a simple and direct pleasure...

At this moment, the airboat had started to rise and flow towards Pingsha Valley in the heavy rain.

At the same time, Zhang Tie heard footsteps as he smelt a faint

fragrance from behind.

Zhang Tie turned around and watched Bai Suxian. He asked, "Do you also think that the higher position a person is, the less happy he would be?"

# Chapter 1080: Being Frank and Honest

---

After hearing Zhang Tie's question, Bai Suxian faintly frowned her beautiful eyebrows. Closely after that, she relieved her frowns and came to the front of Zhang Tie, watching the scenery on the ground flying backward rapidly in the storm with the Zhang Tie. As the airboat gradually ascended, they could only see clouds.

The flickering red caution lights around the airboat made it a beacon in the clouds. Additionally, they warned other aircrafts in the sky to not collide with this airboat.

"Why?" Bai Suxian tilted her head and watched Zhang Tie seriously as if she wanted to discover something from Zhang Tie's face.

Zhang Tie still watched the vast clouds outside the airboat as if he had not noticed Bai Suxian's gaze. Closely after that, he said, "After hearing my apprentices' cheers, I suddenly had such a feeling. I've not been that happy for a long time, even when I gained Fire Dragon Bounty Territory. Just now, I suddenly found that I admired them a bit!"

"Do you know that? Sometimes, I feel that there's another person in your body!" Bai Suxian's words made Zhang Tie's heart slightly race. Zhang Tie tilted his head and looked straight into Bai Suxian's crystal eyes. Bai Suxian revealed a smile as she watched Zhang Tie with her soulful eyes, "Previously I was told that someone had double personalities. I didn't believe in that until I met you. It seems that there are two souls in your body, one belongs to a generous man, the other belongs to a common big boy who desires for a common life. Sometimes, you would be sentimental and romantic..."

No matter how he disguised, Zhang Tie knew that he could not cover his original personality. Even though he disguised as Cui Li, those who were intimate to him could also find something about

his original personality. Whatever, he was Zhang Tie instead of Cui Li. Although the two roles might have similarities in life trajectory and thoughts, they were different from each other.

Would Cui Li prepare candlelight dinner for Bai Suxian? Probably not. However, two days ago, Zhang Tie prepared a candlelight dinner for Bai Suxian and appreciated her for what she had done for him. Zhang Tie prepared all the food by himself when Bai Suxian was cultivating. They chose the canteen in this command module that day. Under the starlights over the sky, Zhang Tie brought Bai Suxian here and gave her a big surprise.

After that candlelight dinner, Zhang Tie told Bai Suxian to not call him master or herself this humble slave anymore. Bai Suxian nodded towards him solemnly as she dropped off her tears.

That night, Bai Suxian was very mad as if she wanted to break herself into pieces and melt with Zhang Tie.

Since that day, Bai Suxian knew that she had indeed entered Zhang Tie's life instead of just appearing on his bed.

The process where two people were acquainted with each other might not be that poetic; however, after staying with each other for a long time, besides making love, they gradually started to fall in love with each other. Zhang Tie started to appreciate Bai Suxian. A man was not a stalk of grass or a tree. In Zhang Tie's eyes, Bai Suxian was his friend, lover and a good assistant. She was reliable and docile. He would feel secure by having Bai Suxian on his back. Therefore, Zhang Tie gradually opened his own world to Bai Suxian. In many cases, he wouldn't disguise on purpose.

"Have you thought about that perhaps there's really another people in my body, another one who's utterly different than Cui Li that you know? That man might be a big boy who only longs for living a common life with his wife without having any ambition..."

"It's the second time for you to talk with me in this way!" Bai Suxian stroke her hair tenderly as she lightly lay in Zhang Tie's

arms, "I'd told you about that. As long as you're not a demon, I don't care. Even if you're a major thief, a criminal being wanted by the Supreme Court and the top 7 sects in Taixia Country, I would stay with you unless you disliked me. If you want to kill demons, I will kill demons; if you want to rob, I will be your watchdog. If you want to f\*ck a woman, I will help you press her on the bed..."

What a soulful woman! After hearing Bai Suxian's reply, Zhang Tie became silent. He could only let out a sigh, "I've not imagined that I'm worth that."

"You're destined to be my hubby. You saved my life. I could give you whatever I have, including my life. You're my Mr. Right. I will follow you for the rest of my life!"

Zhang Tie was not afraid of acting in front of a beauty, he was just afraid of meeting a soulful beauty. The former was a one-night stand, the latter wished him fine, happy and would like to give her life to him; she was already a beautiful scenery in his life, a beautiful stream that flew into his river of destiny and the one who would read his name silently before death. Such a person was worth being treasured and safeguarded soulfully at the cost of his life.

Beverly, Fiona, Linda and Bai Suxian, all of them were the second sort of person.

Beloved ones were rare in the world.

At this moment, many whims occurred to Zhang Tie's mind. All of a sudden, Zhang Tie had an impulsion as he hugged Bai Suxian in his arms before whispering to her, "Actually, you were right. There's indeed another one in my body. I'm not Cui Li. The real Cui Li had died dozens of years ago. I have another name, Zhang Tie, the very one whose order for arrest has been revoked!"

There was always a moment that one didn't think too much. At that moment, he didn't have concerns about interests; he just reflected in case of regret. Zhang Tie didn't know about the result

if he told Bai Suxian about that secret. He only knew that he could share some secrets with this woman.

If a person didn't have any reliable ones and was always alert to others, it would be a grief.

An ambitious person could live in such a condition forever and didn't worry about being schizoid. However, Zhang Tie was not ambitious; neither did he want to live in such a state forever.

If one always lived in such a condition, he would be very tired and had an invisible stress.

After sharing this secret with his beloved one, Zhang Tie felt unprecedentedly relaxed.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Bai Suxian's body slightly quivered. Closely after that, she raised her head and watched Zhang Tie with a shocked and suspicious look as if she was confirming whether Zhang Tie was joking with her or not.

"No way...I've seen the order for the arrest of Zhang Tie the Lion of Youzhou Province...the frames and looks between you..."

As Bai Suxian said, she suddenly widely opened her eyes as she covered her mouth with one hand.

Under her gaze, Zhang Tie's body gave out a faint light. Closely after that, his look and figure slowly waved like ripples and changed into his original look with a bald head in less than half a minute.

Cui Li's clothes didn't fit Zhang Tie at all. It looked a bit hilarious. However, Bai Suxian couldn't laugh at all as what happened shocked her too much.

"It's an ancestral bloodline that I've awakened. I named it body changing immortal bloodline. This bloodline is unique. Even the elders of Huaiyuan Palace don't know about it. I've also grasped a secret method with which I could simulate the efforts of all the other secret methods vividly. The real Cui Li was just a commoner.

He had been killed by Zhu Liang the fierce wolf, one wanted criminal on the wanted list of Supreme Court many years ago. After killing Cui Li, Zhu Liang the fierce wolf had been disguising himself as Cui Li and managing his own business secretly in Yongzhou Province until he was killed by me." Zhang Tie answered Bai Suxian briefly in his original voice as he watched Bai Suxian calmly, "After the tragedy in Fuhai City, I was framed by people and had to escape. Therefore, I disguised as Cui Li. Fortunately, I met you in the Earth-elements Realm..."

Although Zhang Tie had been over 30 years old, he still looked like a 16-year old juvenile.

Given his look simply, Zhang Tie was much younger than many people among his 121 disciples.

Bai Suxian slightly touched Zhang Tie's young face with quivering hands as she sensed Zhang Tie's body temperature.

Previously, Zhang Tie thought that Bai Suxian could barely accept it after knowing his real identity. Out of his imagination, only after maintaining her shocked look for a few seconds, Bai Suxian's eyes had given out an exotic light as she murmured Zhang Tie's poem,

"The beloved one is rare in the world."

"I treat power as sh\*t; I ignore the ridicule of the powerful ones."

"The others are just passers-by, who would not return in the spring after leaving in autumn."

"If I have a beloved one, I wish to be a farmer who grazes cattle in the morning and return with wildflowers in the evening."

"After putting wildflowers on your gray hair, I wish to watch the afterglow with you."

"The one who wrote this poem, the most famous black iron human knight, the young man who grew up in Blackhot City, the Mr. Right of numerous female knights is the husband of I, Bai



Suxian. How handsome he is! Does God bring you to my side..."

As Bai Suxian murmured, her eyes sparkled with a faint blush on her face. She suddenly became a bit shy like a little girl as she felt bashful to look straight into Zhang Tie's eyes.

Honestly, it was Zhang Tie's first time to see how Bai Suxian became bashful after staying with her for so long.

"Will...will you...desert me because of my age..."

The moment Bai Suxian uttered in a bit intense voice, Zhang Tie became stunned as he realized that they were not thinking about the same thing at all...

# Chapter 1081: Being Clear-minded

---

If Zhang Tie was drinking at this moment, he must be choked by Bai Suxian.

'I told this woman my secret; however, this woman is worried about being abandoned because of her age.'

It seemed that this woman had not thought what Zhang Tie was worried about. What she was really worried about shocked Zhang Tie a bit.

However, Zhang Tie knew that Bai Suxian was not kidding with him. She was intense for sure. Like all the other women, although Bai Suxian was a female knight, she still didn't pay her full attention to her battle strength. If Zhang Tie covered his real identity in front of Bai Suxian, she might be narrow-minded and do anything possible when she discovered that secret.

"No, I won't!" Zhang Tie replied with a solemn look.

"Really?" Bai Suxian asked.

"Really. Otherwise, how could we stay with each other at this moment? With body changing immortal bloodline, I could change my figure instead of my appreciation of beauty and insight!" Zhang Tie pulled Bai Suxian's hand and kissed it before watching Bai Suxian with a serious look, "Additionally, you don't look old at all. You look as mature and womanly like Linda."

"Who's Linda?"

"One of my wives!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Bai Suxian's face glowed with health. She didn't care about the fact that Zhang Tie had wives at all; instead, she approached to Zhang Tie's face and kissed him before revealing a smile by covering her mouth with a hand like a bashful little girl, which fascinated Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie was really speechless after knowing that Bai Suxian accepted his original identity so fast in such a way. He didn't know whether he was thinking too much or Bai Suxian was too special who liked young men previously. His original look even made her more excited.

However, he didn't need to care about this question anymore.

Not until she watched Zhang Tie from his head to his toe with a fascinated look did Bai Suxian recall something, "Oh, have your order for arrest been canceled? Why did you not reveal your original look to the public?"

Zhang Tie replied with a faint frown, "I have some concerns!"

"What concerns?"

"The culprit of the tragedy in Fuhai City has not been caught yet. Additionally, this event in Zhongzhou Province was also caused by the same culprit. The culprit's power is fully out of my imagination. Additionally, he has many arrangements in Taixia Country. The moment my real identity is exposed, my movement will be too eye-catching in Taixia Country..." Zhang Tie then revealed another shocking news to Bai Suxian after being silent for a few seconds, "Additionally, I've almost confirmed that that culprit colluded with demons and is hiding in Xuanyuan Hill. He's one of the top 9 chancellors in Taixia Country. That man might be the mysterious founder of Heavens Reaching Church who has not shown his face yet. With the identity of Cui Li, I could search for the clues of that culprit secretly in case of arousing his attention. If I revealed my real identity, I might not do that!"

Apparently, Bai Suxian was startled by Zhang Tie's news. Compared to the secret that Zhang Tie had awakened his body changing immortal bloodline, the secret that Zhang Tie could simulate the effects of the other secret methods sounded like detonating a nuclear bomb.

'One of the top nine chancellors in Xuanyuan Hill might be the

most mysterious founder of Heavens Reaching Church and might be colluding with demons and setting up bloody seas in all the provinces across Taixia Country.' The moment this news was exposed to the public, it would arouse a great shock for sure.

Bai Suxian didn't ask how Zhang Tie got this news. Because she knew that Zhang Tie was not rash. Even when they fought shoulder to shoulder in the Earth-elements Realm, Zhang Tie was not rash, not to mention now. Additionally, now that Zhang Tie had revealed his real identity to her, he would never make such a joke with her. As long as this news was exposed to the public, it would arouse a great trouble, which was not good for Zhang Tie or her.

Bai Suxian didn't ask how Zhang Tie confirmed that there was some problem with one of the top nine chancellors in Taixia Country. As a clear woman, she knew that everyone had secrets. Even Lord Guangnan, her dad would not tell everything to her, not to mention others. What Zhang Tie had told her today had satisfied her very much. She knew that Zhang Tie had treated her as his beloved one.

After thinking a while, Bai Suxian's face turned unprecedentedly solemn, "What's your plan now? Will you keep the identity of Cui Li for the rest of your life?"

Zhang Tie shook his head as he revealed a bitter smile, "Previously, I felt that the culprit would let go Huaiyuan Palace and my family members as long as I didn't show my face. However, what happened at the city gate of Jinwu City a few days ago warned me that it was more sophisticated than that I could imagine. That culprit still assigned killers to Jinwu City to assassinate my dad and almost made it. I found that I could not avoid from something only by hiding myself. Lately, I was also thinking whether that culprit would be scared of me and not aim at Huaiyuan Palace and Zhang Clan if I exposed my real identity, the fact that I've promoted to an earth knight and awakened an

immortal bloodline to the public!"

"Are you regretful?"

"A bit!" Zhang Tie put it straight. He didn't feel anything shameful at all. He just watched the clouds outside the airboat with a vacant look as he continued in a low and angry voice, "During these years when I escaped, I always thought about this question. I'm just a small black iron knight. There are at least 200,000 people like me in Taixia Country. Why am I so f\*cking unfortunate? Why did I meet such an event soon after I came to Taixia Country? Why did I offend such a powerful one who wants to kill me as fast as possible? Through consideration, I found only one reason, namely, I've absolutely offended that person when I killed the shadow demon and inflicted a great loss to the Heavens Reaching Church in Youzhou Province when I served as the chief justice of the Youzhou Provincial Court. He felt a bit threat from me; therefore, he framed me!"

"Damn, if I have long known that the situation in Taixia Country is so sophisticated, I would not be that desperate when I came to Taixia Country at the beginning. I could adopt the Gobbling Party as my enemy because the animosity was left by my ancestor. As a descendant of Huaiyuan Palace, as long as I have the blood of my ancestor, I have to revenge for Huaiyuan Palace no matter how difficult it is. But why do I offend Heavens Reaching Church?"

"The chaos in Taixia has nothing to do with me. The rebel of that culprit has nothing to do with me. Whether the founder of Heavens Reaching Church wants to be Emperor Xuanyuan has nothing to do with me. The death of numerous commoners has nothing to do with me. In each holy war, numerous people would be killed. This father has witnessed the death of hundreds of millions of people and the perdition of over 100 human countries in Waii Subcontinent. I've climbed out of the piles of corpses so many times safe and sound, even if many people would die in Youzhou Province, it has nothing to do with me."

"Even the moguls in Xuanyuan Hill, the major clans, the Gobbling Party, the imperial prince, the top 7 sects and the missing Emperor Xuanyuan are not anxious about these events, why am I anxious about it? Who the f\*ck am I? Why do I involve in such a mire? Even my family members would be involved. I even became a wanted criminal across Taixia Country and could only hide here and there every day. I almost lost my life. If I have known about this result, this father would have returned to my home and live a peaceful life with my family members and just play Taichi Fist Position with commoners every day!"

"If Taixia Country really perished, I would escape away with my family members. I would take away as many people as possible with my full effort. Whatever, my family escaped all the way from another subcontinent. It's nothing serious for us to escape one more time. This father doesn't owe any copper coin to Taixia Country. Why do I worry about Taixia Country so much? Why would I be wronged out of no reason in Taixia country and escape like a dog? A few years ago, I couldn't even see my family members. I've not even seen my sons yet. My parents have been old. They are worried about me everyday. My dad was almost assassinated and could almost not see me for the last time. Most of my mom's hair has turned white these 4 years. F\*ck..."

Zhang Tie finally vented his discontent and chagrin which had buried in his heart for so many years at that moment. When he mentioned that his dad was almost assassinated and his mom's hair had turned white, Zhang Tie's eyes turned red as he almost dropped off his tears. If he didn't say it, very few people in Taixia Country could understand him. If he could stay with his family members, who the f\*ck would like to be wanted criminals? Who the f\*ck would like to live in a fake identity? Zhang Tie felt especially sorry for his family members' concern about him...

Men would not cry unless they were touched in one aspect.

Watching Zhang Tie dropping his tears, Bai Suxian dropped off

her tears too. At this moment, Bai Suxian felt her heart aching like being burned by a burning joss stick. It ached too much. It was Bai Suxian's first time to drop tears for a man in her life...

Bai Suxian didn't understand how many burdens Zhang Tie shouldered until this moment. In others' eyes, this man looked prestigious and happy; however, very few people in Taixia Country could understand how painful, aggrieved and guilty this man was and what a great stress and pain this man was sustaining when his poem "The Beloved Ones" spread over Taixia country and he was wanted by the Supreme Court although he had made great meritorious deeds in Taixia Country.

Bai Suxian felt that she indeed understood her beloved man at this moment. This man was real, venerable, adorable and made Bai Suxian treasure him very much.

Bai Suxian smiled with tears as she helped Zhang Tie to wipe off his tears, "I see, you're angry about that. I know that you would do that too if time went by even if it's dangerous. You did that so as to save a few more commoners like those that you knew in Blackhot City, including your neighbors, juveniles who grew up with you and your teachers and students at the school. You will not watch them die in front of you or being killed by someone else, will you?"

Zhang Tie became silent as he realized Bai Suxian was right. He was indeed venting his discontent just now. If time really flew by, when he knew that Heavens Reaching Church would cause trouble in Youzhou Province and that Master Jiang was a shadow demon, he would absolutely eliminate these scumbags without any hesitation, sparing no chance to them. It was too empty and hypocritical if he said that he did this for Taixia Country; however, Zhang Tie really didn't want to see those commoners being involved in the dark forces and die innocently as cannon fodder.

Bai Suxian's words touched Zhang Tie completely.

In this world, nothing was predictable. There might be great

darkness in brightness. Similarly, there might be surprises in the dilemma.

If he met his sons, Zhang Tie would tell them, "The one who poisoned you with love potion in the Earth-elements Realm might also be your first lover in Taixia Country."

Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh. After venting his discontent, Zhang Tie felt a bit relaxed and suddenly became clear-minded. He thought through something and became decisive at once.

Zhang Tie wiped off Bai Suxian's tears tenderly as he said, "When we finished our task, we would return to Fire Dragon Bounty Territory to live happily. Taixia Country is so large. Some things could not be determined by me. In my position, if I think too much, I'm just seeking trouble myself. We only need to reflect ourselves and adjust to changing circumstances. 3 years later, after you observed mourning for your grandma, I would go to Lord Guangnan's Mansion to seek a marriage alliance and marry you. How about that?"

Bai Suxian watched Zhang Tie as she couldn't help bursting out into laughter and nodding forcefully. Although she dreamed about this day too, she couldn't mention it on her own initiative because she was afraid that this man looked down upon her. Therefore, she was pretty hesitated. She had not imagined that this day could come so fast. In the wink of an eye, her expectation had become reality as Bai Suxian was immersed in sweetness and happiness once again.

It was still cloudy and rainy outside the airboat while thunders could be faintly heard. After looking at the scenery outside the airboat once again, Zhang Tie became clear-minded and a bit relaxed at once. With a faint smile and a pair of profound sparkling eyes, he seemed to be able to see through the future...

They would arrive at Pingsha Valley in less than 1 hour...



# Chapter 1082: The Ghost Region in the Future

---

Pingsha Valley was about 300 miles away from their place of departure.

When they set off, it was heavily raining; when they arrived at Pingsha Valley, it was still cloudy; however, the rain had eased off. It was only drizzling.

The Iron-Dragon Airboat flew across the clouds and slowly descended from tens of thousands meters high. When it reached hundreds of meters high above the ground, it slowly moved forward.

Zhang Tie had convened all of his disciples in the airboat. All the male disciples were still wearing a set of military clothes which were specially designed for field operations. However, those female disciples had put on beautiful dresses. After dressing up, they looked beautiful, elegant, coquettish and cute in front of Zhang Tie's eyes.

All the female disciples were glancing at Bai Suxian and Zhang Tie silently.

Bai Suxian's beautiful look, coquetry and dress were imitated by many female disciples.

Those careful female disciples found that the relationship between Bai Suxian and their master was a bit different than before. It was hard to describe that feeling. They felt that Bai Suxian and Fire Dragon Hermit had a silent privity; especially the soulful and coquettish eyes of Bai Suxian when she saw their master. Additionally, their master's eyes also turned tender when he saw Bai Suxian. They looked like a couple.

"Are we in Pingsha Valley?" Bai Suxian muttered.

The airboat had already entered Pingsha Valley and was slowly

flying above Pingsha Valley. They could see everything in Pingsha Valley from the airboat. Not only Zhang Tie but all of his apprentices were also watching this place with their eyes widely opened.

In the drizzle, it looked tranquil in Pingsha Valley. The entire Pingsha Valley was covered in the drizzle as if no battle had happened here. In the rain, the woods on both hillsides of Pingsha Valley were vigorous and verdant. Reclaimed farmlands crisscrossed in Pingsha Valley.

If nobody told them that they were in Pingsha Valley, they could not imagine what a terrifying event had happened here one month ago.

When they watched it carefully, they could still find the traces of that terrifying event more or less.

On the day the event broke out in Pingsha Valley, the entire Bi'an Camp in Zhongzhou Province had almost sacrificed. None of the native farmers and commoners could survive. Therefore, it looked deadly silent in Pingsha Valley. No living beings could survive in the crisscrossed farmlands, including domestic animals. There was no smoke in the looming villages at all. There were still faintly messy traces left by the disordered soldiers in the farmlands where grew vegetables and grains. As nobody took care of the crops, some weeds had grown out.

Perhaps too many people had died here, plus that it was cloudy today, many disciples of Zhang Tie felt that it was gloomy and chilly in Pingsha Valley.

Unsurprisingly, they saw another airboat suspending in the rain in front of them. It seemed that they were not the only group of people who felt like paying a visit here.

Being much smaller than Iron-Dragon Airboat, that airboat was over 100 m in length. It was golden all over. There was a round sign of black tiger's head on the airboat which indicated the

identity of the owner of this airboat. However, as Taixia Country was too large, Zhang Tie, Bai Suxian and the other people on Iron-Dragon Airboat couldn't identify the identity of the owner of this airboat.

However, there was one point that they could confirm, namely, those in this airboat were definitely not commoners.

The ground in Pingsha Valley was both plain and spacious. In the sky, Zhang Tie, Bai Suxian and his disciples had already seen a deserted castle and a huge hole on the ground of the castle which led to the underground. The golden airboat was suspending above there.

Compared to that golden airboat, undoubtedly Iron-Dragon Airboat which Zhang Tie won from Taiyi Fantasy Sect was more frightening.

Watching Iron-Dragon Airboat slowly drawing closer to them, the golden airboat even moved a bit away from the huge hole so as to show their respect. However, Iron-Dragon Airboat didn't draw too close to them. It suspended a few meters above the ground when it was over 200 m away from that golden airboat.

Thankfully, the ground in Pingsha Valley was plain. The periphery of the castle was surrounded by farmlands where was spacious enough to hold Iron-Dragon Airboat. Otherwise, such an over 500 m long giant could not be easily parked.

"Let's go down there!" Zhang Tie called all the others.

Many disciples of Zhang Tie came from major clans in Northeast Military Region. However, they didn't have a convenient traffic tool like airboat to come to Zhongzhou Province like Zhang Tie. However, they all paid attention to what happened in Pingsha Valley. Zhang Tie would like to show his disciples what had happened here so that they could gain the first-hand information. When they went back home, they could tell their family members about what happened here as an indirect benefit of Iron-Dragon

Sect.

The airboat suspended a few meters above the ground. When one side door of the airboat opened, they dropped off the gangway. Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian got off the airboat, closely followed by their disciples.

It was still drizzling. However, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian didn't need to wear raincoats at all. They just released their protective battle qi to isolate the raindrops.

Watching the handsome looks of Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian, Zhang Tie's disciples admired them pretty much as they all swallowed their saliva forcefully.

After promoting to knights, people could fly and isolate fire and water. How great they were!

In the drizzle, the gangway touched the road which was paved with bluestones leading to the deserted castle. Besides waterlogging, the road was not muddy. Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian walked towards the deserted castle followed by their disciples.

"It smells bloody..." Bai Suxian slightly frowned after walking a few footsteps as she told Zhang Tie.

Knights' senses were much sharper than commoners.

"When the event broke out, tens of thousands of people died in the valley. This place had almost been covered with corpses and blood over 1 month ago. Although it was cleaned up, the bloody smell had still penetrated into each inch of soil and could not fade away in a few years. It's a bit better in rainy days; however, on sunny days, it would smell worse. In the evening, this place might be filled with wildfires and chilly, gloomy winds, which would make this place more terrifying. Look at the ground, the wide area of deep, brown parts on the bluestone slabs are blood stains. As human blood could fertilize the soil. Next year, the weeds would grow more luxuriant. Weeds that grow up in human blood are

gloomier. Fewer commoners dare come here any more. In a few years, Pingsha Valley would be a ghost region. Perhaps only major thieves and criminals would hide here for the time being..."

Zhang Tie said in normal volume. Of course, Liu Xing and all the other disciples had heard it. After hearing Zhang Tie's words, all of his disciples carefully checked the bluestone slabs at their foot. When they found that almost the entire road was covered with bloodstains, many people turned pale at once.

After a few minutes, they had passed the hundreds of meters long bluestone road and arrived at the entrance of the black hole.

Given the look of the deserted castle, only a small part of it was destroyed in the battle. Unimaginably, the greater part of it was demolished by people.

After entering the entrance of the underground tunnel, as it was pitch-dark inside, Zhang Tie's disciples took out their portable fluorite lamps. Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian didn't take anything. As for Bai Suxian who had experienced in Earth-elements Realm and Liu Xing and the other 6 black-armored fighters who had served in Earth-elements Realm, most of them would use a vial of long-lasting night-viewing medicament, the effect of which could last about 1 year. This kind of long-lasting night-viewing medicament could not be used constantly. The interval between two vials should be over 1 month in case of negative impact to their eyes and battle strength.

Bai Suxian and the 7 black-armored fighters didn't need night-viewing medicament, not to mention Zhang Tie. Everybody at present including Bai Suxian thought that Zhang Tie had used night-viewing medicament. Zhang Tie didn't explain it to them either.

Compared to that in the outside, this underground tunnel looked cleaner and tidier. Besides some dust, there were no bloodstains on the stone steps.

The moment Zhang Tie entered the underground tunnel, he had heard a young voice from the depth of the underground tunnel.

"Those guys from the Supreme Court were too vicious. All the useful items in Pingsha Valley have been moved away, on the ground and underground, leaving nothing to us. Previously, I thought that I could take a look at the simplified bloody sea. I've not imagined that it was just a huge pit, leaving nothing inside, even a drop of blood. Boring!"

"Blood Sea is of great significance. Additionally, it violated God's will. Many people are paying attention to it. Do you think that we could catch a sight of that thing? I feel that those guys from the Supreme Court have been respecting all forces in Taixia Country much enough by leaving the tunnel complete!" Another young voice drifted from the depth of the tunnel.

"Heheheh, I'm afraid that the Supreme Court wanted to collapse this hole too; however, those people who really want to take a look inside could even dig another tunnel. The Supreme Court might also understand that it's useless to do that. Additionally, it would incur complaints about them. They could keep some strength and alchemist's bombs for bloody figures!"

The first voice sounded once again.

"Shh, someone's coming down..."

An old voice sounded. The two young voices shut up at once...

# Chapter 1083: Black Tiger Palace

---

5 minutes later, the two parties encountered in the underground tunnel. Zhang Tie's team was going downstairs while the other party was going upstairs.

There were totally 123 people on Zhang Tie's side; however, there were only 5 people in the opposite, an old man with silver hair, a middle-aged man with a common look and 3 young men at their 20s.

'Earth Knight?'

'Earth knight!'

The moment Zhang Tie and that old man caught sight of each other, they had realized that the opposite was an earth knight. However, the old man was more shocked than Zhang Tie. The look of Cui Li was too young even as an earth knight. Earth knights at 30s were rarely seen. Additionally, Cui Li's terrifying tower-like figure and aggressive bald head were pretty oppressive.

Bai Suxian's look was also very outstanding. As a result, the 5 strangers couldn't stand paying more attention to her. Besides being a bit mild in front of Zhang Tie, Bai Suxian's elegant and noble movements sorted with her identity as the princess of Lord Guangnan's Mansion very well.

The middle-aged man on one side of the old man was also a black iron knight. The two knights were followed by some young men, too.

After sensing each other's situation, Zhang Tie and that old man nodded towards each other with a smile. After that, they passed by each other silently.

The middle-aged man on one side of the old man raised his head and threw a deep glance at Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie's team continued to walk downstairs; the old man's

team continued to walk upstairs.

When they approached the ground and saw the light at the entrance of the cave, the old man tilted his head and asked that middle-aged man, "What about him?"

When the average-look middle-aged man heard the old man's question, he turned his head and said seriously, "Powerful, very powerful. That man is not only an earth knight, but he has also killed at least 2 earth demon knights and over 10 black iron demon knights..."

"At least 2 demon knights and over 10 black iron demon knights?" The old man took a deep breath. The 3 young men on their sides exchanged a glance with each other before changing their faces at the same time, "So many, are you sure?"

"Second Uncle, believe in me. The ancestral bloodline that I've awakened could help me observe the special killing qis left by those demon knights in that man's qi field. The more demon knights he killed, the stronger and more well-bedded the killing qis would be. The killing qis in his qi field are too terrifying. Additionally, I could sense that this man has killed much more demon knights than that!"

"But I've not heard about such a terrifying earth-level powerhouse in Taixia Country." The young man who opened his mouth just now asked with an amazed look, "He must be famous in the Earth-elements Realm!"

"Even the woman's qi field contains some killing qis of black iron demon knights. Additionally, her perfume Dew of Moonlight came from the imperial financial and living affairs department in Taixia Country, which is specially designed for the imperial harem in Xuanyuan Hill and the wives of lords. Commoners could not use it at all. The two people are definitely not common..."

"Taixia Country is so large. There're always many nameless powerhouses!" The old man frowned as he waved his hand and



said, "Let's talk about it back in the airboat..."

The moment they exited the entrance, they had seen the 500-m longer Iron-Dragon Airboat suspending near there in a domineering way like a far-ancient fierce beast. They were shocked immediately. Of course, those who came here by airboat knew that such a large airboat could not be bought in the market. Only imperial households, top 7 sects, some super clans, those moguls in Xuanyuan Hill and Lords' clans across Taixia Country could have such a large airboat.

After throwing a few glances at Iron-Dragon Airboat, they returned to their own airboat.

The moment they boarded the airboat, the old man immediately told a young man, "Zhixuan, contact our clan and let them check the intelligence from Northeast Military Region, especially about sects!"

"Northeast Military Region? Second granduncle, why do you suddenly pay attention to Northeast Military Region? Especially the sects over there? I remember that there are only Immortal Fist Position Sect and some small-and medium-sized sects over there..." The young man called Zhixuan asked the old man with an amazed look while the other two people on his side watched the grand elder with dubious looks.

As the old man wanted to broaden the vision of these young disciples in his clan, he explained it very patiently instead of angrily, "You don't have knight's consciousness. Therefore, you don't have sharp perceptions. Before I met them, I've heard those young men behind them whispering to each other in the tone of Youzhou and Yanzhou Provinces in Northeast Military Region. Additionally, those young men called each other senior and junior fellow apprentices. Additionally, most of those young men came from rich and aristocratic clans. Even the man and the woman should be the elders in their sect, if not their masters. Sects outside Northeast Military Region would not enroll disciples from

Northeast Military Region."

After hearing that, those young men watched the old man with admirable looks. His words implied his rich experience and intelligence. When those young men were guessing about the backgrounds of that team of strangers, their second granduncle had already speculated the backgrounds of that team of strangers.

Their airboat soon set off.

About 10 minutes later, the young man called Zhixuan received an intelligence. Holding a piece of paper, he walked into the command module of the airboat with a reverent look

——Cui Li the Fire Dragon Hermit held an opening ceremony of Fire-Dragon Sect within the territory of Fire Dragon Bounty Territory of Northeast Military Region on August 18. Additionally, he defeated Nangong Sheng, the master of Immortal Fist Position Sect who has entered the supreme realm of integrating his fist with the weather on the same day. It was said that Cui Li the Fire Dragon Hermit gained insight in his fist position when fighting Nangong Sheng and also entered the terrifying supreme realm of integrating his fist position with the climate.

——In the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect, Fire Dragon Hermit even took out 18 secret pearls as a gift, which shocked them pretty much.

——On the battlefield between humans and demons in Earth-elements Realm, Fire Dragon Hermit killed a shadow demon earth knight and was awarded Fire Dragon Bounty Territory.

——Over 1 month ago, Fire Dragon Hermit left Fire Dragon Bounty Territory by airboat with his 121 disciples.

——In a tall and sturdy figure, Fire Dragon Hermit has a domineering look with an eye-catching bald head. Bai Suxian the princess of Lord Guangnan's Mansion always glues with Fire Dragon Hermit. They have left Fire Dragon Bounty Territory.

——It's said that Fire Dragon Hermit won the airboat from Feng Yexiao, one of the 4 elders of Taiyi Fantasy Sect in the Earth-elements Realm. The details are not clear.

After combining these messages, everybody knew that they had met Fire Dragon Hermit's team underground just now. That man must be Cui Li the Fire Dragon Hermit; that woman must be Bai Suxian the princess of Lord Guangnan's Mansion.

After reading this intelligence, the old man revealed a bitter smile as he let out a sigh, "I've not imagined that there's such a powerful dragon in Northeast Military Region. Pitifully, our Black Tiger Palace have missed a chance to establish a relationship with Iron-Dragon Sect..."

"Second Granduncle, will we..."

After thinking a short while, the old man shook his head before replying, "If we catch up with them from behind, we might be despised by them. Tell our business groups to pay more attention to Iron-Dragon Sect in Northeast Military Region. As long as there's an opportunity, the young disciples of our clan could join Iron-Dragon Sect and learn some battle skills from Fire Dragon Hermit. With one more friend, our clan would have one more way in Northeast Military Region..."

"Second Granduncle, will we go to the Gold and Power Market now?"

"Of course! This year's Treasures Meeting will be held in Gold and Power Market. Once every 7 years! As Gold and Power Law also has a great influence in other continents and subcontinent, the Treasures Meeting in Gold and Power Market will collect various treasures from all directions. If we're fortunate, we could buy some good overseas items at lower prices! Of course, our Black Tiger Palace should take a round over there..."

All the 3 young men became thrilled with interested looks.

The old man and that average-looking middle-aged knight watched the sky outside the airboat with solemn looks. Their thought was similar to Zhang Tie——what if there's such a bloody sea in each province?

The moment this whim occurred to their minds, the two people had exchanged a glance with each other as they all noticed a bit concern in each other's eyes...

"Our Black Tiger Palace should make preparations in case of an emergency. Emperor Xuanyuan is missing. Many things are unreliable. The moment Taixia Country is in great chaos..." The middle-aged knight said in a secret way.

After being silent for a while, the old man slowly nodded...

...

The airboat of Black Tiger Palace flew away. Zhang Tie's team was still walking downstairs in a casual way.

"Aye, is your perfume called Dew of Moonlight?" Zhang Tie suddenly asked Bai Suxian in a secret means.

# Chapter 1084: The Amazing Ability of Lotus-Flower Eyes

---

After hearing Zhang Tie's question, Bai Suxian widely opened her eyes out of amazement as she asked in a secret way, "Ahh, how do you know that?"

"Hmm, someone told me!" Zhang Tie winked at her.

The 5 people of Black Tiger Palace could not imagine that the contents of their talks had been clearly drifted into Zhang Tie's ears. After promoting to an earth knight, Zhang Tie's perceptions had entered a terrifying level.

"Hmm, the entire Lord Guangnan's Mansion could only get a very small amount of Dew of Moonlight from the imperial financial and living affairs department per year. The Dew of Moonlight is very precious. Besides being fragrant, it also has a lot of marvelous effects. I've brought all the Dew of Moonlight here. I would never leave even a bit to Fang Xinyi, the foxtrel. When I treated her as my bosom friend, I even shared some Dew of Moonlight with her!" Bai Suxian said with a furious look.

Zhang Tie smiled as he felt that a woman was pretty cute when she hated another one.

"The all-purpose medicament is also not bad. You can have a try when you're free. Jinwu Business Group has already developed a suite of all-purpose medicament, especially for women. When I come back to Fire Dragon Bounty Territory, I will have my elder brother send some to you!"

"Ahh, I know that. Rose Beauty Series is very good. When I came back home, I was told that the imperial financial and living affairs department of Xuanyuan Hill were customizing some top all-purpose medicaments from Jinwu Business Group for Xuanyuan Hill. Those top all-purpose medicaments have been shared within

Xuanyuan Hill. Very few of them could enter lords' mansions." Bai Suxian said with sparkling eyes.

Zhang Tie knew it too. Over these years, his elder brother had been establishing a relationship with the imperial financial and living affairs department of Xuanyuan Hill.

It was weird. The culprit who set me up in Fuhai City was one of the top 9 chancellors in Taixia Country. The imperial financial and living affairs department was also one of the top 9 chancellors' agencies. As a private department of Emperor Xuanyuan and the imperial households of Taixia Country, it was equal to the super private steward of the imperial households of Taixia Country, which was responsible for managing the finance, taxation, land, water irrigation, imperial clothes, jewelries, food, medicines, antiques, tools, vehicles, craftsmen, construction, colorful paintings and lights in Xuanyuan Hill.

Honestly, everything that was produced in the imperial financial and living affairs department was the best among humans. Because of the specialty of the all-purpose medicament, even Xuanyuan Hill demanded it. Therefore, Zhang Yang could establish a commercial tie with a Class 3 supervisor in the department. The raw materials of the top all-purpose medicament produced in Jinwu City were all provided by the imperial financial and living affairs department of Xuanyuan Hill. Jinwu Business Group was responsible for fermentation and cold extraction. After the top all-purpose medicament was produced in Jinwu City, they would be specially provided for the imperial financial and living affairs department of Xuanyuan Hill instead of entering the markets with the symbol of manjusaka as the sacrifice for imperials households.

The Class 3 supervisor in the imperial financial and living affairs department served as a Class 4 officer previously and was only responsible for the food, drinks and fruits in the harem of Xuanyuan Hill. Because of the relationship between the officer and the supplier of the top all-purpose medicament, this officer won

the praise of those concubines and noble women in the harem of Xuanyuan Hill. In the past 4 years, he promoted from Class 4 to Class 3. With a rapidly growing power, he also enjoyed a greater influence in the imperial financial and living affairs department and could always communicate with the noble people in the harem of Xuanyuan Hill.

'My elder brother wants to slowly increase the influence of Huaiyuan Palace through this relationship and help me reverse my case in Xuanyuan Hill. Unexpectedly, after the event of Zhongzhou Province, being commonly affected by the series of events, the Supreme Court had already revoked the arrest order on its own initiative before this relationship took effect.'

"From then on, you can enjoy those top all-purpose medicament as much as you want!"

"That's great!" Bai Suxian became thrilled at once. She directly kissed Zhang Tie's cheek without caring about the looks of Zhang Tie's disciples.

His disciples didn't even know why their master's wife was so happy. They just pretended to have not seen that as they exchanged glances with each other in a curious and ambiguous way. After that, they continued to walk downstairs after Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian.

The underground tunnel had been cleaned. At least there was no gravel in the tunnel. However, they could see evident traces, the gravels on both sides of the tunnel and some broken steel bars near the passes left by knight-level powerhouses by force 1 month ago,

Zhang Tie's disciples couldn't gain any information from the ruins; however, Zhang Tie could identify the battle strength of those people who rushed downstairs 1 month ago given the traces. Meng Haishan the chief justice of Zhongzhou Provincial Court might have joined the battle himself.

As they walked downstairs, the bloody and stinky smell in the air

became stronger. It smelt as disgusting as a slaughterhouse which had been sealed for dozens of years.

Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian could hold breath for a few hours in this environment. Even if they breathed, their bearing capabilities were several times stronger than that of commoners. By contrast, many disciples of Zhang Tie felt dizzy and breathless as their faces turned pale the moment they smelt the strong bloody smell.

At this moment, Liu Xing who had rich experience in dealing with this situation took out a vial of exotic ointment and daubed a bit of it onto the part below his nose. Closely after that, he passed it to the others, "This is taste-erasing refreshing ointment. You can daub a bit onto the philtrum!"

"Ahh, the first senior fellow apprentice is really considerate!"

"According to master, the bloody sea was located here; additionally, the knight-level powerhouses of the Supreme Court have killed over 10,000 bloody figures here. Even though they have moved away from the corpses, they could still not clean up the bloody smell. It might even arouse a special bloody plague in the worst scenario, under that circumstances, people might be poisoned after breathing a few times. In the Earth-elements Realm, a lot of caves and regions are affected by the bloody plague; therefore, I prepared for some ointment in advance!"

After hearing Liu Xing's explanation, Zhang Tie nodded inside. Bai Suxian also threw a smile at Zhang Tie. The other disciples of Zhang Tie approved the position of their first senior fellow apprentice too.

Soon after other disciples daubed the ointment on their philtrum, they had felt a bit cold on their philtrum. Closely after that, an exotic fragrance of herbal medicine stimulated their noses. After sneezing, they all felt clear-minded at once. The bloody smell also became less disgusting.

After a short while, they had come to the bottom of the hole and



noticed the entire underground space.

The bloody sea had disappeared. Besides a huge, round pit and those gravels on the ground, they saw nothing else. Even the bloody water in the huge pit had been taken away by space-teleportation items. Otherwise, someone with evil intents might cause troubles with the bloody water.

Besides that the bloody sea was demolished and taken away completely, this underground space should have been searched over carefully by the powerhouses from the Supreme Court. Because the small karst caves on the ground and the surrounding walls of this underground space had been completely excavated. Even the traces were fresh.

Besides the stinky smell in the underground space, nothing else was left inside. This might explain why the Supreme court opened it to the public.

The ground and those stones in the entire underground space were covered with deep, brown blood stains which were left by those bloody figures who were slain here. The bloodstains reminded them of the terrifying scene of mountains of corpses with incomplete broken limbs.

Many disciples of Zhang Tie observed this underground space very seriously in case their family members asked them about what they saw here through letters when they came back to Fire Dragon Bounty Territory.

Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian directly took a round in the huge pit with their disciples.

The images that Zhang Tie gained from the memories of those live bloody figures corresponded to the scene here while those blurry parts in their memories immediately became clear. Zhang Tie had the directest impression and feeling about more details.

Through the confirmation of this observation, the image of a 9-

floor crystal tower being covered with many bizarre runes gradually became clear in Zhang Tie's mind. Zhang Tie then realized that the crystal tower should be the core of the bloody sea.

Nobody could smile anymore. They all became silent. Even Bai Suxian's face turned solemn as she started to observe the source of this event which had aroused the great chaos in Taixia Country. As a result, only their footsteps and breath sounds were reverberating in this gloomy underground space.

When Zhang Tie looked around, he suddenly thought up something. Closely after that, he faintly narrowed his eyes while a golden lotus-flower shaped brilliance was silently in full bloom in his eyes.

'Although the elite forces of Supreme Court have searched over this place carefully, what if they missed something? After all, they didn't have the ability of lotus-flower eyes. They might miss something.' A whim occurred to Zhang Tie's mind as he activated his lotus-flower eyes.

After activating his lotus-flower eyes, everything in this underground space gradually turned different in Zhang Tie's eyes as they all turned transparent including the stones and the cliffs.

In less than half a minute, Zhang Tie had slightly opened his mouth as he was shocked. Because he really found something amazing...

# Chapter 1085: Goodbye, Parent Puppet

## Worms

---

Since he owned the ability of lotus-flower eyes in the Earth-elements Realm, Zhang Tie found that the more seeds of fiery lotus flowers he ate, the more brilliant the 6 surging points around his eyes would be and the more powerful his lotus-flower eyes would get.

In a common state, as long as Zhang Tie activated his ability of lotus-flower eyes, he could easily see through 1,000 m underground. In lotus-flower eyes, there were only temperatures, instead of solid objects. Precisely, in lotus-flower eyes, there was only independent light composed of transparent color temperatures. If there was any demand, Zhang Tie could even filter out the masking effect of color temperatures and see clearly what was inside or behind the object.

Zhang Tie didn't reveal this ability to anyone else, including his elder brother and Bai Suxian.

As Zhang Tie had too many secrets, if he revealed all of them to others, the others might not stand it mentally.

It was also awful if one was too weird.

In the eyes of commoners, the ground and the surrounding stones and cliffs had been searched over seriously. Many places had even been damaged; even the traces were fresh. They could not have any new discovery. After deepening his eye light into the cliffs for hundreds of meters, Zhang Tie could still see a lot of bare rocks, some small natural karst caves and some stalactites which were still dripping water.

The problem lay in a region of the dome of this underground space.

The dome of this underground space was over 200 m high in the

shape of an irregular half gourd. There were stalactites hanging from the top of this underground space like bamboo shoots while dripping water. Like the situation on the ground here, the dome of this underground space might have also been seriously checked because the many stalactites had been broken by force, covering the ground.

No matter how, as long as this place was not blown out, the elite forces of the Supreme Court would not discover the special space in the dome of that underground space.

That special space was over 30 m deeper in the dome; additionally, the tunnel outside the space had been completely blocked by rocks as if the rocks grew out of there naturally. Outside that tunnel, there was a natural chasm on the dome. Besides, there was a broken stalactite beside the chasm...

Commoners could not climb that high to check it. Knights wouldn't blow out the dome to see whether there's something dozens of meters inside the dome. If they really did that, even the knights who checked it might be buried alive.

Because of above reasons, that hidden space was preserved.

That space was a natural karst cave in the underground space in the shape of a wedge. Being broad in the front and narrow in the back, it was longer than 20 m, wider than 5 m and about 5-8 m in height. The space was about 600 cubic meters with slight traces of artificial renovation.

At the sight of the items inside that special space, Zhang Tie's heart pounded at once.

There were four locked square black metal containers like mini safes on the ground of that special space.

Zhang Tie was too familiar with such containers because it was his second time to see them. He saw such a container in Upton City, Waii Subcontinent for the first time, when it held a double-

headed parent puppet worm.

Under the gaze of Zhang Tie, the dozens of meters thick cliff and those black metal containers inside it turned transparent. In those black metal containers, Zhang Tie saw the disgusting, slimy liquid and the double-headed parent puppet worms which looked like sea cucumbers in the liquid.

The 4 double-headed parent puppet worms were creeping in the liquid and were ready for killing numerous people at any time.

Although Zhang Tie just looked up the dome casually, the 4 creeping double-headed parent puppet worms in the 4 black metal containers made his heart pound immediately. As a result, he slowed down unconsciously...

"What are you looking at?" Bai Suxian whispered to Zhang Tie.

"Hoho, nothing. Now that the elites of the Supreme Court have already searched over here, others might not find any intelligence valuable here!"

"Even though there's no valuable intelligence here, if not come here for the first-hand intelligence, many people might not have a good sleep. Even if the Supreme Court knows something, they have to notice some powerful forces in Taixia Country. If you want to know that, I can inquire it from Lord Guangnan's Mansion when it's proper!"

Women were always extroverted. After Zhang Tie told her that he would seek a marriage alliance in Lord Guangnan's Mansion 3 years later, Bai Suxian had long treated herself as Zhang Tie's wife as she would always consider Zhang Tie's thoughts.

Zhang Tie revealed a smile before saying, "After taking a round here, let's leave. There's nothing valuable clue here anymore." Bai Suxian didn't find that Zhang Tie's smile was a bit unusual.

"Sure! This place is indeed depressive. It makes people uncomfortable..."

When Zhang Tie talked with Bai Suxian, he had thought through 4 things.

First, the 4 double-headed parent puppet worms must be left by the Heavens Reaching Church. They definitely wanted to use the double-headed parent puppet worms to coordinate with the bloody figures in the bloody sea. As long as the opportunity was ripe, the bloody figures would take action. At the same time, the 4 double-headed parent puppet worms would create tens of millions of demonized puppets in Zhongzhou Province to deteriorate the entire province, causing great damages in the hinterland of Taixia Country.

Second, as the event in Zhongzhou Province broke out suddenly, Wen Clan and Heavens Reaching Church didn't have time to take away the double-headed parent puppet worms by a space teleportation item. Even Wen Haoyun couldn't take them away in such a short period although he had a portable space-teleportation item. Therefore, he could only leave the 4 precious double-headed parent puppet worms here for the time being.

Third, now that Wen Haoyun had not been caught, after knowing that the 4 double-headed parent puppet worms were still left here, Heavens Reaching Church would definitely have someone take them away. After all, double-headed parent puppet worms were not as cheap as white cabbages; conversely, they were too precious.

Fourth, if Heavens Reaching Church wanted to have someone take away the double-headed parent puppet worms from here, they'd better choose recent days. If the double-headed parent puppet worms were left here for too long, they might be discovered by someone. Lately, almost all the forces had been here to gain the first-hand intelligence. The forces of the Supreme Court had also left. Pingsha Valley was gradually "cooling down". Even so, some people would also come here to join the fun. If they took away the double-headed parent worms with the excuse of

inquiring first-hand intelligence, they would not arouse anyone's attention at all.

When he thought about this, a crazy and audacious plan occurred to Zhang Tie's mind, causing his heart to pound...

After Zhang Tie, Bai Suxian and their disciples took a round here, the crazy and audacious plan had gradually become mature in Zhang Tie's mind.

Zhang Tie had made his determination, 'Whatever, I have to have a trial at the risk of my life.'

"Let's go back!" Zhang Tie finally sent his order calmly after taking a round in the underground space for over 10 minutes.

Before leaving, some tracing feathers silently flew out of Zhang Tie's forehead and floated up into a chasm of the dome of the underground space. Before Zhang Tie came back once again, as long as any knight-level powerhouse entered here and broke that secret tunnel, those tracing feathers would attach to that person's body automatically in case of an emergency.

It took Zhang Tie's team less than 1 hour in the underground space.

When they approached the entrance of the hole, at the sight of the light, Zhang Tie's disciples started to breathe the fresh air forcefully...

# Chapter 1086: Preaching Secret Skills Through Enlightenment

---

Since they had just taken a round in the underground space for less than 1 hour, they didn't make any great achievement. At most, they had been familiar with the location, the size and the surrounding environment of the bloody sea. Additionally, their curiosities were satisfied.

Of course, Zhang Tie was an exception.

When Zhang Tie exited the hole, his mentality had been utterly different than that when he entered it. However, Zhang Tie didn't reveal any abnormal expression as if he had discovered nothing.

The rain was heavier. Zhang Tie's protective battle qi isolated his body from rainwater once again. He looked up at the cloudy sky as he felt a bit chilly. That golden airboat had already left, leaving Iron-Dragon Airboat suspending alone in Pingsha Valley.

"Let's go back to the airboat, there's nothing to look at here!" Zhang Tie waved his hand as he walked towards the airboat with all the others.

After boarding the airboat, everybody gathered in the command module. Zhang Tie had the airboat fly towards Huian City.

Because of the event in Zhongzhou Province, the name of Huian City, a small city, spread over Taixia Country.

Huian City was over 50 miles away in the south of Pingsha Valley. It only took the airboat a few minutes to arrive at Huian City from Pingsha Valley.

The large areas of farmlands outside Huian City entered their vision first.

The golden wheat in those farmlands had already been messy and rotten in the rainy season after missing the optimal reaping



opportunity. Very few people could be seen in the farmlands and the surrounding villages. It was dead silence and coldness everywhere.

When they approached Huian City, Zhang Tie had the airboat slow down and decline before slowly flying hundreds of meters over Huian City.

From the airboat, they could see that the entire Huian City was covered by a dead atmosphere in the rain in naked eyes; instead of using the high-power optical imaging device. The entire city was ruined. Many buildings had been burned, leaving large areas of damaged buildings and charred traces. It seemed that nobody lived in Huian City anymore. There was only a military camp of about 10,000 people outside the city.

Although it was raining, soldiers of Taixia Country were still arranging something in the ruins.

Watching such a giant airboat flying over here, those soldiers didn't feel strange about it at all. Besides someone who looked up at the airboat, all the others just minded their own businesses.

The major's mansion of Huian City had been ruined. Only a half-burned flag was tightly sticking to the flagpole like a dead fish that was scooped out of the water. If not the flagpole and the flag, Zhang Tie's team could almost not identify that the ruins were the mansion of the former major of Huian City, who was the first major who swore to die with the city in Taixia Country in this holy war.

In Waii Subcontinent, Zhang Tie had seen too many perished cities. However, it was his disciples' first time to see a perished city in Taixia Country. It was not in the remote areas, but in Zhongzhou Province, one of the 9 immortal provinces in Xuanyuan Hill.

It was a time-honored city in Zhongzhou Province which abounded in good liquor; instead of the small villages like Xujia

Village.

In the north of Huian City, there were dense tombs within a few square miles. After flying over that graveyard, they could see a lot of rotten joss paper on the top of those tombs...

The terrifying scene in Huian City caused a great mental impact on many people in the command module, including Bai Suxian. None of them looked good.

"What do you think at the sight of this scene?" Zhang Tie asked his disciples after being silent for a while.

The 121 disciples threw a glance at each other before moving their eyes onto Liu Xing at the same time.

"Master, after going to Pingsha Valley and coming to Huian City, I think we all feel sad and shocked; meanwhile, we have a sense of crisis. Nobody has imagined that cities in Taixia Country could encounter such a catastrophe at the cost of so many lives!" Liu Xing replied in a low volume, which was also what the other disciples thought about.

"Sense of crisis. You're right. I want to show you the crises and dark forces in the prosperity of Taixia Country. You need to see the possible aftermath of wars and catastrophes that might happen in Taixia Country in the future!" Zhang Tie glanced at his disciples one after another solemnly before saying, "Many people among you come from major clans which were protected by knight-level powerhouses. Don't think that you and your clans won't experience what you see now. Listen, many countries and major clans in other subcontinents have perished, causing numerous nobles. In the Earth-elements Realm, over 1,000 knights would be killed and wounded in one battle between human knights and demon knights. Sometimes, the lives of earth knights are like candlelight swaying in the wind. Have you thought about how to survive such a chaotic world? Have you thought about how to survive yourselves and protect your beloved ones when

overwhelming enemies rush towards you one day?"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, some disciples looked firm and persistent; some were in meditation; some were clenching their fists.

If he told these words to his disciples 1 month ago in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory, his disciples might not have any true feeling about that. However, after seeing the tragedies in Xujia Village and Huian City and fighting the bloody figures, they all knew how terrifying and brutal were bloody figures. Everybody was move inside.

"Battle strength, only battle strength; precisely, only your punches, swords and sabers are your greatest reliance in the chaotic world!" Zhang Tie answered before anyone's reply, "Your family background and wealth could not guarantee your safety when your enemy waves his saber towards your head. Neither would you be more fortunate than others. Conversely, because of your family background and wealth, your enemy might want to kill you as soon as possible. Under such circumstances, you could only rely on your own punch, saber and sword. Don't think that your clans and parents would protect you forever. As a normal person, a disciple who could join Iron-Dragon Sect fortunately, from today on, you should think about how could you protect your parents and relatives. As long as you could bear hardships and be persistent, I will preach all the secret skills in "Fire Dragon Sutra" to you!"

When Zhang Tie's disciples were still thinking about Zhang Tie's words, Zhang Tie implied that he didn't go back on his word through direct action.

"Liu Xing" Zhang Tie asked in a muffled voice.

"Here I am, Master!" Liu Xing cupped his hands and moved one step forward.

"After a short while, you follow me in my cultivation room. I will

officially preach the secret skills in "Fire Dragon Sutra" to you today!"

All the other disciples were shocked as they watched Liu Xing with extremely admiring looks.

Liu Xing became stunned at first as if he didn't believe that he could touch such a marquis-level classic which numerous major clans were dreaming for at this moment. However, given the admirable looks of all the surrounding people and the looks of Zhao Bing, Wu Yinhui and the other 4 black-armored fighters, Liu Xing knew that he didn't mishear it. In a split second, Liu Xing blushed as he took a deep breath and replied in the muffled voice, "Yes, master!"

Even though Liu Xing was always calm, his voice trembled a bit at this moment.

"After that, this master will enter cultivation for a few days. Your master uncle Bai will take charge of everything in the airboat!"

As Bai Suxian had not married Zhang Tie, it was improper for him to call her Mrs. Master Bai. Otherwise, it would incur jokes. He should consider the reputations of Lord Guangnan's Mansion and princess Bai Suxian. However, as a person who used to stay with Zhang Tie, Bai Suxian was destined to be influential in Iron-Dragon Sect one day. Additionally, she was a knight. Therefore, she deserved to be an outstanding elder and was qualified to be called Master Uncle Bai. All the sects in Taixia Country preferred male appellations. Even prestigious females in sects could only be called Master Uncle instead of Master Aunt by the juniors. Of course, the appellation Mrs. Master was an exception because she was their master's wife.

Bai Suxian threw a glance at Zhang Tie as she didn't know what trick Zhang Tie played. She didn't understand why Zhang Tie suddenly wanted to enter cultivation. According to the plan, after leaving Pingsha Valley, they should visit Gold and Power Market

and Xuanyuan Hill.

"I will tell you about the reason after a short while!" Zhang Tie's voice entered Bai Suxian's ears secretly when the latter was thinking about the reason. After hearing that, Bai Suxian revealed a tender smile towards Zhang Tie. Whatever, she had already been very happy when Zhang Tie handed the airboat and these disciples to her when he was busy. This was what a master's wife should do.

"Well, adjournment. The cultivation facilities on the airboat are well matched. Don't forget about cultivation!" Zhang Tie waved his hand towards his disciples, letting them leave, except for Liu Xing.

# Chapter 1087: Return of the Thunder Hawk

---

In the cultivation room of the airboat, Liu Xing's heart pounded as he sat in front of Zhang Tie with crossed legs in an intense way. Zhang Tie sat behind him with crossed legs too.

Liu Xing was very nervous about preaching secret skills through enlightenment; especially a marquis secret method such as "Fire Dragon Sutra". Actually, he was more nervous than Zhang Tie. As a result, his whole body tightened.

"Recover your composure and focus on the place 10 cm deep into your forehead, relax yourself all over..." Zhang Tie started a secret skill in Soul Forbidden Method to make Liu Xing calm down mentally and spiritually.

In Zhang Tie's opinion, as long as the cultivation of secret methods didn't violate the universal laws by benefiting the cultivator at the cost of the others' interests, secret methods were neither positive nor evil. It was a matter of human nature. If soul forbidden method was used for a positive purpose, it would be positive; if it was used for evil purpose, it would be evil. At this moment, Zhang Tie found that the enlightenment could see a better effect with the help of soul forbidden method.

After Lu Xing recovered his composure and was ready for enlightenment, Zhang Tie put one hand on the head of Liu Xing.

Liu Xing's spiritual energy appeared in Zhang Tie's mind in terms of a small golden mist like a pool in front of a sea.

Zhang Tie wanted to preach "Fire Dragon Sutra" to Liu Xing once; however, when he thought that Bright Enlightenment Method posed a strict requirement to the spiritual energy of the one being enlightened, Zhang Tie gave it up.

With his spiritual energy, Liu Xing could at most accept the enlightenment of LV 10 and LV 11 contents in "Fire Dragon Sutra",

mental arithmetic by abacus and the fundamental foot movements in "Fire-Dragon Flowing Light Battle Skill for the time being. He could not cultivate "Fire-Dragon Heavens Burning Spear Skill", "Fire-Dragon Golden Body" and "Big Sun Fire Dragon Palm Skill" until he entered LV 10.

After making a decision, Zhang Tie started the enlightenment at once. In Zhang Tie's mind sea, some occult consciousness gradually became brilliant runes. Closely after that, the rune flew out of Zhang Tie's mind and directly entered a special region of surging points of Liu Xing's brain from the top of his head. Then, the rune started to open like blossoms and integrate with Liu Xing's consciousness at the same time.

In Bright Enlightenment Method, Zhang Tie was preaching a life and consciousness experience which was more profound and directer than words and images. Such a life experience surpassed the limit that could be expressed by words and images. Even an illiterate, a blind person and a deaf person could understand it immediately.

Three runes were preached into Liu Xing's mind: the first one was the cultivation method of the LV 10 and LV 11 contents of "Fire Dragon Sutra"; the second one was the fundamental foot movements of "Fire-Dragon Flowing Light Battle Skill"; the third one was the mental arithmetic by abacus, which was renamed as Thousands of Beads Mentality Sutra .

This process was very short for Zhang Tie as it was accomplished in less than 1 minute; however, it was a long process for Liu Xing.

After completing the enlightenment, Zhang Tie silently waited for Liu Xing to wake up in the cultivation room. At the same time, he observed Liu Xing's response. According to the Bright Enlightenment Sutra , very few people who accepted the enlightenment of Bright Enlightenment Sutra would suffer from rejection response both physically and mentally before of poor spiritual energy and condition in enlightenment. Their spiritual

energy would be disordered; in the worst scenario, their mind sea could break and they would not cultivate for the rest of their lives anymore. Therefore, the one who preached the enlightenment should guard him on one side. When he found the one being enlightened was in a perilous state, he had to pull the one who received the enlightenment out of that perilous state in the corresponding secret method of Bright Enlightenment Sutra as soon as possible in case of tragedy. This was one meaning of the role of master.

Under the silent gaze of Zhang Tie, Liu Xing spent 1 hour in digesting all the contents that Zhang Tie had imparted him before opening his eyes.

When Liu Xing opened his eyes, Zhang Tie let out a sigh inside silently. After all, it was his first time to preach secret skills to his disciple through enlightenment. Although being aided by soul forbidden method, Zhang Tie was still worried about loopholes. Now that Liu Xing could wake up, it indicated that this enlightenment was successful. Of course, Zhang Tie became reassured.

The moment Liu Xing opened his eyes, he had seen Zhang Tie's caring eyes. Closely after that, Liu Xing's eyes turned red. Then, he kowtowed towards Zhang Tie three times, causing "bang, bang, bang" before saying, "Master, thanks for your secret skills, I feel like having a new birth!"

Liu Xing didn't exaggerate. In Taixia Country, the expression "feel like having a new birth!" could reflect the power and position of masters pretty well; especially the impartment of classic secret skills, the value of which was beyond measure.

"Ahem, ahem, stand up..." Zhang Tie coughed twice. Although he was Liu Xing's master, they were almost peers. Watching the contemporary treating him so respectfully, Zhang Tie felt a bit embarrassed.



The moment Zhang Tie opened his mouth, Liu Xing had stood up gently and waited for Zhang Tie's words respectfully.

"You can cultivate the LV 10 and LV 11 contents of Fire Dragon Sutra and the fundamental foot movements of Fire-Dragon Flowing Light Battle Skill diligently step by step as a good example. After you promote to a battle master, I will impart you with the remaining contents. Given your poor spiritual energy, I could only impart a part of contents to you each time!"

"Yes, master. This disciple will live up to your expectation and cultivate diligently so that I could promote to a battle master as soon as possible!"

Zhang Tie nodded as he continued, "Although Thousands of Beads Mentality Sutra looks simple, it's effective and could bring you a lot of benefits. As the exclusive secret method of Iron-Dragon Sect, this secret method could improve one's thinking and increase one's spiritual energy. After you master it, you could grasp multitasking skill and increase your battle strength by 2 times. After promoting to a knight, if you have enough spiritual energy and mastered the multitasking skill, you could cultivate two times faster than others. This secret method has endless, marvelous effects. This master has benefited a lot from this secret method. Speaking of value, Thousands of Beads Mentality Sutra could even match Fire Dragon Sutra , bear it in mind, bear it in mind..."

It was not inflated for Zhang Tie to treat Thousands of Beads Mentality Sutra as the exclusive secret method of Iron-Dragon Sect, because it was greatly different than the original mental arithmetic by abacus . On the basis of the original mental arithmetic by abacus, Zhang Tie added his gnosis, enabling the effect of mental arithmetic by abacus to increase by times constantly.

There was not such a method in the process of the cultivation of the original mental arithmetic by abacus . Zhang Tie gifted mental arithmetic by abacus to Huaiyuan Palace and Donder respectively

as a meritorious service. According to Zhang Tie, Huaiyuan Palace and Gold and Power Law had arranged their kids and youngsters to cultivate this secret method so as to increase their spiritual energy. Zhang Tie confirmed that nobody could reach his realm through induction if not have an amazing spiritual energy and mastered the multitasking skill. Perhaps, someone could find the relationship between mental arithmetic by abacus and multitasking skill after a long while. However, in a short period, only Zhang Tie himself could grasp the secret of thousands of beads mentality sutra . In that sense, thousands of beads mentality sutra was indeed the exclusive secret method of Iron-Dragon Sect.

After having a brief talk with Liu Xing, Zhang Tie let him leave the cultivation room.

After Liu Xing left Zhang Tie's cultivation room, he immediately entered a cultivation room which was specially prepared for disciples below knight level to polish their surging points to cultivate Fire Dragon Sutra . However, Zhang Tie called Bai Suxian into his cultivation room and had a secret talk with her.

"I will leave this airboat for a few days. During this period, just tell others I'm in cultivation. You should be responsible for everything in the airboat!"

"Sure, don't worry!" Bai Suxian didn't even ask Zhang Tie what he was going to do, which indirectly indicated that this woman was intelligent and charming. She then asked, "Where should the airboat wait for you?"

"In Zhongzhou Province. You can stay in Zhongzhou City for at most 20 days in the name of replenishing supplies for the airboat. I might not come back in a couple of days!"

Bai Suxian asked, "Do you need me to go there with you?"

"It's a bit dangerous, additionally..." Zhang Tie immediately stopped. At the same time, he widely opened his eyes with an unimaginable look. Because he felt a familiar qi darting towards

him from tens of thousands of miles away...

Although Zhang Tie's knight's consciousness was great and he had promoted to sage level, he could never sense what happened tens of thousands of miles away. The reason that he could sense it lay in that the thing had a telepathy with him—it was the thunder hawk that he released from Castle of Black Iron 4 years ago.

At this moment, Iron-Dragon Airboat had already entered the stratosphere and was flying at full speed. By contrast, that thunder hawk could fly two times faster than Iron-Dragon Airboat. It was absolutely a supersonic speed as fast as a lightning bolt.

"What's wrong?" Bai Suxian asked when she found that Zhang Tie suddenly stopped talking with a weird look.

"...Additionally...additionally, if too many people went there, we might screw it up. I'd better go there alone!" Zhang Tie swallowed his saliva forcefully as he tried to calm down and finish his words...

## Chapter 1088: I Will Fly Higher

---

2 hours later, Iron-Dragon Airboat flew across a thick cloud which looked like a huge marshmallow. When Iron-Dragon Airboat left this cloud in less than 1 minute, Zhang Tie had already left Iron-Dragon Airboat and appeared in the cloud tens of thousands of meters above the ground.

The airboat had already left the border of Longxi Prefecture in Zhongzhou Province.

At this moment, Pingsha Valley might still be cloudy and rainy; however, this place had been sunny with white clouds. Airships would fly below the cloud now and then. There was a faintly prosperous city on the horizon in the distance.

There were secret tunnels in some rooms of Iron-Dragon Airboat which could help knights access to Iron-Dragon Airboat rapidly for the sake of escape and executing special tasks. These secret tunnels could only be opened from inside. After a few seconds, they would close up automatically. One secret tunnel was in Zhang Tie's cultivation room. Besides Bai Suxian, nobody else knew that Zhang Tie had left.

Zhang Tie was flying in the white clouds, where the visibility was less than 100 m. The others could not see what was inside the white clouds at all. Riding the wind in the white clouds, Zhang Tie really looked like an immortal.

After leaving Iron-Dragon Airboat, Zhang Tie became alone once again. He could do whatever he wanted. Zhang Tie felt being free once again. He did not have such a relaxing experience for a long time.

Over these years, Zhang Tie was escaping and thinking about how to reverse his case or fight demons and Three-eye Association constantly. When he could move alone, Zhang Tie felt pretty good.

Zhang Tie had been floating in the white clouds for over 10 minutes. When Iron-Dragon Airboat completely disappeared in the skyline, Zhang Tie had changed into an average middle-aged tough man in a blue long gown with rich eyebrows, a swarthy face and closely cropped hair. Given his qi, his battle strength became unidentified.

After changing his look, Zhang Tie flew out of the cloud when he was sure that there was no knight or airboat within dozens of square miles. Closely after that, he flew towards the north as he gradually ascended and turned into a small point.

Zhang Tie sensed that the thunder hawk was pretty excited when it was flying towards him. Additionally, its flight speed increased by almost 30% once again, which startled Zhang Tie a lot. Closely after that, Zhang Tie was moved.

It was similar to the feeling when you saw a dog that you fed many years darting towards you desperately while swaying its tail.

Zhang Tie was flying fast too. In only a few seconds, his flight speed had reached 600 miles per hour and was still increasing. In the blink of an eye, he had entered the stratosphere over 13 miles above the ground. A knight flying rapidly in the stratosphere could barely be discovered by others on the ground.

After entering the stratosphere, Zhang Tie continued to ascend while his speed had reached 650 miles per hour.

His two chakras of King Roc Sutra were rotating forcefully and slowly as firm as mountains. It was like an effective engine entering the velocity range for stable operation. The rotating chakras could offset the gravity from the earth and provide Zhang Tie with a greater speed. As a result, he had the impulsion to fly higher and faster.

After sensing this impulsion carefully, Zhang Tie discovered that  $\frac{1}{3}$  of this impulsion came from his curiosity,  $\frac{2}{3}$  of this impulsion came from the instinct that drove his chakras of King Roc Sutra to

rotate.

As for the human aircraft in this age, airships and gliders could only fly in the troposphere 15 miles above the ground; however, airboats and knights could fly in the stratosphere between 15 miles and 80 miles above the ground. If he was higher than 80 miles, he would enter another atmosphere. Zhang Tie wondered about the feeling in the strange atmosphere. Neither had he heard about it from other earth knights. Therefore, he was curious about that.

Zhang Tie felt a bit strange about the instinct of King Roc Sutra . He started to admire about the terrifying flight speed of the thunder hawk. After that, he sensed that the virtual image of King Roc Sutra in his shrine became a bit restless. What a weird feeling!

Driven by this curiosity and the instinct of the emperor-level secret method, plus the proper time and location, Zhang Tie had a heroic feeling inside as he wanted to test how high he could reach.

Since he promoted to an earth knight, Zhang Tie had not got a chance to try this ability yet.

When he thought about this, Zhang Tie constantly ascended at an increasingly higher speed and broke the upper limit of 700 miles per hour for the first time. At this high speed, Zhang Tie soon entered the top region of the stratosphere which was over 80 miles above the earth.

At this height, the air became thinner. He was actually standing on white clouds. He felt like watching cotton fields on the top of a skyscraper. At this height, commoners could only see the outlines of very huge individuals such as cities, mountain ranges, lakes, long railways in the cotton fields.

However, with lotus-flower eyes, the higher Zhang Tie reached, the better visual field he would gain. Even at such a height, as long as he would like to concentrate, he could see clearly each grass and wood on the ground.

When he recalled the item called reconnaissance satellite before the Catastrophe, a hilarious whim suddenly occurred to his mind, 'Compared to those metal instruments, I'm a real "artificial satellite"'.

Zhang Tie didn't know why few earth knights mentioned the atmosphere above the stratosphere. At least he didn't feel it difficult to break through the stratosphere. His feeling and chakras which were still normally rotating granted him a very great confidence.

Zhang Tie entered the atmosphere above 80 miles high smoothly. He felt cold at once. Additionally, the convective motion that he met in the troposphere reappeared. After his flight speed reached 750 miles per hour, an invisible barrier appeared in front of him for the first time...

'Sonic barrier', a term occurred to Zhang Tie's mind.

# Chapter 1089: A Bottleneck

---

The invisible sonic barrier in the air was like an extremely elastic film in front of Zhang Tie.

This film was not terrifying. Zhang Tie felt that he was completely able to break through it. However, Zhang Tie couldn't break through this sonic barrier even though he had repeated it many times.

The chakras of "King Roc Sutra" were still rotating stably and providing energy for Zhang Tie constantly. Zhang Tie felt that it was still not the highest speed that he could reach. He had not made full use of the flight ability granted by King Roc Sutra . What made Zhang Tie extremely depressed was that he could not break through 750 miles per hour no matter how he struggled although he felt that he could easily break through this sonic barrier. This speed was very terrifying for common knights; however, Zhang Tie was not satisfied with it.

It felt like that Zhang Tie could only drive a Faerie Dragon T9 on the highway at a speed of 40 miles per hour. However, the overall performance of Faerie Dragon T9 could allow it to run at a speed higher than 200 miles per hour. Additionally, Zhang Tie was also a racing driver. However, no matter how he struggled, he could only reach 40 miles per hour.

'What's the problem?'

If a sportscar suffered from this problem, the driver might not have selected a high-speed gear.

Zhang Tie also suffered from this problem when he could have a powerful flight ability granted by the King Roc Sutra . He sensed that he could easily break through the sonic barrier; however, he couldn't. There must be only one answer—There's a corresponding secret flight method in the complete King Roc Sutra which could help Zhang Tie unlock his powerful flight ability. As



the King Roc Sutra that Zhang Tie grasped was incomplete, Zhang Tie had not grasped the corresponding secret flight method; therefore, he couldn't break through the sonic barrier.

Zhang Tie remembered that it was an intermediate layer above the stratosphere.

When Zhang Tie attempted to break through the sonic barrier, he felt two evident features in the intermediate layer: First, the higher it was, the colder it would be. In the middle part of the intermediate layer, it was 50 degree Celsius below zero. The strong wind was piercingly cold. Second, very evident convective motion.

The higher it was, the colder it would be. Being similar to that in the troposphere, the convective motion also existed in the intermediate layer, which was even stronger.

Zhang Tie didn't care about the low temperature at all because his protective battle qi and his cold-resistant ability were super great. As for Zhang Tie, the super strong air motion in the intermediate layer was completely like undercurrent under the sea, which could help him fly at a high speed with less strength.

Previously, he sensed air motions by the sharp instinct that he had cultivated physically and spiritually; now, with lotus-flower eyes, he could see clearly the directions of air motions in the intermediate layer.

In front of his lotus-flower eyes, the cyclones caused by invisible air flows in the intermediate layer were like super large color-changing mushrooms whose diameters varied from dozens of miles to hundreds of miles. It looked pretty splendid.

Zhang Tie had attempted many times. With the help of airflows, he could indeed fly more easily and more flexibly sometimes. However, no matter how strong the airflows were and how good he could use them, he could still not break through that sonic barrier.

When he reached above 270 miles high at the top of the intermediate layer, it was Zhang Tie's first time to see that faintly arc outline along the earth. When he caught sight of this arc outline, Zhang Tie felt a stress too. This stress was similar to the sonic barrier. Apparently, he felt that he could fly higher; however, he felt a transparent ceiling above his head, which prevented him from reaching higher.

Zhang Tie realized that he could at most reach the top region of the intermediate layer in the atmosphere above 270 miles high at the speed of about 750 miles per hour if not grasp the corresponding secret flight method of King Roc Sutra .

After flying 8 hours in the intermediate layer, Zhang Tie had long left the air territory of Longxi Prefecture, Zhongzhou Province.

After flying over 6,000 miles, Zhang Tie didn't feel tired at all. He only felt a bit depressed. He felt that the thunder hawk was darting towards him at a speed of about 2,000 miles per hour easily. 'As an earth knight who cultivates King Roc Sutra , my flight ability could not even match that of a bird?'

However, Zhang Tie knew that it didn't work only by being anxious. Unless he could gain a complete King Roc Sutra , he could only slowly think about the solution to make a breakthrough in his flight ability. However, as long as this complete emperor-level secret method appeared, it would cause great troubles between humans and demons as numerous powerhouses and forces would fight for it. Even heavenly knights and sages would be interested in it. An earth knight was even not qualified to attend such a competition.

After flying a few hours, Zhang Tie met 3 waves of knights and 2 airboats.

As the two airboats flew in the stratosphere, they didn't find Zhang Tie and just flew across the latter. As for the 3 teams of knights, one team contained 2 earth knights and 1 black iron

knight. They also flew in the stratosphere. Although they discovered Zhang Tie above them, they didn't communicate with him and left directly. The second team contained 2 earth knights. When they caught sight of Zhang Tie, the two earth knights might be curious that Zhang Tie could fly in the intermediate layer of the atmosphere. They chased after Zhang Tie for a short while in the stratosphere and wanted to see Zhang Tie's face; however, Zhang Tie was not interested in communicating with them. He directly flew away.

The two teams of knights flew at a speed below 600 miles per hour in the stratosphere.

Additionally, Zhang Tie was shocked a bit by a shadow knight whose virtual image was a 9-headed weird snake in the intermediate layer of atmosphere...

# Chapter 1090: Old Monster

---

The real body of the virtual image of that shadow knight was dull blue and longer than 300 m. The 9 snakeheads were taking clouds and blowing out fog while moving ferociously in the sky. Additionally, the snake had a pair of wings. If not the special luster over the real body of the virtual image of a knight, anyone who caught sight of this terrifying 9-head snake would regard it as a far-ancient fierce beast.

Legends about 9-headed snake existed in both Western Continent and Eastern Continent. Zhang Tie had heard a 9-headed snake called Hydra in some myths and legends in Waii Subcontinent. In Taixia Country, the 9-headed snake was called Xiang Liu!

After considering the two names carefully, Zhang Tie suddenly had an insight.

Hydra and Xiang Liu existed in western myths and eastern myths respectively. After comparing the pronunciations of the two names in two different civilizations, everybody would have an amazing discovery, namely, Hy and Xiang, dra and Liu sounded similar to each other.

The same 9-headed monster shared almost the same name in two civilizations with different cultural backgrounds. What did this mean?

It was never a coincidence.

Before the Catastrophe, humans treated all the myths as fake stories and legends. After the Catastrophe, everybody knew that all the myths and legends in the Eastern Continent and Western Continent contained a lot of secrets about human history. Many myths were even real.

...

The gleaming 9-headed snake flew in the intermediate layer of

atmosphere at a speed of higher than 800 miles per hour along with muffled thunders like a moving airboat. It was really f\*cking something!

Zhang Tie was shocked a bit as it was his first time to see the real body of the virtual image of a shadow knight.

Zhang Tie heard that a shadow knight could form the real body of a virtual image. Actually, the controller of the real body of the virtual image was still the shadow knight himself. When the knight's body integrated with his virtual image, it would lead to the real body of his virtual image. Of course, the virtual image could not become alive. To put it simply, the real body of virtual image could be considered as a variant of shadow knight or a manipulable armored machine.

Shadow knight would form water chakra. Water was volatile, colorless and invisible. It could exist in the form of gas, liquid and solid. Therefore, after forming water chakra, the real body of the virtual image would be formed basically which had a great power.

Zhang Tie noticed this 9-headed snake flying towards him with strong wind and muffled thunders from hundreds of miles away.

Being evil or not, such a shadow knight must be very flamboyant and had a powerful battle strength. At the sight of him, Zhang Tie had known that he was tricky. Zhang Tie wanted to teleport the thunder hawk into Castle of Black Iron before making an arrangement in Pingsha Valley for the one who went there to take the 4 double-headed parent puppet worms in case of troubles. Therefore, before the 9-headed snake approached him, he had descended and entered the stratosphere so as to avoid from meeting that shadow knight.

Finally, the 9-headed snake crossed Zhang Tie from over 50 miles away above him.

When they crossed each other, Zhang Tie felt that one head of the snake turned around and threw a glance at him. However, they

didn't communicate with each other.

The previous two waves of knights and this shadow knight flew towards the same direction. After thinking about it for a short while, Zhang Tie felt that they might be heading for the Gold and Power Market. Zhang Tie remembered that Bai Suxian said that Gold and Power Market was going to hold a Treasures Meeting recently; therefore, powerhouses from all parties joined the fun.

'I wonder about the real body of the virtual image of king roc after promoting to a shadow knight.'

After thinking about it for a few seconds, Zhang Tie had forgotten about it. Unless he was not afraid of exposing the news that he was cultivating King Roc Sutra to the public, as long as he released the virtual image of king roc, he would become a target for all. He might not even know how he was killed. Therefore, he could only continue to be low-key even though he had promoted to a shadow knight.

Although he had a powerful virtual image, he could not release it. Because he could not grasp the corresponding secret skill of the King Roc Sutra , he couldn't exert his flight ability to the utmost...

'Alas, what a poor life I have!'

If Zhang Tie's complaint was heard by the public, he might be drowned by the saliva of people in the world in the blink of an eye.

Having Castle of Black Iron; promoting to an earth knight at his 30s; cultivating an emperor-level secret method King Roc Sutra ; If such a person still complained that he had a poor life, what about others' lives?

After seeing the real body of the virtual image of the 9-headed snake, Zhang Tie didn't continue to test his flight ability; instead, he just flew towards the thunder hawk in the stratosphere.

After another 2 hours, it was already dark while the sky was covered with sparkling stars. Zhang Tie didn't know where he was.

He just saw undulating primitive woods on the ground.

At this moment, Zhang Tie sensed a shadow approaching him and already entering his vision.

Zhang Tie immediately suspended in the air while a golden lightning bolt was darting towards him from over 70 miles away. In the distance, that shadow which had been moving too fast accelerated once again. It took the shadow less than 2 minutes to fly over 70 miles.

'Almost 3 times that of the velocity of sound, f\*ck!'

Zhang Tie was startled when he saw the golden light directly ramming towards his arms like how it always did when it was young.

Along with a strong wind and a golden light, before Zhang Tie responded to it, an extremely dignified bizarre huge golden bird whose wingspan was over 6 m had directly rammed into Zhang Tie's arms, sending him flying hundreds of meters backward.

The impact force brought by such a high speed, such a sturdy figure and such a weight was like that brought by a train at its high speed. Someone below knight level might have been severely injured. Zhang Tie suffered the impact force by flying backward hundreds of meters.

Hugging the bird's body, Zhang Tie suspended in the air while that bird's huge head was rubbing in his arms and uttering an exotic sound like a spoiled child as it usually did when it was young.

'But...but...how could this thunder hawk become so huge?'

Zhang Tie was really shocked by what he saw, 'It's too exaggerated. It's been only 4 years!'

However, before Zhang Tie greeted it, the huge bird chirped a few more times, pulling Zhang Tie out of his shock.

"What? You mean a bored old d\*\*chebag met you in the sky and was chasing after you. That guy was flying only a bit slower than you? Even though he's far away from you, the light that he gave out had almost covered you a few times?"

The huge bird nodded.

Zhang Tie quivered all over. He knew the speed of this thunder hawk over the past hours, 'It flew about tens of thousands miles at a speed of above 2 times the velocity of sound. The shadow knight who released the real body of his virtual image could only reach a bit more than one times the velocity of sound. However, that old d\*\*chebag could fly so many hours at a speed of 2 times the velocity of sound for tens of thousands miles after the thunder hawk?'

When Zhang Tie thought about this, he hurriedly started his lotus-flower eyes and looked in the direction where the thunder hawk came from.

A humanoid shadow being covered with purple light was flying towards here at an extremely high speed from hundreds of miles away.

In the purple light, there was an old guy in sackcloth and straw sandals with a huge silver gourd which was higher than 1 m. At the sight of this old guy, Zhang Tie had realized that he was an old monster above a heavenly knight. Only after looking at him for a few times from hundreds of miles away, Zhang Tie had found the old guy frowned as if he had sensed Zhang Tie's gaze. In a split second, the old guy's eyes flickered while shooting out two purple light towards Zhang Tie's direction.

'Damn!'

Zhang Tie was really startled as he felt goosebumps over his head. He immediately caught the thunder hawk and darted towards the ground.



After witnessing the ability of Zhao Yuan, his master, Zhang Tie could imagine how terrifying was a heavenly knight. A heavenly knight must have a lot of secret methods. If he played hide-and-seek with such an old guy in the sky, he was definitely seeking for death. Perhaps this old guy just wanted to catch the thunder hawk alive; therefore, he didn't kill it. Otherwise, the thunder hawk might have already been caught.

Zhang Tie and the thunder hawk penetrated through the stratosphere like meteors and entered the troposphere. The troposphere was covered with clouds. Zhang Tie used the same trick. When the cloud shaded all the downwards eye light, he entered Castle of Black Iron with the thunder hawk. After entering Castle of Black Iron, he incarnated into a small beetle at the fastest speed. At the same time, he activated a hiding skill for the little beetle and flew out of the clouds. Finally, he landed on a pine needle on the top of a mountain before looking up at the sky silently.

The fact proved that Zhang Tie's movements were not redundant.

Only after a few minutes, the purple light had entered the cloud where Zhang Tie and that thunder hawk had been in just now. Closely after that, the old guy swayed his sleeve, causing a LV 10 strong wind. In a split second, the cloud was broken apart and disappeared, revealing the empty sky...

Being shocked by this scene, the little beetle's claws slipped as it almost fell off the pine needle...

'F\*ck, is that a human?'

Zhang Tie finally knew how terrifying were those people on the level of Zhao Yuan.

As the old guy didn't find the thunder hawk in the cloud, he flew around this air territory and swayed his sleeve constantly. Each time he swayed his sleeve, he would clean up a cloud. In only a few

minutes, the sky had been very beautiful with bright moonlight and sparse sparkling stars...

# Chapter 1091: Waiting

---

The old monster cleaned up the surrounding clouds in vain. After that, he flew around here for a few minutes before leaving. Hiding still behind a pine needle, Zhang Tie watched it silently. 1 hour later, the old monster reappeared in the sky. After confirming that nothing was here, he let out a long sigh before flying backward.

At this moment, a colorful poisonous snake climbed towards him from the trunk of the pine. The moment it widely opened its mouth and intended to eat the little beetle, the little beetle casually jumped up and turned around in the air before falling onto the head of the poisonous snake. At the same time, it released a bit qi. This little beetle was definitely a ferocious living being. Soon after it released its qi, the poisonous snake had become stiff all over like a lamb whose neck was bitten by a lion.

Zhang Tie flew away, leaving the poisonous snake alone. As a result, the stiff poisonous snake didn't coil around the twig any more; instead, it directly fell off the pine tree. After falling onto the ground, it woke up immediately and escaped into the weeds in an embarrassed way.

After flying away from the pine tree, Zhang Tie identified the direction before flying towards Pingsha Valley in the incarnation of a little beetle.

After flying over 70 miles away, Zhang Tie came to a hidden place in the wild. After confirming that nobody was following him up, Zhang Tie's original body exited Castle of Black Iron. After activating a hiding effect, Zhang Tie entered the stratosphere once again. Closely after that, he flew towards Pingsha Valley silently and swiftly.

The power of heavenly knight was pretty awe-inspiring. Zhang Tie didn't know whether the old guy had seen clearly his look. In case of trouble, Zhang Tie changed his look and figure once again.

The thunder hawk was still resting in Castle of Black Iron. As Zhang Tie was concerned about the 4 double-headed parent puppet worm, he didn't communicate with the thunder hawk too much for the time being before leaving Castle of Black Iron.

Now that the thunder hawk had come back, after relieving the crisis in Pingsha Valley, Zhang Tie had enough time to figure out what happened to the thunder hawk.

On the way, Zhang Tie met another team of knights flying towards the same direction. In the evening, after releasing their gleaming battle qis, they looked like meteors. By contrast, with the effect of a master-level hiding rune, Zhang Tie hid his qi completely and integrated himself with the dark background in the evening. Even if someone flew towards him face-to-face, they could not discover Zhang Tie.

...

After flying a few hours, Zhang Tie approached Pingsha Valley, Longxi Prefecture once again at about 3 am after leaving Pingsha Valley for less than 1 day.

The tracing runes were still on the dome of the underground space, which indicated that nobody had moved those items in the secret space on the top of the underground space. Therefore, Zhang Tie became reassured.

When he was dozens of miles away from Pingsha Valley, Zhang Tie landed in dense woods. Closely after that, he called that little beetle out of Castle of Black Iron and flew towards Pingsha Valley.

When he arrived there, he saw two light flying out of the entrance of the underground cave towards afar.

The two knights might have no discovery in the underground space. Therefore, they left.

Zhang Tie slowed down once again and flew into the underground cave at the speed of common beetles.

The underground space was as pitch-dark as it was tomorrow. Everything remained unchanged. Nobody else was inside. After flying around the underground space for a short while, Zhang Tie approached the dome and drilled into it from a crack. After entering it for a few meters, he saw limestone in the surroundings. The little beetle instantly drilled into the limestone.

The hard limestone was as soft as a piece of bean curd for the little beetle. It might be very difficult for other living beings to drill a hole on it; however, it was pretty easy for such a little beetle to make it.

In less than 10 minutes, a small piece of limestone at an inconspicuous corner of the secret karst cave suddenly moved while the little black beetle revealed its head out of there. With a humming sound, he shook off the dust while lying on the ground.

There was a green fluorite in one corner of the secret space. As a result, this little secret space being renovated by a natural karst cave turned green. The 4 black square metal containers were placed in the middle of the secret space tidily.

Zhang Tie reappeared in the secret space.

In case of leaving any trace, Zhang Tie floated 10 cm above the ground in the secret space.

Zhang Tie watched the 4 square containers with gleaming eyes. The moment he ran his spiritual energy, the 4 containers had floated in the air. The containers were matched with ventilated covers and advanced locks. If they did not have keys, commoners could only break the locks by force.

However, it was very easy for Zhang Tie to unlock them. In lotus-flower eyes, the internal mechanical structure of the lock became completely transparent. As a great master artisan, Zhang Tie had figured out the principle of the unlocking actuator only after throwing a glance at it. Closely after that, he activated his ability as a divine dominator, causing the unlocking actuators in the locks to

move automatically. With a click, the 4 locks were unlocked at the same time before floating in the air.

No matter how advanced the locks were, as long as he threw a glance at them, they would unlock automatically like how pets greeted their master. What a marvelous ability! It might be unique among human beings. Any chief thief might be dwarfed by this ability.

There were many great master artisans and more than one divine dominator. Someone might also grasp the ability of lotus-flower eyes. However, Zhang Tie might be the only one among human beings who could combine the two professions and the one ability. As a result, he could create a marvel by unlocking an advanced lock only by throwing a glance at it.

After unlocking those advanced locks unconsciously, Zhang Tie stroked his chin as he realized that his ability was really something. In some special occasions, this ability might be shocking.

'From then on, there's no lock in the world. What a realm!'

After sighing with emotions for a few seconds inside, Zhang Tie started to move.

After the containers were unlocked, their lids were opened, revealing the 4 double-headed parent puppet worms.

Given their look, the double-headed parent puppet worms indeed looked as disgusting as rotten flesh in the tins of pickled vegetables. However, given their effect, the 4 double-headed parent puppet worms could really destroy cities and countries. Anyone of them might cause an irreparable catastrophe as long as they were taken out.

As Zhang Tie had sensed the destructive power of double-headed parent puppet worm, he dared not be careless. After a consideration, he determined to make the 4 double-headed parent

puppet worms safer.

'What if a powerful shadow knight or a heavenly knight came back for the double-headed parent puppet worms? Would I just watch him take them away and create more troubles? Although it might not happen, it's possible.' Because Zhang Tie didn't know how many trump cards did demons and Heavens Reaching Church have, he had to consider this possibility.

Zhang Tie injected a "driving-section" great wildness seal that he had formed in the All Spirits Pagoda into each double-headed parent puppet worm from his mind sea so as to control them like controlling pets.

As Zhang Tie had just reached the 15th floor of All Spirits Pagoda, he could control all the living beings below LV 15. Double-headed parent puppet worms were LV 14 living beings; therefore, it could be controlled by Zhang Tie.

After reaching the 15th floor of All Spirits Tower, he met a bottleneck. Each step forward would be more difficult. If Zhang Tie wanted to reach a higher floor and control all the living beings below knight level, he had to recite great wildness sutra for 418,100,000 times. Without 20 years' penance, he could barely make it. Even though Zhang Tie always cultivated Great Wilderness Sutra whenever he was free, he was not sure that he could make it within 30 years...

After being affected by the great wilderness seals, the 4 double-headed parent puppet worms only slightly moved in the liquid of the containers before becoming still.

When the great wilderness seals were injected into the bodies of the 4 double-headed parent puppet worms, a statue of double-headed parent puppet worm appeared on the wall of the 15th floor of All Spirits Pagoda. At the same time, Zhang Tie established a mysterious link with the 4 double-headed parent puppet worms and sensed the reliance from the 4 double-headed parent puppet

worms...

After doing this, Zhang Tie recovered everything in the secret space to their original looks before starting a cultivation by sitting in the air with crossed legs and waiting for someone to come here for the double-headed parent puppet worms...



# Chapter 1092: Getting Hooked

---

Commoners might barely bear a long time wait; however, Zhang Tie felt it was pretty easy.

With multitasking ability, Zhang Tie could observe the situation in the underground space with his lotus-flower eyes while catching water-element crystals by huge hands of spiritual energy so as to form his water chakra. In the process, he would even close his eyes to recite great wilderness sutra as an adjustment. Sometimes, he directly had a nap with closed eyes while lying in the air.

Zhang Tie just waited for the prey in the secret space patiently.

He planned to wait there for 20 days. If nobody came inside within 20 days, he would take away the 4 double-headed parent puppet worms, leaving the tracing feathers here. If someone really came here within 20 days, he would deal with it according to the changing circumstances.

On the first day since Zhang Tie started to wait inside the secret space, three more teams of knights came to the underground space in Pingsha Valley.

Whenever some knights entered the underground space, Zhang Tie would watch those people going around in the secret space which looked like a box in the playing field with a dozens of meters thick wall between them. What an amazing feeling! Zhang Tie could see them, yet they couldn't see Zhang Tie. Everything was one-way transparent for Zhang Tie.

In the next one week, 2 to 4 teams of knights would come here everyday. However, none of them could find anything.

One week later, the number of knights who came to Pingsha Valley suddenly reduced. Only 1-2 teams of knights would come here per day. Like how Zhang Tie conjectured, after the event in Zhongzhou Province broke out for more than a month, those who

could come here had almost come here. Those who were unable to come here might have already known the situation in Pingsha Valley through various channels. After knowing that they could not gain any useful intelligence from this underground space, they didn't come here anymore.

After another 3-5 days, Pingsha Valley became really deserted. Sometimes, nobody came here for a whole day.

In the blink of an eye, Zhang Tie had stayed 16 days in the secret space.

During this period, the prey didn't come. However, Zhang Tie lit the 38th scale of his water chakra. Additionally, he recited great wilderness sutra for another over 500,000 times.

Nobody came to Pingsha Valley on the 17th day. Zhang Tie almost changed his mind. He started to reflect that he might be too confident about his speculation. The Heavens Reaching Church might not pay too much attention to the 4 double-headed parent puppet worms. Perhaps, the Heavens Reaching Church was too meticulous. They might wait for another few months or even years. When the event was completely forgotten by people, they would come back.

'If so, I will leave in another 3 days.' Zhang Tie made a determination.

No matter what, Zhang Tie couldn't just wait here endlessly. Because Bai Suxian was still waiting for him. The Fire Dragon Bounty Territory and the Iron-Dragon Sect had to be hosted by him.

During the 17 days since he left Iron-Dragon Airboat, Bai Suxian would contact him by remote-sensing crystal one time per two days so as to ensure that Zhang Tie was safe.

At this moment, Iron-Dragon Airboat was parked in the aircraft base in Zhongzhou City and was waiting for Zhang Tie.

On the evening of the 17th day when Zhang Tie almost changed his mind, another black iron knight entered the underground space.

When this knight entered this underground space, he started to look around the empty bloody sea like what the others would always do. After throwing a glance at him, Zhang Tie directly ignored him.

However, after looking around it for a short while, the black iron knight suddenly rose high into the air and moved around the dome of the underground space. Zhang Tie became a bit spirited; however, he was not sure whether there was any problem with this black iron knight. Over these days, Zhang Tie had seen some knights looking around in the air. Some of them would even knock at the massif and the dome. However, none of them could discover anything.

When this person looked around in the air for a short while and approached the location of the secret space slowly, Zhang Tie's heart raced as he realized that the prey was coming.

The black iron knight was an old d\*\*chebag with a cold face. When this old guy approached the location of the secret space, Zhang Tie was sure that there was some problem with this guy. Closely after that, Zhang Tie started his lotus-flower eyes and saw through the real face of the arriver.

This man was wearing a disguising mask. The face under the disguising mask was much younger than the disguising mask. It seemed that he was in the prime of his life. With long, narrowed eyes, he looked ruthless, tyrannical, evil, vigilant and suspicious.

Zhang Tie had seen this man; precisely, he had seen the image of this man on the city gates across Taixia Country. He was Wen Haoyun, the master of Pingsha Sect and Wen Clan, who was wanted by the Supreme Court of Taixia Country due to the event of bloody figures in Zhongzhou Province.

Wen Haoyun soon approached the periphery of the secret space. Floating in the air, he put one hand against the thick cliff. At the same time, he released his battle qi and broke a wide area of rocks silently. After waving his hand, all the broken rocks were teleported into his portable space-teleportation item instead of falling on the ground.

When Wen Haoyun started to move, Zhang Tie moved too. In a split second, Zhang Tie threw a glance at the secret space and confirmed that he didn't leave any trace inside. After that, he returned to Castle of Black Iron. At the same time, a little black beetle appeared and hid itself at the bottom of one black container while concealing its qi.

The bottoms of the 4 containers were plain. However, there was a 3 cm-high edge around each bottom, which was used to support and prevent the bottom from being worn.

Because of the slight difference in weight between those double-headed parent puppet worms and the liquid in the 4 containers, Zhang Tie would not be easily discovered by people while hiding at the bottom of one container.

As for a knight, as long as he made a decision, dozens of meters' thick rocks couldn't block him at all.

Hiding over there, Zhang Tie only felt that the ground slightly vibrated. In less than 5 minutes, Wen Haoyun had broken a hole on a cliff of the secret space and drilled inside.

After entering the secret space, Wen Haoyun glanced around the secret space with gleaming eyes. When he found that everything remained unchanged in the secret space and the 4 containers were still lying there, he immediately became reassured as he let out a sigh.

At this moment, no matter how rich imagination did he have, he couldn't imagine that a person had already entered this secret space in the incarnation of a strange insect.

Wen Haoyun put away that fluorite rapidly. Closely after that, he lifted the handles of two containers by each hand and exited this secret karst cave as fast as he could.

After exiting the secret karst cave, Wen Haoyun didn't leave right away; instead, after moving dozens of meters backward, Wen Haoyun suspended in the air. Closely after that, his battle qi went berserk.

He started to release his knight-level battle qi by kicking. Being dozens of meters away, a lot of rocks fell off the dome. Meanwhile, those broken rocks in his portable space-teleportation item were also poured down by him.

In less than 5 minutes, the natural karst cave where the underground secret space was located in had been completely destroyed by him. After doing this, Wen Haoyun casually made some more big pits on the dome. Closely after that, he immediately flew towards the ground as fast as a lightning bolt.

The little beetle had seen what Wen Haoyun had done.

This guy was indeed meticulous and experienced. Through such a destruction, he completely erased the trace of that secret space and destroyed the evidence. Later on, even though those people in the Supreme Court came here to check out the situation once again, they could only think that some knights were exploring something here. They would never imagine that there was a secret space in the dome; not to mention that some items in the secret space were taken away...

...

The moment Wen Haoyun flew out of the entrance of the underground cave, a man in a black boa-silk robe had flown over here. Given his qi, he was an earth knight.

After staying in the underground space for 17 days, when Zhang Tie came out of there once again, he found that it was still pitch-

dark outside. Additionally, it was cloudy with no sparkling stars in the sky. The moisture and coldness in the air also indicated that Pingsha Valley was always cloudy these days.

"How about it?" The new arriver asked Wen Haoyun. At the same time, he glanced at the 4 containers in Wen Haoyun's hands.

"Everything is okay. It's not been discovered yet!" Wen Haoyun glanced around vigilantly before asking, "Is it okay outside?"

"It's okay. I've been observing this place for so many days. Almost nobody came here for a few days." That earth knight in the black robe answered, "Now that we've got the items, let's leave out of here fast. The young master is still waiting for us!"

"Right!" Wen Haoyun nodded. Closely after that, they all flew off towards afar silently.

In case of being noticed by others, they didn't release their battle qi luster when they left Pingsha Valley. Therefore, their flight speed was only about 200 miles per hour at a relatively lower height. Not until they flew over 60 miles away from Pingsha Valley and entered the wild did they hide in two places respectively to confirm that nobody was following them. After that, they converged once again while flying towards afar like two meteors at a high speed.

# Chapter 1093: Targeting the Culprit

---

The little beetle tightly hid inside the edge at the bottom of a container. Due to the effect of hiding skill, the little beetle completely hid its qi. Even its color had turned as same as the bottom of the container. If not upside down, it was hard to notice that little beetle near the edge at the bottom of the container...

Zhang Tie was not surprised that Wen Haoyun had a partner. Now that Heavens Reaching Church was preparing to make trouble in Zhongzhou Province, if Wen Haoyun didn't have a partner, it would be extremely strange. What shocked Zhang Tie most was the young master which was mentioned by the two people.

Zhang Tie knew that he had absolutely caught a big fish this time. If he could figure out the status of that young master and the force on his back, Zhang Tie might be able to discover that culprit who had framed him.

Everything happened so abruptly that Zhang Tie could almost not believe it.

However, after considering it for a short while, Zhang Tie found that everything happened naturally. Besides Zhang Tie himself, who else could notice the secret space in the dome of the underground space? Who else could hide in the secret space in the incarnation of a little beetle and have the two people bring him to meet the so-called young master?

Although it looked like a coincidence, the development of the event was mainly determined by his overall strength besides fortune.

If Zhang Tie didn't have so many trump cards and great battle strength, he might not have the two people bring him to meet the so-called young master even if he could discover the vigilant behaviors of the two people.

'The god helps those who help themselves.'

Thankfully, Zhang Tie was using the incarnation of the little beetle. If Zhang Tie was outside at this moment, after hearing such a conversation, his heart would almost jump out of his mouth due to the excitement.

After being a scapegoat for almost 4 years, when he came to the earth surface, Zhang Tie felt that he finally had a good luck. By contrast, that culprit started to have bad lucks constantly. Every dog had its day.

...

After Wen Haoyun and that earth knight in black robe flew over 2 hours and left Pingsha Valley for about 600 miles, they saw an airboat in the cloud in front of them.

This was a golden airboat longer than 500 m. Its specifications and magnificence could even match that of Iron-Dragon Airboat.

As the former airboat of Taiyi Fantasy Sect, one of the top 7 sects in Taixia Country, Iron-Dragon Airboat was magnificent. At the sight of this airboat, Zhang Tie knew that the young master must be in this airboat. Additionally, the force behind this airboat must be very terrifying too.

Wen Haoyun and that earth knight in black robe moved very fast. It seemed that they both carried the tools which were used to communicate with people on the airboat. Because the hatch door on one side of the airboat had been silently opened when they arrived.

Zhang Tie wondered how many powerhouses were in this airboat. There might be a shadow knight inside. If he just entered it in this way, even in the incarnation of a little beetle, he might also encounter an unpredictable danger. Because there were so many secret skills in Taixia Country, Zhang Tie was not sure whether he would be discovered inside. Before entering the



airboat, Zhang Tie became slightly hesitated. However, in a split second, his hesitation was replaced by his decisiveness. Nothing ventured, nothing gained. This was the best opportunity. If he was not even brave to do this, he'd better return to Castle of Black Iron to live a peaceful and casual life.

If he missed such a rare opportunity, he would almost not have the second one.

When Zhang Tie thought about this, he determined to look at the so-called young master at the risk of his life.

...

Wen Haoyun and that earth knight in a black robe easily entered the airboat. The moment they entered it, the hatch door had been closed up while a fully armored guard was greeting them at the entrance.

"At the order of the young master, when you came back, you could go to Moons Awaiting Hall."

Wen Haoyun and that earth knight in a black robe nodded towards each other before walking towards the inside of the airboat silently.

Staying at the bottom of the metal container, Zhang Tie was stealthily glancing around the inside of this airboat.

This airboat was extremely luxurious and magnificent. Iron-Dragon Airboat displayed the taste and ambiance of Taiyi Fantasy Sect. By contrast, this airboat displayed its unimaginable luxury.

The walls on both sides of the aisle inside the airboat were made of pure gold, on which were various landscapes and beautiful patterns. What was more exaggerated, the adornments and decorative patterns on the floor were paved with mithril and earth-element crystals. Additionally, there was a precious artwork and collection in each a few meters on both sides of the aisle. Those artworks and collections shared the same feature, namely,

none of them belonged to this age. It was Zhang Tie's first time to see many of them.

Besides, fully-armored guards above LV 10 were standing solemnly on both sides of the aisle.

Even though Zhang Tie had been used to be extravagant, he was still a bit dumbfounded at the sight of the layout inside this airboat. Even Taiyi Fantasy Sect might be dwarfed in front of this luxury.

Given such a flamboyant layout, Zhang Tie realized that very few forces in Taixia Country could match the force behind this airboat.

However, such a powerful force was colluding with the Heavens Reaching Church and the demons for overthrowing Taixia Country. Therefore, Zhang Tie's heart pounded.

...

After Wen Haoyun and that earth knight in the black robe turned two corners and went upstairs, they finally came to the front of a golden, brilliant gate. The moment they approached, the golden gate had been opened. The two guards carried out a sketcher which was covered with a white cloth. There were fresh blood stains on the white cloth. When they brushed against each other, a naked, pale, slim and beautiful hand wrist suddenly drooped down.

This was a woman's wrist. There was a verdant bracelet which was made of eternal stone on the wrist. However, the owner of the bracelet had lost her life.

The two guards, Wen Haoyun and that earth knight in the black robe didn't feel it strange at all as if it was a piece of wood, pig or dog under the white cloth, instead of a dead person.

When Wen Haoyun and that earth knight in a black robe entered the gate, the guards outside the gate consciously closed up the gate from outside.

After the gate was closed up, the hall was fully isolated.

The hall in front of Zhang Tie covered 1,000 square meters. Everything in the hall was extremely extravagant. There was a huge bed in the middle of the hall. Besides, some girls were playing water in laughter in a swimming pool in the hall. However, the entire room was filled with a rich bloody smell, which didn't correspond to the pleasant ambiance of those girls.

A man with long hair was busy doing something on a table in a loose night robe. After hearing the footsteps behind him, the man didn't even turn around; instead, he continued to mind his own business. Wen Haoyun and that earth knight in a black robe dared not disturb him. They just stood still 10 m behind that man.

"Have you accomplished the task?" The man asked calmly as he was still busy doing something on the table.

"Young master, we've already accomplished it. We've taken out the 4 double-headed parent puppet worms and didn't meet any trouble on the way..." The earth knight in the black robe answered respectfully.

"That's great. My father gained these double-headed parent puppet worms from demons. They're very precious. With the 4 double-headed parent puppet worms, we will have dozens more corps in a split second in the future. Even if they don't coordinate with the bloody figures, they could destroy a province too..." The man in the night robe said without turning around.

"But it's a bit risky this time. If we were discovered..." The earth knight in the black robe said out of concern.

"Huh, discovered, so what..." The man just waved his bloody hand with a careless look as his voice turned merciless, "Now that the Supreme Court of Taixia Country couldn't find it, it's not reasonable for them to prevent others from discovering it. There are so many talents in Gold and Power Law. I have subordinates who are proficient in seeking for treasures. After discovering something in Pingsha Valley, they directly brought it back. Is that

illegal? Even if you've exposed your trace and Meng Haishan the chief justice of Zhongzhou Province followed you up, I would just submit it to him as a meritorious deed. By the way, I could slap the face of the Supreme Court. Why not? Nothing to be afraid of!"

After hearing the man's words, the earth knight in the black robe exchanged a glance with Wen Haoyun silently.

When Zhang Tie heard the man's words, he was shocked so much that his limbs even turned cold.

'Gold and Power Law? It's Gold and Power Law?'

Zhang Tie's heart raced. No matter what, Zhang Tie couldn't imagine that he could encounter this. 'Gold and Power Law, one of the top 7 sects in Taixia Country, also a super organization with the background of the imperial court of Taixia Country is the culprit who framed me? Gold and Power Law colluded with demons?'

'Ironically, I joined Gold and Power Law and serve as the dark gold manager of Gold and Power Law! How stupid I am!'

Zhang Tie's brain was blank...

After being blank a short while, Zhang Tie's brain started to run hard.

The master of Gold and Power Law was the very financial chancellor, one of the top 9 chancellors in Taixia Country. Given this point, Zhang Tie realized who was the very culprit...

After recovering his composure, more and more information occurred to Zhang Tie's mind. He gradually thought through many things.

# Chapter 1094: A Painstaking Investigation

---

Gold and Power Law was the earliest sect that Zhang Tie touched. Due to the relationship between Zhang Tie and Donder, Gold and Power Law had been involved in his life pretty much and known him pretty well. It could be said that Gold and Power Law had witnessed him growing up from a common boy in Blackhot City to a famous knight. Gold and Power Law had known his experiences in Waii Subcontinent and his trump cards in Ice and Snow Wilderness pretty well. Actually, Gold and Power Law understood Zhang Tie better than Huaiyuan Palace.

Previously, Zhang Tie thought that the tragedy in Fuhai City was the revenge from Heavens Reaching Church because he had inflicted a heavy loss to Heavens Reaching Church in Youzhou Province. The revenge happened so fast and fiercely that he almost lost his life.

Now, he confirmed that the tragedy in Fuhai City was the revenge from Heavens Reaching Church. The culprit indeed wanted to kill Zhang Tie. However, such a fierce and merciless revenge was definitely not because Zhang Tie had inflicted a heavy loss to Heavens Reaching Church. There was one more important reason, namely, that culprit behind Gold and Power Law was clear about Zhang Tie's growth process very much. They knew his trump cards, abilities and means.

'I rose like an eye-catching comet in Waii Subcontinent. After I came to Taixia Country, I showed up prominently in the competition for Youzhou provincial governor. After that, I inflicted a heavy loss to the Heavens Reaching Church in Youzhou Province and became famous across the world. Because of my potential, growth ability, trump cards, that culprit became a bit scared as he felt a threat. Therefore, he screwed me up and wanted to kill me before I grew mature.'

'The culprit is visionary. He knew that it would be a big obstacle

if I grew mature completely. What the culprit was more scared might be that he still didn't know how could I rise so fast. He couldn't even figure out my real trump cards, how could I make such earthshaking achievements in Ice and Snow Wilderness and become the savior of Slavs as was predicted by the prophet and the Great Pontiff of Slavs?'

Facing this uncertainty and the potential dangerous factors, the safest method was to kill Zhang Tie at the fastest speed. Fierce and powerful figures must be that decisive.

'The revenge between the Gobbling Party and I and the news that I was going to propose a marriage in Fan Clan in Yingzhou Province provided an opportunity for the culprit to set up Zhang Tie in Fuhai City.'

'Ironically, when I came to Yingzhou Province, I even noticed Gold and Power Law about my schedule in the identity of the dark gold manager of Gold and Power Law and prepared to use the power of Gold and Power Law when in trouble in Yingzhou Province.

'It was nothing than seeking for death.'

'Is Donder a member of Heavens Reaching Church? How much intelligence about me has Donder provided to Heavens Reaching Church?'

After figuring out the casual relationship that he had encountered in Fuhai City, Zhang Tie immediately felt clear-minded. Meanwhile, a thought occurred to Zhang Tie's mind, 'No, Donder is definitely not a member of Heavens Reaching Church. He should be innocent about that the master of Gold and Power Sect framed me.'

'Donder was just a spy of Gold and Power Law in Blackhot City. Even now, Donder is just a bright gold manager in Gold and Power Law and couldn't touch such a top secret. If Donder could know this top secret, how could the master of Gold and Power Law, also

the finance minister of Taixia Country sit in this position steadily?

Not only Donder, even some managers and directors with higher levels in Gold and Power Law couldn't know there was some problem with their master.

Although Gold and Power Law was one of the top 7 sects in Taixia Country, its form of organization was greatly different than that of other sects. Its members were more like those of a club or an industry organization. Their positions in Gold and Power Law were determined by their contributions and accumulated points. The members of Gold and Power Law accomplished the objectives of the organization through cooperation instead of delivering or taking commands.

Whatever, as Hua people, most of the people were patriotic since they were born. There were many loyal and bold people in Taixia Country. Apparently, not every member of a sophisticated organization like Gold and Power Law was an upright gentleman. However, at least nobody was wanted by the Supreme Court in the Gold and Power Law. It was more like a joke if you treated every member of Gold and Power Law as a rebel and lackey of demons. To a certain extent, the members of Gold and Power Law, especially senior members were the beneficiaries of the existing orders among Hua people in Taixia Country. Of course, they would maintain these orders on their own initiatives instead of thinking about overthrowing them, which would be in contradiction with their class interests.

The founder of Gold and Power Law was the imperial court of Taixia Country and Emperor Xuanyuan. As one of the 9 ministers in Taixia Country, each financial chancellor served as the master of Gold and Power Law. Honestly, the master of Gold and Power Law was like a half-official position appointed by the imperial court and Emperor Xuanyuan. As the master of Gold and Power Law and one of the top chancellors of Taixia Country, that person could mobilize a lot of resources of Gold and Power Law for his

own benefit; pull some dare-to-die soldiers over to his side in Gold and Power Law, and make many plots. However, he could never assimilate the power of Gold and Power Law as his own strength. A commander of a military region or a provincial governor of Taixia Country could not treat an entire military region or a province as his own territory and sphere of influence, when the old managers and directors resigned in Gold and Power Law, the new ones would replace them.

The problem was that how many mines had that culprit buried in Taixia Country as the financial chancellor? One of those mines had been detonated, what about the others? How many forces had that culprit pulled over to his side in Gold and Power Law?

The first question was out of Zhang Tie's ability. Zhang Tie felt that this question should be considered by the top three chancellors and Emperor Xuanyuan of Taixia Country instead of him. As for the second question, since he entered this airboat, none of those guys on this airboat was good. These guys should be the trusted subordinates of that culprit and the b\*stards of Heavens Reaching Church who could know the top secrets. This young master might be that culprit's direct descendant.

Given his qi, this young master should also be an earth knight.

As he had just been in this airboat for a short while, Zhang Tie was not sure whether there was anyone above the shadow knight in other rooms of this airboat. However, given the situation of this room, perhaps all the knights in the airboat were here. If there was any high-level knight, he should show up when Wen Haoyun and that earth knight in the black robe came back with the 4 double-headed parent puppet worms.

Zhang Tie became clear-minded when he figured out these questions.

'What should I do now?'

...



When Zhang Tie thought through everything, that young master finally turned around from the table.

Given his look, that man was at his 20s. However, now that he was already an earth knight, it was hard to judge his real age only by his look.

That man looked very handsome yet a bit evil. There were more white parts than black parts in his eyes. In a loose night robe, his whiteware-like skin and calf were exposed. Additionally, he didn't wear shoes. While barefoot, he looked a bit floppy and casual. Besides the waistband, Zhang Tie doubted that this guy wore anything inside his night robe.

When the man turned around, Zhang Tie saw his work and some bloody tools on the table.

His work was a woman's arm with hand being immersed in a transparent medicament of a sealed high special crystal bottle. Holding a flower, it was pale and lifeless like being frozen.

Watching this hand, the man let out a sigh satisfactorily before cleaning his bloody hands by a towel. At the same time, he told Wen Haoyun and that earth knight in the black robe, "This is the hand of the princess of Chequ Country in Goldenrock Subcontinent. This woman's hands were well cared since she was young. Her hands were washed by human milk since she was 8 years old. Therefore, her skin was pretty elastic. Until now, her skin was still as same as that of an 8-year old little girl. Besides, there was a local profession called bone-correction master in Goldenrock Subcontinent. Bone-correction master could gradually correct people's bone shapes and look by an external force. Bone-correction master had spent a lot of time on her hands. Therefore, her fingers looked plump and slim. When she reached her orgasm, the qi and blood in her arm were very active. Additionally, her skin looked a bit rosy. With the effect of the blood-circulation invigoration method, this hand's qi and blood could remain unchanged for a long time. Among my 200 more collections of

beauties' hands, this one could at least rank top 10. Alas, I'm afraid that I could barely meet another perfect collection like this in the next few years!"

Wen Haoyun and that earth knight in black robe watched that broken arm with glassy-eyed looks as they didn't feel that a dead woman's arm was beautiful at all. However, after hearing these words, Zhang Tie felt absolutely terrified. It was his first time to meet such a pervert, sc\*mbag and b\*stard who enjoyed collecting woman's body parts and organs.

When Zhang Tie thought about the corpse which was carried away by the two guards under the white cloth when he entered this room while a killing intent went berserk in his mind.

How horror-struck and despaired the woman was when she was killed. The man who made love with her suddenly chopped off her arm and liked to collect it.

'What a pervert!'

'You son of b\*tch!'

Zhang Tie didn't launch an attack right away; he just listened to their conversation...

...

# Chapter 1095: Malicious

---

"Perhaps a few years later, the young master will have better collections. Most of the daughters in major clans are beauties. The female knights in major sects are more excellent. If the young master makes his dream come true, a princess of Chequ Country is nothing. Numerous beauties in Taixia Country are all yours, the young master!"

The moment that earth knight in the black robe uttered, the guy called the young master burst out into laughter, "Hahaha, I like your words. It's in the holy war; princesses in subcontinents become valueless. However, this woman was still dreaming about marrying me and meeting my father in Xuanyuan Hill. How ridiculous she was! When I chopped off her arm, she looked pretty wonderful. Finally, before I killed her, she had been scared to death. Those subcontinents are suffering from the demonized puppets. After a few years, it's hard to see the situation facing the major clans in Taixia Country. The so-called major clans are actually concentrating on making profits."

"Everything should be under the control of master for the sake of the longlasting undertakings of our bloody soul temple and the humiliation that bloody soul temple was exterminated by the top 7 sects in Taixia Country!" Wen Haoyun licked the young master's shoes.

'Isn't it Heavens Reaching Church? Why does it turn to be bloody soul temple? Is the Heavens Reaching Church related to the bloody soul temple which has been exterminated?'

A whim occurred to Zhang Tie's mind as his heart raced.

On this occasion, the casual conversation between a couple of people contained a lot of information.

"My father has been in Xuanyuan Hill for so many years. He endures hardships to plan retaliation. The throne of Emperor

Xuanyuan should be assumed by virtuous ones instead of being exclusive to any clan. As it is in the holy war, with the assistance of demons, it's a good opportunity for us to overthrow the reign of Taixia Country." The young master waved his hand as he said generously. Due to excitement, his snow-white cheeks even blushed, which looked a bit evil.

"Young master, the master said that the elements tide a few months ago was not aroused by any prince of Taixia Country. The Xuanyuan God Sutra might have been leaked. Although the imperial households of Xuanyuan Hill looked calm, actually, they had been anxious like ants on a hot pan. The imperial relatives affairs minister, one of the 9 ministers has already left Xuanyuan Hill for over 2 months. Superficially, the minister is inspecting the private territories and prefectures of all the princes; actually, he's looking for the person who aroused the elements tide!"

"The imperial households of Taixia Country are too tricky. This might be a false news that the imperial households released purposefully in order to draw the snake out of its hole. In the chaos, those who have ulterior motives would show themselves and be caught all in one draft!" The young master narrowed his eyes while a weird look flashed by, "We cannot cover the news that Emperor Xuanyuan is missing anymore. The imperial households of Taixia Country have to do something to stabilize the overall situation!"

"Hoho, the overall situation of Taixia Country has been under the control of the master. The whole country is going to be chaotic. They could not stabilize it at all!"

"The more chaotic Taixia Country is, the more possible my father is going to overthrow Xuanyuan Hill." The young master revealed a smile as he waved his hand, "Well, bring me the 4 double-headed parent puppet worms..."

Wen Haoyun and that earth knight in the black robe opened the four containers by keys, exposing the 4 double-headed parent

puppet worms. The young master walked over here and watched them seriously, "Not bad, these items provided by demons have strong vitality. Pitifully, if the bloody sea in Zhongzhou Province was not destroyed, after a few days, the 4 double-headed parent puppet worms would have played their role with the coordination of the army of bloody figures!"

"This humble subordinate is useless. Please punish me, young master!" Wen Haoyun hurriedly lowered his head to admit his guilt.

"The event in Pingsha Valley is not your fault!" The young master's voice turned cold with sparkling bloody eye light, "We've confirmed the news from Xuanyuan Hill. After our assassination plan in Jinwu City failed, Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace discovered our mole in Jinwu City. After that, they notified the Supreme Court. The Zhongzhou Provincial Court dispatched its elites to catch the assassins in Pingsha Valley and figured out the relationship between this event and the tragedy in Fuhai City. They didn't even know that there was a bloody sea beneath Pingsha Valley..."

"Our assassins and moles in Jinwu City had been well prepared for the emergencies. Even if they failed the assassination and exposed themselves, they would never leak any information to others. How could Huaiyuan Palace get any intelligence from them?" The earth knight in the black robe asked in a dubious voice.

"Nothing is perfect in this world. Otherwise, Emperor Xuanyuan would not be missing. We don't even know whether he's alive or not. It could only be said that we've underestimated others. I've not imagined that Huaiyuan Palace could ruin our big plan for a couple of times besides Zhang Tie. We have to get even with them for this..."

"May I know your plan, young master?"

"After the Treasures Meeting in Gold and Power Law comes to an end in a few days, you two go to Youzhou Province!" The young master said with weird flickering eye light.

Wen Haoyun exchanged a glance with that earth knight in the black robe as they both knew what the opponent was thinking about. 'The Youzhou provincial governor comes from Huaiyuan Palace. Besides Zhang Taixuan who's an earth knight, Huaiyuan Palace has a few clan elders. What is more, Huaiyuan Palace is the local tyrant in Youzhou Province, which has a great influence in both officialdom and among the people. Only by whistling, they could converge a lot of people at once. Additionally, Youzhou Province has just been established. As Youzhou Province is remote, we have no foundation in Youzhou Province at all. It's okay for us to dispatch some killers and moles to frighten Huaiyuan Palace; however, if two knights are dispatched to fight Huaiyuan Palace, we will never be in an advantageous position; we might even lose our lives.'

After considering about it in this way, the earth knight in the black robe finally asked, "Young master, after the event in Jinwu City, Huaiyuan Palace must have made precautions about other attacks. Additionally, Zhang Tie's order for arrest has been canceled. He might return to Youzhou Province at any time. Furthermore, I've heard that Heavens Fortune Sect has a special relationship with Huaiyuan Palace. Zhang Tie's three sons are learning in Heavens Fortune Sect. After Zhang Tie was wanted, Heavens Fortune Sect even dispatched a knight-level powerhouse to protect Jinwu City. The two of us are not afraid of death. But if we really want to fight Huaiyuan Palace in Youzhou Province, we might be a bit weak!"

"Who told you to fight Huaiyuan Palace to death? There're many ways to strike Huaiyuan Palace. You only need to find an opportunity to do something for me!"

"May I know the details?"

"Bring me Zhang Tie's wives..."

# Chapter 1096: Berserk Killing Intent

---

"Zhang Tie's wives?" Wen Haoyun exchanged glances with that earth knight in the black robe.

"Right, Zhang Tie's three wives. Although they're not Hua, they look good!" The young master revealed an evil smile with faintly bloody sparkling eyes, "I think that Huaiyuan Palace and Heavens Fortune Sect would dispatch knights to especially protect Zhang Tie's wives no matter how many knights do they have. Therefore, it's not difficult for you to do that. You could find an opportunity to bring me Zhang Tie's three wives. With some more arms of foreign women, my collections would be more interesting!"

"It's indeed not difficult for us to bring you the 3 women!" The earth knight in the black robe slightly frowned as he continued, "But...but why? Zhang Tie could have many beautiful women as long as he wants..."

The earth knight in the black robe was right. In this age, most of the knights could have as many beautiful women as possible except for the most beautiful one in the world. In the eyes of knights, common women were just like their clothes, who could not even match their boa-silk robes. Common women were purely low-priced and easily worn articles.

"Hahaha, you don't know that. The three women are not common; instead, they have experienced hardships with Zhang Tie in Waii Subcontinent. Zhang Tie couldn't leave them. He had been looking after them when in Waii Subcontinent. Finally, he brought them to Taixia Country. They have high positions in Zhang Tie's heart and Zhang Tie's family. Evidently, they're utterly different than common knight's wives!" The young master shook his head as he stretched out one finger and said in a cold voice, "First, the sons of the three women have been enrolled by Heavens Fortune Sect. It indicates that Heavens Fortune Sect dare protect Zhang Tie and go against us. If we catch the mothers of the three disciples of



Heavens Fortune Sect, it's equal to slapping the face of Heavens Fortune Sect. It could shock Heavens Fortune Sect and others. We need to let everybody know that nobody could go against us without any price!"

"Second, Zhang Tie has left Huaiyuan Palace for a few years. His order for arrest has also been canceled. He must be preparing for returning to Youzhou Province to meet his family members. According to my knowledge of Zhang Tie, this person is a man of feeling. Additionally, the relationship between him and Huaiyuan Palace is not as deep and intimate as that imagined by outsiders. The two parties had conflict in Waii Subcontinent. Huaiyuan Palace had even punished Zhang Tie and driven him out of the elites training agency of Zhang Clan. If Zhang Tie's three wives were killed, Zhang Tie would definitely come back and complain about Huaiyuan Palace for not protecting them well."

"Zhang Tie has made too many meritorious deeds for Huaiyuan Palace. When he returns his home and finds that Huaiyuan Palace couldn't protect his wives, nobody could stay calm and not blame Huaiyuan Palace. It's equal to burying a thorn and a seed of animosity between Zhang Tie and Huaiyuan Palace. This thorn and seed could at least weaken the unity of Huaiyuan Palace. If we could operate it better, we would even split up and cause internal disorder of Huaiyuan Palace!"

"Third, Zhang Tie is too famous. Our plot in Fuhai City didn't kill him; conversely, we made him the most famous black iron knight among humans and shaped him as a hero. As a result, everybody knows that he's a man of feeling. Even I envy him a bit. This is not the treatment that our opponent or enemy should enjoy!"

The young master sneered with a strong jealous and crazy voice, "He's just a b\*tch born in Blackhot City. How could he be more famous than me? How could he be more popular than me? I will destroy him. Even if I cannot kill him for the time being, I will drive him mad and make him a laughingstock for everybody in the

world. I want to see whether he could still write a memoir in the forum of Mountain of Brightness and continue to perform as the grassroots hero and the man of feeling who moved so many people when his wives' body parts became others' collections and everybody else in the world knows that his wives have been sold to the lowest brothels and f\*cked by many men every day?"

"Ahh, Zhang Tie has other wives?"

"This person is special. That's why my father pays special attention to him. You might not know this man well. This man has other women in Waii Subcontinent, who have also delivered babies for him. In order to not alert him, my father didn't alert the relationship of this person in Waii Subcontinent!"

"Ahh, young master is too wise!" Wen Haoyun flattered him once again, "It's unimaginable that the three women could be so influential!"

"When Taixia Country was in great chaos, nobody would care about it anymore. By then, I will pay a visit to Waii Subcontinent to look at his women and children in that barren land, hehhehheh..."

After saying that, the young master burst out an extremely wicked smile. Anyone at present could identify that the so-called "look at" was not that simple...

Wen Haoyun and that earth knight in the black robe also burst out into laughter.

When the three b\*stards laughed, they didn't know that it was their last laughter in this world.

Among their laughter, a person suddenly appeared on their side out of void...

That man widely opened his eyes with furious, bloody eyes. At the same time, his hair stood up like spines of a hedgehog...

He was releasing a burning fury and killing intent rather than his

battle qi.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, the two earth knights and the black iron knight at present became amazed and confused distinctively. Because they couldn't imagine that an alive person suddenly appeared in front of them without any omen.

As knights, they could even sense the moving trail of a trivial flea jumping out. How could an alive person suddenly appear in front of the three people when they were talking with each other?

Therefore, in a split second, the three knights couldn't figure out the reason.

After that, no matter whether they wanted to figure out the reason, their instincts enabled them to respond to the possible dangers by releasing their protective battle qi or moving backward...

As knights, they all had very high responsive speeds; especially the two earth knights. No matter how fast could they respond, they had to spend time in completing the whole series of actions from being shocked, alert to making reactions.

They needed three moments to make reactions; however, Zhang Tie only needed one moment to launch an attack.

Although they were three people, Zhang Tie could move two times faster than all of them.

Sometimes, a knight without any precaution could even be assassinated by someone below knight level.

However, at this moment, it was Zhang Tie who went berserk on their side.

The assassinator was not only a powerful earth knight but also a terrifying divine dominator. The moment he thought about it, he would release an attack in a split second.

Divine dominators could be the most terrifying assassinators and

killers. No knight could be in the defensive state all the time; however, as long as a divine dominator thought about it, he could launch a fatal strike to anyone at present as fast as a lightning bolt.

"Go die!" Zhang Tie roared while an icy, strong wind blew over.

As a result, everything in the room was frozen by the icy, strong wind.

With a faint smile, before Wen Haoyun revealed his dumbfounded look, Zhang Tie's overwhelming punches had arrived.

It seemed that Wen Haoyun wanted to resist Zhang Tie's punch by raising his hand; however, before his hand raised to his chest, Zhang Tie had punched onto his face...

Lately, Wen Haoyun the master of Pingsha Sect had been notorious across Taixia Country. His image had been hung over the city gates of all the Class A cities across Taixia Country. With Zhang Tie's punch, his head was blown out completely...

His brain spurted towards the faces of the motherf\*cking young master and the earth knight in the black robe like colorful ribbons and fireworks...

The earth knight in the black robe wanted to release his protective battle qi...

That d\*mned young master wanted to release his protective battle qi too; at the same time, he wanted to move backward rapidly so as to move away from the assassinator...

# Chapter 1097: Iron Punches

---

At this moment, all the three people were struggling in vain. The moment Zhang Tie launched his attack, the result had been fixed.

Before Wen Haoyun's brain spurted onto the two earth knights who were laughing just now, something else arrived. It was a sword and a saber.

When Zhang Tie came in, the sword and the saber were hanging on the wall of the room. Being inlaid with various gems, the sheaths of saber and sword looked pretty brilliant. It seemed that they were just decorations in this room.

Even though decorations were unusual in this room. At least they were very sharp weapons which could cut clean through iron as though it were mud.

When Zhang Tie was a black iron knight, he had already been able to kill a demon baron as a divine dominator; not to mention now. He had already promoted to an earth knight; additionally, he raided them, sparing no time for the opponents to make any preparation.

The sharp difference in abilities between both parties, plus the time and site that Zhang Tie chose determined that Zhang Tie could release a fatal strike at his full effort like how a fierce lion fought rabbits.

The blades of the sword and the saber flew off the wall automatically in a split second like dragons that came out of the water and berserk lightning bolts. They arrived wherever Zhang Tie could arrive spiritually. In a split second, the earth knight in a black robe and that damned young master had burst out 8 bloody flowers as their limbs were split off almost at the same time.

Until then, the two earth knights had not released their protective battle qis yet. They didn't even sense the pain when

their limbs were split off. Neither could they utter any voice. They only felt their limbs turned cold at once while Zhang Tie had caught their heads by his huge hands...

The two b\*stards looked very shocked. They wanted to move; however, they found that they had lost their limbs while the battle qis that had just gone berserk in their bodies were escaping in a split second...

Not until Zhang Tie covered his hands on their foreheads did the two b\*stards sense the pains caused by losing their limbs. However, before they uttered any voice, Zhang Tie had started his purgatory samsara method. The terrifying strength of the secret method had thumped onto their incomplete water chakras, causing them to quiver all over. At the same time, their protective battle qis collapsed and prevented them from uttering at once.

Zhang Tie had never been so decisive and unswerving. He hated them so much.

Previously, Zhang Tie thought that purgatory samsara method could only be used for demons. If he used it for humans, he might have a mental obstacle more or less.

However, Zhang Tie didn't think too much at that moment. He only thought about killing that young master just now. He must let that b\*stard die in front of him in the most painful manner. No matter what means did he use to kill this b\*stard, Zhang Tie would never have any mental burden; instead, he could only feel it was pretty cool. What this person wanted to do had exceeded the upper limits of Zhang Tie's tolerance and imagination.

The young master and that earth knight in the black robe were held by Zhang Tie like two salty fish being dried under the sunshine.

With the effect of the purgatory samsara method, the two earth knights who had lost their limbs couldn't even scream. Their muscles twisted while blood and sweat flew off their bodies. After

their incomplete water chakras collapsed, they passed out completely due to the great pains which felt like pulling out tendons and grinding bones.

Only in a few minutes, Zhang Tie had completely absorbed the two people's incomplete water chakras.

"Who...who are you?" The young master opened his eyes and watched Zhang Tie with fearful and weak eye light when his incomplete water chakra was being absorbed.

"Don't you want to hurt my wives?" Zhang Tie asked icily, "How could you don't know me..."

"Zhang Tie?"

The b\*stard being caught by Zhang Tie was shocked at once. Because Zhang Tie had not recovered his original look yet, after hearing that he was Zhang Tie, the young master responded with an unbelievable look. However, Zhang Tie didn't have time to explain to him; instead, he just replied icily, "You're right!"

"You cannot kill me, my father is..." The young master's face flushed at once as he started to shout with his full efforts after sensing the bit killing intent of Zhang Tie.

With a loud sound "bang...", Zhang Tie forcefully patted the head of the young master onto his chest, causing his whole trunk to explode like a broken watermelon, spraying his blood and broken body parts all over the ground.

Zhang Tie would feel disgusting about having this b\*stard breathe fresh air for one more second. Neither would Zhang Tie like to see this b\*stard's ugly face. Therefore, Zhang Tie immediately killed him. After that, Zhang Tie had given vent to his killing intent and fury while recovering his calmness and reason once again.

Zhang Tie then glanced around this Moons Awaiting Hall.

In a few minutes, two knights had been killed, one knight had

been disabled while the ground was covered with broken limbs and flesh. As a result, the room was filled with a bloody smell. Being isolated by some layers of the veil, the pleasant ringing laughter of those girls in the pool didn't stop at all as if they had not noticed the massacre here at all.

The laughter of the girls formed a sharp contrast with the bloody scene, causing the ambiance in the room to be weird.

As this room had been installed with a sound-insulation facility, all the sounds inside could be isolated. As long as the door was closed, anybody outside the door could not know what happened inside. Only when the bell rang from inside could the people outside the door enter the room. Previously, this sound-insulation facility was used for this pervert to do abnormal things inside the room; however, it became Zhang Tie's best cover now.

After recovering his composure, watching the incomplete corpses on the ground, Zhang Tie realized that he was too impulsive just now. If the two b\*stards were teleported into Castle of Black Iron, they might be the best raw materials for the bloody sacrifice furnace. It was a bit "wasteful" for an earth knight and a black iron knight to die so easily.

However, Zhang Tie didn't feel pitiful at all. He couldn't weigh the pros and cons like a difference engine at any time. Just now, Zhang Tie only felt pretty cool to kill that b\*stard right away. He didn't even want that b\*stard to utter any word at all.

Feeling good was the best!

After glancing around this room, Zhang Tie waved his hand and teleported the earth knight who was still in a coma into Castle of Black Iron and let Heller take care of him. When Zhang Tie was free, he would enter Castle of Black Iron to deal with this b\*stard. He would not waste the energy of this earth knight.

After that, Zhang Tie ran his spiritual energy and had two items fly out of the flesh on the ground and suspend in front of him.



It was a copper-colored finger ring from Wen Haoyun's hand and an amber bracelet from one wrist of that young master. Zhang Tie realized that they were two space-teleportation items. The greatest difference between space-teleportation items and common items was that the core area of space-teleportation item was covered with mist which could not be seen through by Zhang Tie's lotus-flower eyes. The two items both had such a feature. Zhang Tie couldn't see what were inside the space-teleportation items with his lotus-flower eyes; he could only see them by injecting his spiritual energy into them.

Although the two items flew out of the flesh, they were still as clean and bright as new. Given this feature, Zhang Tie knew they were pretty precious.

After taking that finger ring, Zhang Tie found it was just a common space-teleportation item. Covering over 40 cubic meters, it contained some food, medicaments, weapons, money and clothes. It seemed that Wen Haoyun prepared all this for himself when he escaped. After throwing a glance at it, Zhang Tie had teleported it into Castle of Black Iron.

The moment he took that bracelet, he had injected his spiritual energy into it when he saw a lot of dazzling golden and blue light.

The golden light was given out by a pile of earth-element crystals. Zhang Tie estimated that there were over 100,000 earth-element crystals. It was his first time to see so many earth-element crystals since he promoted to a knight.

The blue light was given out by over 20,000 water-element crystals.

Both earth-element crystals and water-element crystals in the space were of very high quality. What an amazing wealth!

Besides these crystals, there were some crates and vials of medicaments in the space. As Zhang Tie didn't have time to open them one after another and check them carefully. After taking a

deep breath once again, he handed the amber bracelet to Heller in Castle of Black Iron.

'What a Gold and Power Law!' Zhang Tie knew that he made a fortune once again. The inside space of this bracelet could almost match half of that of Xuanwu Secret Warehouse of bloody soul temple. Such a space-teleportation item was definitely priceless.

It was almost impossible for common knights to gain a space-teleportation item; however, since he gained Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie had been able to easily gain a lot of space-teleportation items wherever he was as if he was tied up with space-teleportation items. Demons and b\*stards and lackeys of Three-eye Association would queue up to gift him space-teleportation items. As a result, Zhang Tie even became numb about space-teleportation items.

Besides, there were some treasures in the room. However, after throwing a glance at them, Zhang Tie directly ignored them and walked towards those girls who were still playing with water cheerily...

# Chapter 1098: Windfall

---

Those items in the room were worthless for Zhang Tie. Additionally, if Zhang Tie took them away, there would be endless troubles as long as they were identified by others. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't move them.

Since Zhang Tie blew up Wen Haoyun's head by one punch, he had planned to not let anyone else know that it was done by him. Although Wen Haoyun's head could bring him a lot of benefits and great reputation, it was nothing compared to the risk of being revenged by a powerhouse above shadow knight level for the death of his son.

It was very sophisticated in Taixia Country. Not until today did Zhang Tie figure it out a bit. Zhang Tie had not enjoyed his life yet. If he lifted his head above the parapet, it wouldn't do him any good.

When Zhang Tie walked towards the pool, he separated the veil with the ability of divine dominator.

Five stunning 18-year old naked girls were playing with water in the pool. Watching Zhang Tie coming over here, those girls directly walked out of the pool without any fear and wanted to play with Zhang Tie. Some of them even started to seduce him by twisting their waists and stroking his body.

In a split second, Zhang Tie had been surrounded by the 5 naked, innocent, romantic girls.

These girls were faintly panting and doing various seductive movements.

'These girls are definitely abnormal.'

"Brother, come on, play water with your young sister..."

"Brother, the young sister feels itchy here, touch it..."

When the girl said this, she pulled Zhang Tie's hand and had him touch her groin.

"Ta..." Zhang Tie uttered a loud syllable which contained a special strength. When they heard this sound, all the girls stayed still like being applied with a magic.

When the girls stayed still, they were still watching him with enchanting smiles. However, when Zhang Tie looked at their eyes seriously, he found their eyes were empty. The black pupils were like black stagnant water, which were lifeless and terrifying.

Zhang Tie let out a sigh inside. After having a try with a secret skill in Soul Forbidden Method, Zhang Tie realized that these girls had been fixed. They were just like the walking dead. Although they were still alive physically, they were already dead spiritually. They were just decorations in this pool and this room. Like those paintings on the wall and the vase on the table, they had become lifeless furnishings and tools for others to give vent to. No matter what happened in this room, they would just play with water innocently and romantically like machines here. Anyone who entered the veil could control them and become their master.

They were the most advanced and brutal furnishings and props.

If the 5 girls had just been fixed with Soul Forbidden Method, Zhang Tie could still save them. However, their spirits and souls had vanished. All their movements were preset. Even immortals could not save them. They'd better die than live.

'How many heartless things has that b\*stard called the young master done?'

...

"Wish you could be others' daughters, wives, mothers and have a lot of children in the next lives; Wish you have safe lives and meet your beloved ones and never fall in the hand of bad people in the next lives!"

After whispering something to the 5 statue-like girls, Zhang Tie slightly pointed at their foreheads respectively. The 5 girls then closed their empty eyes at the same time as they lay on the ground breathlessly like having fallen asleep. They were free from pains completely.

All the living beings had their souls. Even though they had lost their spirits, they could still understand Zhang Tie's last words. When they finally closed up their eyes, they dropped off a tear at the same time...

After watching their tear stains and beautiful naked bodies by the pool for a long while, Zhang Tie finally pulled off the veil and wrapped the 5 girls' naked bodies by it. After that, he teleported them into Castle of Black Iron and had Edward bury them under flowering shrubs on the Immortal Mountain.

After doing all this, Zhang Tie's expression turned icy once again. He turned around and strode towards the gate of the room, closely followed by the saber and the sword which had just chopped off the two earth knights' limbs like a swimming fish.

When Zhang Tie was 2 m away from the gate, the golden gate had opened automatically. The two rows of fully-armored guards flatted on their arms to Zhang Tie. At the sight of the stranger walking out of the room with a solemn look, they all became stunned.

Zhang Tie didn't spare any time for them to utter a voice.

The 10 guards' metal helmets and armors were collapsed and shrunk almost at the same time by a great force as if they were made of paper.

The two rows of guards fell down silently at the same time while thick blood spurted out of their helmets and armors, covering the sumptuous carpets in a split second.

After promoting to an earth knight, with the effect of his earth

chakra, Zhang Tie made a great breakthrough and entered a terrifying realm in controlling various metals with the ability of a divine dominator. When Zhang Tie was a black iron knight, he couldn't collapse and shrink those LV fighters' hard metal helmets and armors only by glancing around them. However, at this moment, it was pretty easy for him to do it.

Zhang Tie discovered this ability after promoting to an earth knight. He then became more curious about the ability of divine dominator after promoting to a shadow knight.

'After forming my earth chakra, I gained an amazing ability in controlling metals that are produced in the earth. His ability as divine dominator could resonate with metals. Although it looks unbelievable, it's pretty easy for Zhang Tie to do that. He could control metals with the ability of divine dominator even more easily than holding them.'

'If I form water chakra, could I control water with the ability of divine dominator? In the current situation, I could not control water and liquid with the ability of divine dominator.'

'What if I formed wind chakra and fire chakra?'

'Pitifully, there are very few divine dominators in this world, very few people could figure out the potential ability of this profession. Cultivation methods about this profession could be rarely touched by commoners. Therefore, I have to explore it myself step by step.'

...

Zhang Tie traversed the bloody aisle with a glassy-eyed look.

After Zhang Tie promoted to an earth knight, his ability as a divine dominator was too terrifying for those who were below knight level. Only after glancing around them, Zhang Tie had collapsed their helmets and armors and broken their heads, skeletons and guts, causing their helmets and armors their own

coffins.

Zhang Tie killed everyone he saw on the way from the prow to the stern of the airboat, from the bottom to the top. Nobody could utter a voice before death.

The massacre proceeded silently.

As was predicted by Zhang Tie, there wasn't any knight on the airboat anymore.

10 minutes later, Zhang Tie killed hundreds of guards on the airboat and finally came to the cockpit of the airboat.

When he came to the cockpit, the gate opened automatically. After hearing the gate opening, the group of 7 in the cockpit turned around at the same time. Zhang Tie walked in like nobody was inside. Closely after that, the cockpit was filled with the sounds of cracking bones and splashing blood. In a split second, all the workers in the cockpit were cleaned.

Now that Zhang Tie could drive airships, he could drive airboats too because the latter was more easily operated than the former. Additionally, the airboat was matched with autopilot function.

After glancing at the navigational chart of the airboat, Zhang Tie found that the airboat was heading for Gold and Power Market. Therefore, Zhang Tie altered the course and flight height of the airboat. After making a turn, he had the airboat ascend constantly until it almost reached the highest point. When it approached the sparsely populated top region of the stratosphere, it flew towards the east at its maximal speed. Meanwhile, Zhang Tie closed all the entrances of the airboat and had the airboat enter the silent long-range flight.

After fixing the course and navigational speed of the airboat, Zhang Tie left the cockpit.

Actually, Zhang Tie could teleport this airboat into Castle of Black Iron with his spiritual energy after promoting to an earth

knight. However, after considering it carefully, he gave it up. First, it was too eye-catching for him to do that. Zhang Tie didn't know whether it would arouse others' attention if such a giant suddenly disappeared in the air. By doing this, he would risk exposing his trump card. After all, it was in Taixia Country, even a thunder hawk could attract the attention of an old monster, not to mention such a huge airboat. Zhang Tie didn't want to be a target at all.

Second, this airboat was involved with the bloody soul temple, the most mysterious and terrifying force in Taixia Country. Zhang Tie didn't know how many trump cards did the bloody soul temple had in Taixia Country at all. Before the bloody soul temple was completely exterminated, if he presented this airboat in the public, it was nothing different than telling the bloody soul temple that their young major was killed by Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie would never do such a stupid thing.

Even the top 7 sects in Taixia Country couldn't completely exterminate the bloody soul temple through cooperation. As a result, some remnants of the bloody soul temple developed into the Heavens Reaching Church and disrupted the country. Given this point, Zhang Tie realized the great power and tolerance of this sect. Facing such a sect, even if someone told Zhang Tie that the bloody soul temple and Heavens Reaching Church had been exterminated once again, Zhang Tie would not fully believe in it. Because nobody knew whether this sect had any remnant and would rise again from the ashes to screw them one day.

In conclusion, as this airboat might expose his trump card and incur revenge from lunatics and conspirators, it might be worthless in Zhang Tie's eyes no matter how precious it was.

If he wanted airboats, with the ability of lotus-flower eyes, he could have a lot of opportunities to gain them. He didn't need to do that at such a great risk.

Zhang Tie was clear-minded in front of temptation.



...

After leaving the cockpit and cleaning all the corpses, Zhang Tie came to the bottom of the airboat.

There were some strange items in a room at the bottom of the airboat. Just now, Zhang Tie saw two guards leaving this room meticulously by lotus-flower eyes.

The two guards were the very ones who had carried the corpse being covered with white cloth out of the young master's room just now. They left this room empty-handed. After that, they met Zhang Tie and were killed immediately.

After coming to the front of the gate of that room at the bottom of the airboat, Zhang Tie found that the gate of that room was tightly locked. Besides, he smelt a strong bloody smell drifting from inside.

Zhang Tie slightly started his ability as a divine dominator while the three safety locks on the metal gate were unlocked automatically as if they were welcoming Zhang Tie in. After entering the room, Zhang Tie saw an 8-m high huge jar made of super-strong alloy which was always used to make senior helmets and armors. Additionally, the huge alloy jar was covered with some exotic runes. On both sides of the jar, there were stairs and handrails. On the top of the jar, there was a lid made of the same kind of alloy which could slide towards both sides.

Like the gates of the coffers in banks, the lid was thick and heavy. As it was locked by a hydraulic spiral lock, it was very difficult for one or two commoners to unlock it.

There were dense, fine pores on the lid. The strong bloody smell was drifting out of the huge jar. Zhang Tie felt that there must be something very terrifying in the huge jar.

There was indeed something very terrifying in the huge jar because Zhang Tie heard terrifying rustling from inside.

Zhang Tie didn't open that lid; instead, he just threw a glance into the huge jar by his lotus-flower eyes out of curiosity.

At the sight of the things inside the jar, Zhang Tie felt goosebumps all over.

There were many bloody rats in the huge jar. Giving out metallic luster all over, those rats were gnawing the smooth wall of the jar with sharp teeth.

The inside smooth wall of the huge jar had long been covered with pits. If not the inside wall of this huge jar was 20 cm thicker, it had long been bitten through by those rats.

There were some white strips of cloth, scattered broken bones and fresh blood stains inside the huge jar.

Zhang Tie realized that this huge jar was used for dealing with corpses on the airboat.

Zhang Tie was familiar with those bloody rats. When in Ice and Snow Wilderness, Zhang Tie had seen mutated rats of their same kind. Although these mutated rats were smaller to those in Ice and Snow Wilderness, they were more destructive and flexible.

Watching those runes over the huge jar and those mutated rats inside it, Zhang Tie realized that the sc\*mbag called the young master might want to cultivate a mutated rat king or have these rats mutate once again.

Zhang Tie immediately recalled the letter that Cloud Crane left to him. In the letter, Cloud Crane expressed his opinion about cultivating millions of mutated rats so as to reinvigorate the undertaking of the Great Wilderness Sect in the south border of Taixia Country. Given this point, Zhang Tie knew that mutated rats were pretty terrifying.

'Was the extermination of the Great Wilderness Sect related to Heavens Reaching Church or it was just a coincidence?'

The rustling drifting from inside the huge jar made Zhang Tie

quiver all over unconsciously. After thinking for a short moment in the room, he ran his spiritual energy and opened the lid on the huge jar.

The lid was composed of two layers. The lower layer of the lid could prevent the mutated rats from escaping out of the huge jar. They could put in corpse onto the lower layer. After that, they closed the upper layer and manipulated a device outside the lid to drop the corpse into the jar from the lower layer.

However, Zhang Tie opened the two layers. In a split second, those mutated rats had rushed out of the lid flexibly.

Zhang Tie was not even afraid of those mutated rats previously, not to mention now.

Zhang Tie injected a great wilderness seal into the jar while all the mutated rats ran to his side like his pets. After surrounding Zhang Tie, they all looked up at him.

"Heller, how about these mutated rats?" Zhang Tie asked Heller spiritually.

"Castle Lord, don't worry, hand them to me!" Heller replied. He had already understood Zhang Tie's thought before the latter uttered, "We've not had such thrilling mutated living beings in Castle of Black Iron for a long time, these mutated rats could help me kill time!"

"Well, they are yours!"

"After coming to Xuanyuan Hill, if Castle Lord is free, you could look around for some special living beings and teleport some into Castle of Black Iron, plants or animals if there are. They might be very useful in the future..."

"Right! Even if you didn't warn me, I was also thinking about increasing some biological resources."

"That's fine, aww, we've got a great achievement this time!"

After contacting Heller and bearing Heller's requirements in mind, Zhang Tie had teleported 2/3 of these mutated rats into Castle of Black Iron. The rest hundreds of mutated rats immediately rushed out of the room after receiving the command of Zhang Tie when he pointed at the outside of the room.

...

A few minutes later, after cleaning his traces on the airboat, Zhang Tie found a secret tunnel and left the airboat through it mysteriously in the incarnation of a little beetle before watching such an extremely magnificent unpopulated airboat disappearing in front of him.

At such a speed, this airboat could fly over 13,000 miles a day. By the next morning, this airboat would completely fly out of the border of Zhongzhou Province and continue to fly towards the west. A few days later, this airboat would leave the air territory of Taixia Country and enter the wild air territory in the west. Without a powerful external strength, this airboat might keep flying in this way forever like a ghost ship. As for where it would reach and whether it would fall into the hand of the others, it had nothing to do with Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie was sure that nobody dared prevent such a giant airboat with the air territory of Taixia Country even if some knights could catch sight of it at least in a short period. The size and magnificence of this airboat represented the identity and position of its owner in Taixia Country. Therefore, common knights dared not stop it.

Those mutated rats that Zhang Tie left in the airboat could swallow everything eatable in the airboat in a few days, leaving no bones of those dead people at all.

Therefore, this airboat was destined to disappear in the sight of everybody else. Nobody would know what happened on this airboat, except Zhang Tie himself...

...

After suspending in the air for a few seconds, Zhang Tie forcefully flapped his wings. At this moment, Zhang Tie suddenly found that the little beetle could definitely not reach the height of stratosphere with its own ability. Although the airflow in the stratosphere was stable, it was a bit excessive for a little beetle to enter it.

However, now that Zhang Tie brought the little beetle to this height, of course, he could descend.

Thankfully, the little beetle was good at flying itself. Even so, Zhang Tie still didn't plan to have this little beetle fly in the stratosphere and make any amazing movements in the air. He just had the little beetle curl up as a little heavy lump and fall off freely. Not until it entered the troposphere did it start to flap its wings once again to control its falling speed and height. After stabilizing its speed and height, the little beetle drilled into an airflow in the troposphere and flew rapidly like surfing in the airflow.

After surfing hundreds of miles away in the airflow, Zhang Tie landed in a hidden place. After that, he rushed into the sky in the incarnation of Cui Li once again towards Zhongzhou City as fast as a lightning bolt...

# Chapter 1099: Jumping off the Running Train

---

Iron-Dragon Airboat was slowly flying in the sunny sky.

For a better viewing feeling, the Iron-Dragon Airboat moved slowly at a speed of about 200 miles per hour.

Zhang Tie was lying naked on a comfortable armchair leisurely in a pair of sunglasses and a pair of loose short pants under the sunshine like having a vacation. At the same time, he was drinking juice and watching Bai Suxian swim cheerily in a swimsuit in the pool which covered over 100 square meters on the top of the airboat like a mermaid and giggling from time to time.

Above the swimming pool, the protective metal armor and shield plate had slid off automatically, revealing the open sky through the crystal grille. The top deck of Iron-Dragon Airboat became the best sightseeing platform on the airboat.

There wasn't any swimming pool in any other airship. However, there were swimming pools in each bigger airboat. Watching this swimming pool, Zhang Tie had to praise the luxury of Taixia Country.

As airboats always flew at high speeds and made various maneuvers, the water in the swimming pool could only be stored in the activated storage in normal times. When necessary, water could be released into the swimming pool and be heated to a proper temperature so that people in the airboat could have a nice swim.

At this moment, Iron-Dragon Airboat had left Zhongzhou City for 5 days. Zhang Tie had long forgotten about the even in Longxi Prefecture, Zhongzhou Province.

As for the disciples of Iron-Dragon Sect on the airboat, during the period Zhang Tie left the airboat, they all thought that their

master was cultivating in Iron-Dragon Airboat. Such a short-term cultivation was too common for an earth knight. Therefore, Zhang Tie's disciples didn't think too much about that.

During that period, Iron-Dragon Airboat replenished its supplies in Zhongzhou City; by this chance, Zhang Tie's disciples traveled around Zhongzhou City and tasted all the yummy food in the city. After completely eliminating their tiredness which was caused by one month's survival training, when they came back to the airboat, the atmosphere became active once again.

Only Bai Suxian knew that Zhang Tie was not in the airboat during those days. However, Bai Suxian didn't know where Zhang Tie had been either. She only knew that Zhang Tie looked more relaxed when he came back as if he had settled a matter which had been weighing his mind for a long time. It was Bai Suxian's first time to see such a change on Zhang Tie.

Previously, since they got acquainted with each other in Earth-elements Realm, Bai Suxian intuitively sensed that Zhang Tie was not fully relaxed even though when he was laughing and falling asleep alone. She felt that Zhang Tie was always depressed and alert. Zhang Tie's mind was like a heavy, grey iron curtain which could not be seen through at all.

However, after Zhang Tie came back this time, Bai Suxian found that Zhang Tie became sunnier and more relaxed. The grey iron curtain suddenly became as clear as crystals which didn't make people depressed at all; instead, it revealed the essence of a big, innocent boy.

Bai Suxian didn't know what Zhang Tie had done. However, she knew that Zhang Tie must have done something big during those days he left the airboat. Otherwise, Zhang Tie would never be that relaxed. However, even though Bai Suxian was sure that Zhang Tie had done something big during that period, she wondered why there was no major news in well-informed Zhongzhou City during these days. At this moment, all the major news in Zhongzhou City

was about Pingsha Valley. However, nothing was new.

Whereas, Bai Suxian didn't ask Zhang Tie about that because she was clever.

After Iron-Dragon Airboat left Zhongzhou City and Zhang Tie left his "cultivation room", the atmosphere in the airboat had started to become active.

Zhang Tie was now the soul and core of this airboat. When Zhang Tie became relaxed, the entire airboat was filled with cheers and laughter. Zhang Tie's disciples were all became relaxed as they thought that their master had gained something through cultivation.

Bai Suxian was also very happy. After Zhang Tie relieved his heavy burden, Bai Suxian had a sweet and relaxed feeling that could only be felt between lovers. In this warm atmosphere, Bai Suxian gave out her beautiful vigor from inside to outside.

Zhang Tie said it was a good weather today. They could relax on the airboat. Additionally, he had the swimming pools in the airboat filled with water. All the people in the airboat became crazy.

Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian were in the exclusively private swimming pool on the top deck. Zhang Tie's disciples were all young, male or female. They were having fun in the big swimming pool at the bottom deck near the stern. Even though the two swimming pools were 100 m away from each other, Zhang Tie could still hear his disciples' cheers and laughter clearly.

As the master and master uncle of Iron-Dragon Sect, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian should pay attention to their images. Even though Zhang Tie's disciples didn't mind swimming and basking in the sun with him and Bai Suxian, none of them could actually be completely relaxed. Therefore, they'd better relax themselves respectively.



With a splash, Bai Suxian walked out of the swimming pool.

Staying with Zhang Tie alone, Bai Suxian was wearing a white bikini hot swimsuit, displaying her perfect and hot body in front of Zhang Tie.

After drying her hair and body with a towel, Bai Suxian walked over there before lying on Zhang Tie's side. Zhang Tie's armchair was definitely large enough which could even hold two people easily. Zhang Tie gave Bai Suxian a cup of juice.

"This isn't a good design at all. There should be a movable natural sand beach beside the swimming pool, which would be more romantic..."

It was definitely the most luxurious and flamboyant thing in this age to swim in the sky. However, princess Bai was still not satisfied with it. She was still complaining about the design of this airboat.

"Hoho, my elder sister, it's not your home. I won this airboat from Taiyi Fantasy Sect. Try to imagine how those elders with grey hair and beard swim and bask here in a pair of beach pants, revealing their bony figures."

Actually, Bai Suxian just made a suggestion casually. After hearing Zhang Tie's words and imagining the images, she burst out into laughter at once, causing a "puff" sound. However, in the next moment, after recalling that Zhang Tie called her "elder sister", Bai Suxian started to act coquettishly while twisting her body on Zhang Tie side with bouncing plum breasts, "Ahh, you called me elder sister, do you think I'm old..."

"Well, well, I will not call you elder sister from today on. I will call you young sister..." Zhang Tie said with a smile.

"Are you teasing me?" Bai Suxian behaved more like a spoiled child. Because only she and Zhang Tie knew the special meaning carried by the appellation of "young sister".

"Neither I can call you elder sister nor young sister, what else

should I call you then?"

"What did you call me last night? When there's nobody else, you should call me that..." Bai Suxian blushed.

"Sure, baby!"

"I like that!" Bai Suxian kissed Zhang Tie happily. Closely after that, she buried her body in Zhang Tie's arms and put her hand onto Zhang Tie's chest. Tilting her head, she watched Zhang Tie as she let out a sigh satisfactorily, "I've not been so relaxed for a long time. Only when I stay with you could I be so relaxed!"

"I've not been so relaxed for a long time either. Just now, I suddenly realized that I didn't have any clear image about Taixia Country at all. Taixia Country is still a strange place for me. There're so many cities and people in Taixia Country. Additionally, Taixia Country is very prosperous. So, Is there any relationship between me and those time-honored Class A cities, those splendid figures from all walks of life and the prosperity on the peak of humans? Across Taixia Country, besides those cities and people which I passed by accidentally, I had no impression about anything else. I still feel that I'm a total stranger in Taixia Country..." Zhang Tie sighed with emotion.

"Ahh, but why?"

"I feel like I am watching a film which was popular before the Catastrophe since I came to Taixia Country over 4 years ago. It's more like a suspense-action movie. It's colorful and vivid in the eyes of others at a normal speed; however, it's fast forward and black and white for me. I could only see scenes and people one after another. I could only see the glint and flash of saber and sword and a mess instead of dialogue and voice. I've been watching this film for 4 years. Besides very few figures and places that flashed by, I don't have too much impression about anything else. This is how I feel since I came to Taixia Country 4 year ago!"

Bai Suxian listened to him quietly.

Under his sunglasses, Zhang Tie revealed a faint, weird smile, "The longer I stayed in Taixia Country, the more often what I experienced in Waii Subcontinent would occur to my mind. Previously, I wondered whether a person would yearn for the past when he came to a new place. Now, I know that besides being a bit nostalgic, Waii Subcontinent was like a running train which brought me far away over these years. However, I didn't know where this train was heading for..."

"What about now?"

"I jumped off the train and landed on the ground by foot and could control my direction and determine where to go once again..."

# Chapter 1100: Insight

---

After killing the young master of Heavens Reaching Church, figuring out the reasons of the tragedy in Fuhai City and unveiling the identity of that person among the top 9 ministers in Taixia Country who abhorred Zhang Tie the most, Zhang Tie really felt unprecedentedly relaxed as if he had woken up from a nightmare.

Previously, the enemy was in the dark. Zhang Tie could only be framed by others and almost lost his life. Now, Zhang Tie's enemy was in the dark. His mentality became utterly different.

After returning to Iron-Dragon Airboat for a few days, Zhang Tie completely became relaxed and started to introspect about his experiences since he came to Taixia Country. Therefore, he sighed with emotion to Bai Suxian.

It was Zhang Tie's true feeling, also the result of his introspection over these days.

A Hua sage said that people should introspect themselves three times a day. Zhang Tie couldn't make it; however, he could introspect himself one time per four years.

During the past 4 years, everything in Taixia Country was like looking at the flowers while passing on horseback. Unconsciously, he had been involved in a big whirlpool and had to escape for his own life.

Zhang Tie started to rethink why he almost lost all standing and reputation along with his family.

After recalling the past pain and becoming greatly discerning and apprehending, Zhang Tie found that the reason was that everything happened too "fast".

The "fast" referred to his changing state of life, the rhythm of fate and thorough gnosis.

Only the prey being chased after by its natural enemy could run

fast.

He had to be "fast";

It was driven by a flurried mentality as he couldn't control his own destiny;

It was because that he had got lost after his wisdom was deceived.

'I helped Huaiyuan Palace to compete for the Youzhou provincial governor; I fought the Gobbling Party and inflicted a great loss to Heavens Reaching Church. After that, I resigned the position of the chief justice of Youzhou Provincial Court and went to Fuhai City for proposing a marriage; finally, I was forced to escape for my own life...'

'I was forced to respond to all these things. Everything happened too "fast". In this "fast" state, I did not have time to introspect myself or care about others. I gradually lost the ability to control my own fate. After coming to Taixia Country for 4 years, I'm still a stranger. Additionally, everything besides me has almost slid into the dark abyss.'

'It's not good to be "fast"; I need to be "slow", which requires me to be active and have time to introspect myself. By being "slow", I could see through everybody and all the dangers on my side. By being "slow", I could control my own fate once again.'

'I could be calmer in the "slow" state. Only the controller could be calm as it's a realm.'

'I could see the different living states of the two realms "fast" and "slow" by watching the rabbits and lions living on the same prairie.'

'Actually, since the holy war broke out and I was involved in the holy war in Waii Subcontinent, I've been in the "fast" living state. By contrast, before the holy war broke out, after I gained Castle of Black Iron, I was in a "slow" living state and felt pretty fulfilling and happy in Blackhot City and Hidden Dragon Island.'

'The rabbits are in "fast" living state. By contrast, the lions are in "slow" living state. It's very dangerous in "fast" living state. Now, it's time for me to relieve the rhythm and enter the "slow" living state.'

After gaining such a gnosis, Zhang Tie felt much better and become sunnier and more leisure these days. He gradually figured out more and more things in the future and could see clearly his orientation in the future.

The first thing that Zhang Tie thought through was how to cultivate in the future.

From then on, the element crystals which were extremely precious for other knights became useless for Zhang Tie's cultivation. The reason was very simple——compared to the effect of purgatory samsara, the efficiency of element crystals for forming water chakra was still too low.

'Given time cost, take forming earth chakra as an instance, the time that I spent in absorbing earth-element crystals accounted for 90% of the total time that I spent in forming my earth chakra. Actually, the effect only accounted for 10% of the total process of forming my earth chakra.'

'Conversely, I only spent 10% of the time forming the earth chakra in purgatory samsara method; however, the effect of purgatory samsara method accounted for 90% of the total process of forming my earth chakra.'

Get half the results with double the efforts and get twofold the results with half the efforts. What a sharp difference!

Because not a single knight could have endless time and spiritual energy. In this "slow" living state, Zhang Tie could only distribute his time and spiritual energy so as to produce the greatest effect. The process of cultivating Emperor-level secret method would consume a lot of resources. Only purgatory samsara method could match King Roc Sutra well.

Zhang Tie even felt it slow by absorbing element crystals, not to mention absorbing element crystals from the elements realm through cultivation alone which would be less effective at a higher time cost. In a popular sentence among Hua people before the Catastrophe, the two cultivation modes were both "backward modes of production".

After giving up the two "low-efficiency" modes of cultivation, Zhang Tie found that he had extricated himself from the busy state of cultivation. As a result, he had more free time and became more "leisure".

In the "leisure" state, Zhang Tie could allocate his time flexibly in terms of enhancing his realms in various battle skills and secret methods and accompany his family members. He could also make achievements by traveling among mountains and rivers in Taixia Country.

After fighting Nangong Sheng the strong wind hermit also the master of Immortal Fist Position Sect, Zhang Tie deeply sensed that he could not make further progress only by closing his door at home after promoting to an earth knight.

The second thing that Zhang Tie had thought through was that he could not expose the fact that Cui Li was his incarnation to the public.

'Otherwise, I would expose the secrets that I have a body-changing immortal bloodline and could simulate the effects of other secret methods to the public. Sometimes, it's a wisdom to be low-key; sometimes, with sharp weapons in hand, I could also frighten my powerful enemy.'

'Now that Gold and Power Law have known my identity of Peter Hamplester, even if Gold and Power Law don't know the secret that I have body-changing immortal bloodline, the one who wants to kill me should at least know that I've grasped a powerful disguising secret method. Now that that culprit could almost hit

my secret, it would be meaningless for me to keep this trump card anymore...'

'Besides me, who else in this world could guess the incidental effect of King Roc Sutra. There're so many secret methods in the world. If I really want to expose it to the public, I would find a reason that would make others muddle-headed.'

Zhang Tie had long prepared for the explanation of the secret that he could change his look and figure. He named the secret method as "Chaotic Treasure Body". After grasping it, Zhang Tie could keep the surging points all over his body in the state of "fake dormancy". Therefore, he could "simulate" the order of lighting his surging points once again according to a complete secret method for a certain effect. Because it was the incidental ability of King Roc Sutra, Zhang Tie wouldn't expose the secret even if he told others to check his state in "Chaotic Treasure Body".

'The combination of body-changing immortal bloodline and "Chaotic Treasure Body" will definitely frighten those people who want to frame my family members and Huaiyuan Palace. Even though those people could uproot Huaiyuan Palace, as long as I'm still alive and could escape, they would be in fear forever. They would be alert in case of being revenged by me. Nobody would like to live such a life.'

The safest manner was to mix the truth with the false stuff.

After thinking through these crucial things and making a deep introspection about his gains and losses in the past 4 years, Zhang Tie became completely relaxed and entered a leisure and casual state. He started to be in a real "slow" state and control his own life orientation...

...

Lying on Zhang Tie's side quietly, Bai Suxian was listening to his tender yet powerful heartbeats as if she could hear the secrets that Zhang Tie had not exposed and how Zhang Tie bore mentally in



the past 4 years...

Zhang Tie was watching the clouds in the sky while Bai Suxian was watching Zhang Tie. They were both silent; however, they didn't feel it was embarrassing and improper; instead, they had a privacy. At this moment, Bai Suxian really felt that she would like to fly with this man in the sky in this way for the rest of her life.

In such a tranquility, the cheers and laughter that drifted from the other swimming pool became clearer.

"Can you write a love poem for me?" Bai Suxian suddenly asked Zhang Tie.

"Love poem? But I can't!" Zhang Tie scratched his head.

"Liar, how did you write the poem the Beloved Ones then?"

"Good lines are naturally born. I just gained it by accident!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Bai Suxian burst out into laughter. She stretched out her hand and stroked Zhang Tie's hair, "You're really shameless. No matter what, you have to write a love poem for me."

"Well, I will make one!"

Bai Suxian became serious at once while Zhang Tie cleared his throat as he made a short yet pithy love poem with clear articulation and a mellow and full tune emotionally.

"Our hearts have an emotional mine."

"Love is the gold."

"Hate is the iron."

"If a man doesn't know how to turn his wife into his mistress, he must be vulgar and moronic!"

After hearing this poem, Bai Suxian became stunned. It led her to endless aftertastes. Additionally, the lasting appeal of this poem resonated with the relationship between Bai Suxian and Zhang Tie

to a certain extent. She watched Zhang Tie with full emotion and watery eyes as she asked in a tender voice, "Is that your work?"

"Hehehe, I've read it!"

After Zhang Tie said that, hundreds of white swans flew over the airboat cheerily.

Iron-Dragon Airboat was only 4,000 m above the ground at a low speed. Even the flock of white swans were higher than Iron-Dragon Airboat. At the sight of those swans, Bai Suxian even forgot what to say. She immediately pulled up Zhang Tie from his armchair and ran towards the prow as she exclaimed, "We are arriving at Xuanyuan Hill..."

# Table of Contents

## [Castle of Black Iron](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 1001: The Backbone](#)

[Chapter 1002: Demon Suppression General](#)

[Chapter 1003: The Problems Facing Taixia Country](#)

[Chapter 1004: Large Battle Formations](#)

[Chapter 1005: The Most Brutal Battle](#)

[Chapter 1006: Knocking out the Black Iron Demon Knight](#)

[Chapter 1007: Angling](#)

[Chapter 1008: I Come, I See and I Fight](#)

[Chapter 1009: 1 Change Earth Knight Realm](#)

[Chapter 1010: Being Gradually Outstanding](#)

[Chapter 1011: A Surprise](#)

[Chapter 1012: A Top Secret](#)

[Chapter 1013: Returning to Lion Fortress with a Bumper Harvest](#)

[Chapter 1014: Re-encountering Comrades-in-Arms](#)

[Chapter 1015: A Bright Future and A Good Reputation](#)

[Chapter 1016: Trouble](#)

[Chapter 1017: Winning a Bet](#)

[Chapter 1018: Friends](#)

[Chapter 1019: My Airboat](#)

[Chapter 1020: Holding Bones in Gold Coffin for the Name](#)

[Chapter 1021: A New Variant](#)

[Chapter 1022: Golden Invitation Card from Iron-Dragon Sect](#)

[Chapter 1023: The New Look of Fire Dragon Bounty Territory \(I\)](#)

[Chapter 1024: The New Look of Fire Dragon Bounty Territory \(II\)](#)

[Chapter 1025: The Legend of Black Iron Hero](#)

[Chapter 1026: Being Always Together](#)

[Chapter 1027: Being as Boisterous as a Marketplace](#)

[Chapter 1028: I Have My Own Consideration \(I\)](#)

[Chapter 1029: I Have My Own Consideration \(II\)](#)

[Chapter 1030: I Have My Own Consideration \(III\)](#)

[Chapter 1031: An Epoch-making Invention](#)

[Chapter 1032: The Iron of Iron-Dragon Sect \(I\)](#)

[Chapter 1033: The Iron of Iron-Dragon Sect \(II\)](#)  
[Chapter 1034: Jinwu City](#)  
[Chapter 1035: An Assassination](#)  
[Chapter 1036: Saving His Father](#)  
[Chapter 1037: Concerns and Surprises](#)  
[Chapter 1038: The Tail of the Culprit](#)  
[Chapter 1039: Reunion of Brothers](#)  
[Chapter 1040: Drive Tigers to Kill Wolves](#)  
[Chapter 1041: The Mole](#)  
[Chapter 1042: Counterattack](#)  
[Chapter 1043: The Softest Place](#)  
[Chapter 1044: Zhongzhou Provincial Court](#)  
[Chapter 1045: An Earthshaking Case](#)  
[Chapter 1046: A Secret Underground Tunnel](#)  
[Chapter 1047: An Earthshaking Change](#)  
[Chapter 1048: Flames of War in the Immortal Province \(I\)](#)  
[Chapter 1049: Flames of War in the Immortal Province \(II\)](#)  
[Chapter 1050: Guests from Neighboring Provinces](#)  
[Chapter 1051: The Background of Bloody Sea](#)  
[Chapter 1052: A Chance of Reversal](#)  
[Chapter 1053: An Uninvited Guest](#)  
[Chapter 1054: The Appearance of the Host](#)  
[Chapter 1055: Shocking Golden Eggs](#)  
[Chapter 1056: A Conflict](#)  
[Chapter 1057: Comparing Notes in the Valley](#)  
[Chapter 1058: Thunder-like Booms](#)  
[Chapter 1059: The Unrivaed Punch](#)  
[Chapter 1060: I'm a Great Master](#)  
[Chapter 1061: A Myriad of Stars Surround the Moon](#)  
[Chapter 1062: Enrolling Apprentices](#)  
[Chapter 1063: The First Apprentice of Zhang Tie](#)  
[Chapter 1064: Putting in Dragons by Golden Brush](#)  
[Chapter 1065: Over One Hundred Apprentices](#)  
[Chapter 1066: Towards Zhongzhou Province](#)  
[Chapter 1067: A Knot](#)  
[Chapter 1068: A Burning Village](#)  
[Chapter 1069: Kill and Save](#)  
[Chapter 1070: Ruins in the Bloody Flames](#)  
[Chapter 1071: An Achievement](#)

[Chapter 1072: Visit and News](#)  
[Chapter 1073: Outdoor Disciples](#)  
[Chapter 1074: The First Lesson](#)  
[Chapter 1075: Active Dark Forces](#)  
[Chapter 1076: The King Roc Flapped Its Wings](#)  
[Chapter 1077: The Role of Master](#)  
[Chapter 1078: Bright Enlightenment Sutra](#)  
[Chapter 1079: Marching towards Pingsha Valley](#)  
[Chapter 1080: Being Frank and Honest](#)  
[Chapter 1081: Being Clear-minded](#)  
[Chapter 1082: The Ghost Region in the Future](#)  
[Chapter 1083: Black Tiger Palace](#)  
[Chapter 1084: The Amazing Ability of Lotus-Flower Eyes](#)  
[Chapter 1085: Goodbye, Parent Puppet Worms](#)  
[Chapter 1086: Preaching Secret Skills Through Enlightenment](#)  
[Chapter 1087: Return of the Thunder Hawk](#)  
[Chapter 1088: I Will Fly Higher](#)  
[Chapter 1089: A Bottleneck](#)  
[Chapter 1090: Old Monster](#)  
[Chapter 1091: Waiting](#)  
[Chapter 1092: Getting Hooked](#)  
[Chapter 1093: Targeting the Culprit](#)  
[Chapter 1094: A Painstaking Investigation](#)  
[Chapter 1095: Malicious](#)  
[Chapter 1096: Berserk Killing Intent](#)  
[Chapter 1097: Iron Punches](#)  
[Chapter 1098: Windfall](#)  
[Chapter 1099: Jumping off the Running Train](#)  
[Chapter 1100: Insight](#)